



CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 14

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

Synopsis

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1301: Gathering of the Four Races

Yadriam's gaze stopped on the foreign Saint King for a while. She asked, "Have you obtained any information from this person? What about the strength of the World of Forsaken Saints? How great is the disparity between ours and theirs?"

The grand elder of Mercenary City said, "Esteemed hall master, the foreign expert almost dispersed his own soul. Shangguan Mu'er managed to stop him in time, but we only have one chance to ask him questions. We will need Shangguan Mu'er to explain the exact situation."

Yadriam immediately looked at Shangguan Mu'er. Among so many human experts, she was the only person that Yadriam treated seriously. Even with the path lord of carnal desires hiding in the surroundings, she did not spend too much time paying attention to him.

Shangguan Mu'er glanced past the foreign Saint King and said with a cold voice, "This person has already used a secret technique to destroy his soul. Although I've controlled it with my zither and made him unconscious, his soul will continue to collapse once he awakens and no one will be able to stop it. Even I can only slow it down with my zither. As a result, we only have this one chance to ask questions. Time is very short, and we might not even be to extract all the information we need. We can interrogate him after the experts of the four races have gathered, just in case someone says that we're exaggerating the strength of the World of Forsaken Saints."

"Then let's wait for the magical beast and the experts of the Hundred Races," Yadriam gently replied and ended the conversation there. She stepped aside with the Sea race experts quietly.

The sky fell silent. After the arrival of the hall master, all the

human experts had become quiet. They stopped conversing with one another.

The Saints Kings from protector clans and a few stronger ancient clans all glanced at the experts of the Sea race. The Sea race was extremely powerful, so they all wanted to get on good terms with them to improve their clan's status through the connection. However, they dismissed that thought when they saw how cold the Sea race experts behaved.

“Esteemed hall master, may I ask why the Heaven’s Spirit Hall and Serpent God Hall haven’t sent reinforcements?” The grand elder asked after a long while. He knew that the Sea race possessed three Saint Emperors. They were an extremely powerful force, and if all three Saint Emperors had come, they would feel more confident repelling the World of Forsaken Saints.

“I have already alerted the Heaven’s Spirit Hall and Serpent God Hall. However, whether they come or not is up to them,” answered Yadriam.

At this moment, the space far away began to violently ripple. Immediately, all the humans turned their heads to look in that direction.

The rippling space captured the attention of many people. Just a single ripple in space was enough to alert them since it represented more reinforcements.

As the Space Gate formed, a white-robed, ruddy old man stepped out. He was one of the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent, Cangqiong.

Behind him were around a dozen tall, bulky men. They were all Class 8 Magical Beasts in human form, but there were only two Saint Kings at Great Perfection among all of them. Even the other people were much weaker than the party of Sea race experts.

“So the peng emperor has come personally. I am the grand elder

of Mercenary City, and I have failed to welcome you from afar. Please forgive me..." The grand elder immediately went up to welcome them with smiles. Mercenary City had basically become the leader of the continent, so he obviously needed to welcome them as the grand elder.

Although some conflicts had occurred between the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent back then, the threat of the foreign world was far more significant, so they needed to set aside their disagreements.

Right when Cangqiong had arrived, another Space Gate rapidly formed nearby. The Space Gate was much larger than gates the Sea race and magical beasts had created. This one was ten meters wide and twenty meters tall. A vast presence immediately surged out of it, similar to a flood. It was so tremendous that the air and clouds in the surroundings began to churn.

Figures emerged from the Space Gate one after another. They were of all sorts of shapes and sizes. There were handsome and pretty-winged elves, short and bulky dwarves, and stalwart, dark-skinned berserkers. There were also rockmen, completely composed from stone, and so on.

Many human experts began to smile from the bottom of their hearts when they saw the arrival of these people. At that moment, all four races had gathered together. The pressure the Tian Yuan Continent would be facing would decrease a lot now.

"I never thought that so many members of the Hundred Races would come," a human expert sighed in surprise. There were over two hundred Saint Kings from the Hundred Races with quite a few at Great Perfection. They basically made up a third or even half of the total force assembled here.

"Looks like the Hundred Races want to put their lives on the line against the World of Forsaken Saints. They've even brought their trump cards," a great elder sighed. Many of them could sense the

energy ripples of forbidden artifacts. There was more than one present.

“The Hundred Races want go all out against the World of Forsaken Saints? Or are they trying to invade our continent by using this as an opportunity? They’ve brought so many forbidden treasures, the treasures of their clans,” a human expert softly murmured. They all felt like the Hundred Races were putting a little too much effort into it. They were nowhere near as shrewd as the Sea race or the magical beasts, who had only sent around a dozen people to scout out the situation and only planned to send further reinforcements after personally witnessing the strength of the foreign world.

The grand elder hurried over to warmly welcome them, completely forgetting about that fact that the Hundred Races had attacked Mercenary City recently.

The hall elders of the Hundred Races greeted the grand elder as well, but many of them looked at the magical beasts with flames of anger.

The true enemies of the Hundred Races was not the Tian Yuan Continent, but the Beast God Continent because the Beast God Continent had originally been occupied by them. In the end, the Winged Tiger God lead the magical beasts in an invasion, chasing away the Hundred Races from their land. This was what lead to the invasion of the Tian Yuan Continent.

As a result, the Hundred Races’ hatred for the Tian Yuan Continent was not as deep as what was imagined even though a shocking war had occurred in ancient times, resulting in heavy casualties on both sides. They were the invaders after all.

The experts of the Hundred Races clearly understood that the matter at hand was to deal with the World of Forsaken Saints, and this was not the time to resolve their disagreements. As a result, they just stared at the magical beasts angrily, but they did not end

up fighting.

Cangqiong stood calmly as he rested with his eyes closed, ignoring the people from the Hundred Races. However, the magical beasts behind him were unable to remain as calm as Cangqiong. All of them felt extremely angry, but when they saw that the Hundred Races had brought so many experts along with so many forbidden artifacts, they dared not to act recklessly.

Chapter 1302: Shock

The atmosphere became rather stern because of the arrival of the Hundred Races and magical beasts. Even the various human experts could sense the changes. They all fell silent as they looked at the magical beasts and Hundred Races.

“Since all four races have gathered, let’s awaken this person from the World of Forsaken Saints. Let’s learn about the World of Forsaken Saints’ strength from him,” the sea goddess said at this moment, disrupting the heavy atmosphere.

“The esteemed hall master is correct. The matter of the World of Forsaken Saints is most important, so please do it, Heavenly Enchantress,” said the pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion.

“Shangguan Mu’er, we’ll be troubling you with this matter because only you have the ability out of all of us,” said the grand elder. Although he knew that the Heavenly Enchantress’ strength had far exceeded his own, he still referred to her by her name, because the elders had become acquainted with her long ago. They were all her seniors.

Everyone looked at the foreign Saint King when the World of Forsaken Saints was mentioned, including the magical beasts and the experts of the Hundred Races. There were also magical beasts and Hundred Races who stared at the Heavenly Enchantress for a while. They could not help but reveal shocked gazes.

The Heavenly Enchantress was veiled, which obscured her face, but that veil was unable to hide her beautiful body. However, none of them could see through her strength.

The experts of the Hundred Races remained quiet. They had captured a foreign Saint King themselves on the Wasteland Continent and had learned some shocking news from him, but they did not plan to announce the news right now. They wanted to see if this captured Saint King would give the same information

they had received as well.

The Heavenly Enchantress nodded at the grand elder before holding her zither with a single hand. She used her slender right hand to gently strum the strings, immediately producing a soft, pleasant sound.

The music was extremely beautiful, as if it was divine. It was filled with an endless charm, enough to enchant people. All the experts in the surroundings were heavily affected, unknowingly being carried away by the music. They had sunken into it involuntarily, falling into a daze.

They all roused the next moment. When they thought about what had just happened, all of them broke out into a cold sweat from the shock they felt. The human experts were relatively calmer since they had already witnessed just how powerful the Heavenly Enchantress was. However, the experts of the Sea race, the Hundred Races, and the Beast God Continent were utterly astounded. They all looked at the Heavenly Enchantress in shock, and some of them even felt fear well up inside them

Among them were hall elders at the Great Perfection of Saint King. The music was terrifying enough to even affect them. They also knew that the music was not intentionally targeting them, or none of them would have been able to withstand it.

Cangqiong snapped open his eyes as he looked at the Heavenly Enchantress in disbelief. A sliver of shock appeared in his eyes.

Even Yadriam looked at the Heavenly Enchantress again, gazing deeply at her back.

This was because even the two of them felt a slip in their consciousness from the music.

“Who is this person? How does she have such great accomplishments with soul attacks? Why have I never heard of her?” Cangqiong thought. An extremely rare sliver of fear actually

appeared in his gaze. Magical beasts like him possessed greater battle prowess than humans, but they possessed weaker souls at the same time. Magical beasts feared experts who were skilled in soul attacks the most.

Under the influence of the music, the foreign Saint King finally began to slowly awaken. However, his eyes were no longer clear, but glassy. His soul was completely controlled by the terrifying music.

The person's soul began to rapidly collapse as soon as he woke up. He had already used a secret technique to annihilate his own soul, but the process had been stopped after falling unconscious. As soon as he woke up, no one could control his collapsing soul anymore. Even the Heavenly Enchantress was only able to reduce the rate at which it collapsed, and it she could not reduce the rate very much.

The Heavenly Enchantress asked many questions regarding the World of Forsaken Saints. The Saint King responded in a straightforward manner and answered every single questions. All the experts in the surroundings heard his answers.

Around half a minute later, his soul collapsed, and he was reduced to a cold corpse. However, the Heavenly Enchantress managed to obtain a lot of information in that short time, gaining an even more detailed understanding of the other world's power.

The Saint Rulers and Saint Kings there were as plentiful as ants and even Saint Emperors were numerous. Other than that, there were over forty Origin realm experts. Thirty-three were Receival, eight were Returnance along with an even more terrifying Spiritking.

Everyone fell silent in the air as the corpse hit the ground. They had all become speechless from the shock. They were all extremely solemn, and some of them had even become sheet-white, without a single shred of blood at all.

The strength of the World of Forsaken Saints had greatly exceeded anything they had imagined. They were basically unstoppable. Even in ancient times, the four races would not have been their opponent if they worked together.

In ancient times, there were the four champions along with many Saint Emperors, but even with the four races combined, the amount of Saint Emperors could not be described as innumerable.

The foreign world's strength had already reached an extremely terrifying level to all of them.

“We cannot let them come over. We have to stop them no matter how great the price is,” said the grand elder with a heavy voice. With their strength, it would be an absolute disaster if they managed to set foot on the Tian Yuan Continent.

Xiao Ling also appeared in the air. Her face was filled with worry as she said, “How can they be so powerful? It'll be bad now. If only master was still here.”

Chapter 1303: Shocking Lightning (One)

All four races treated this news like this would be end of the world after learning the strength of the foreign world in detail. They were just too powerful. Once they made it to the continent, even if the four races did not get wiped out, they would be reduced to slaves.

The authoritative hall elders of the War God Hall immediately returned to the Wasteland Continent to gather all their power. Cangqiong left without the magical beasts, personally hurrying back to the Beast God Hall to tell the two other Saint Emperors about what he had learned.

Yadriam sent out several messages one after another as well and began to gather all the power of the Sea Goddess Force. At the same time, she contacted the two other hall masters.

Soon afterward, around two hundred more Hundred Races Saint Kings arrived on the Tian Yuan Continent through Space Gates. They had sent two-thirds of their total force in order to repel the invasion.

A large group of experts had hurried over from the Beast God Continent as well. They were all Class 8 Magical Beasts, amounting to over six hundred. Even Lankyros and Kaiser had come. Their total number was much more than the experts of the Hundred Races.

The Beast God Continent was more powerful than both the Hundred Races and the Tian Yuan Continent. Not only did they possess Saint Emperors, the number of Saint Kings and Saint Rulers exceeded the two other continents by quite a lot. The Class 8 Magical Beasts that had hurried over was probably just a relatively larger portion with the whole continent in perspective.

Other than that, over four hundred Saint Kings had hurried over from the sea realm. All of them were experts within the territory

of the Sea Goddess Hall. Not a single person from the Heaven's Spirit Hall or Serpent God Hall came.

The power gathered on the Tian Yuan Continent rapidly surged with the reinforcements from the Hundred Races, the magical beasts, and the Sea race. The numbers of Saint Kings in Mercenary City had exceeded two thousand, and there were even five Saint Emperors. Only Houston and the hall masters of the Heaven's Spirit Hall and the Serpent God Hall were absent.

The Bloodsword sect poured all their efforts into searching for Houston, but they could not find a single sign of him no matter what they tried, as if Houston had suddenly disappeared from the continent.

The vice sect master of the Bloodsword sect, Jiang Wang, secretly panicked. Now that such a significant matter had occurred on the Tian Yuan Continent, the two most important figures of the Bloodsword sect were actually not present at all. Not only had Houston vanished from the map, they could not even contact Jian Chen.

Kaiser and Lankyros stood there with rather pale faces. Everyone present could feel that their presences were rather unstable, clearly injured.

Kaiser glanced at Xiao Ling in some fear. His lips trembled as if he wanted to say something, but he held back in the end.

Lankyros was the same. After a moment of hesitation, he said to the grand elder, "The battle prowess of Saint Emperors is extremely important to repel the foreign invasion. Before they arrive, we need to recover our peak condition, or we might not be of any use at all. It's just that there's a strand of origin energy rampaging about within us, and we need to use half of our energy to suppress it. We probably can't even use half of our strength."

The grand elder glanced at Kaiser and the tiger emperor as he smiled deeply. He knew that the two Saint Emperors had been

wounded by the barrier spirit and were still injured. They wanted to ask Xiao Ling to remove the origin energy within them, except they found it rather unwilling to ask in such a straightforward manner.

The grand elder hovered in the air as he bowed courteously to Xiao Ling. He said, “Esteemed barrier spirit, can you remove the origin energy within the two seniors, so they can recover their peak strength and increase our overall defensive force?”

Xiao Ling frowned and looked at the two Saint Emperors rather unhappily. She said in an angry manner, “Hmph, so much for bullying big brother. If it weren’t for the fact that the bad people from the other world want to come over, I would have never bothered with you.” Xiao Ling waved her hand as the strand of origin energy immediately flew out of their bodies, having been taken back by Xiao Ling.

The two of them immediately felt their bodies lighten. The strand of energy that they had been utterly helpless against had finally left their bodies, so they immediately rejoiced. Without any hesitation, they sat down to heal.

They returned to their peak condition with their bodies of magical beasts very quickly now that they were free from the origin energy’s torture.

At this moment, a figure appeared far away as he flew over hurriedly. It was a white-robed, middle-aged man with a graceful and striking appearance. However, his face bore an evil feeling.

“Human Saint Emperor, you’re finally willing to come out. I was wondering how long you had planned on staying hidden,” Yadriam said with a heavy tone. Her voice was extremely cold with a sliver of killing intent present.

The middle-aged man was the path lord of carnal desires. He had arrived long ago, except he had kept himself hidden.

He had hidden himself and peeped on Yadriam many times already. His eyes were filled with lust, so he established a very bad impression of himself in Yadriam's eyes.

The path lord of carnal desires clasped his hands at Yadriam before glancing at the Heavenly Enchantress. He then said to the barrier spirit, "The matters before were my mistake. Please purge the origin energy within me, lord barrier spirit."

Xiao Ling softly snorted and removed the origin energy within him rather reluctantly. She found the three of them to be extremely annoying when they had abused Jian Chen before. It was just that they needed all the power they had now that they faced against the threat of the invading world.

The path lord also became excited when he sensed that the power that tortured him for many years had vanished. He immediately ingested a high class Radiant Spirit Pill and began to heal.

The Heavenly Enchantress stared at him coldly and said icily, "Path lord, if it happens a second time, I will not forgive you."

Everyone present looked at the Heavenly Enchantress when she spoke. They all looked at her in shock. No one had thought that she was bold enough to threaten a Saint Emperor.

The path lord's face hardened before immediately darkening. He looked at her coldly and sneered, "Your way of the zither indeed possesses unfathomable power, enough to even affect Saint Emperors slightly. However, I practice the path of desires and specialize in refining my soul. My soul is incomparable to any other Saint Emperor's in strength, so do you really think your little tricks can threaten me?"

Chapter 1304: Shocking Lightning (Two)

The Heavenly Enchantress was fearless. She coldly stared at the path lord of carnal desires and emotionlessly replied, "It's not up to you to say whether my way of the zither can affect you or not. Let's try it." The Heavenly Enchantress had already placed her zither in front of her as her slender right hand lay on the strings. Clearly, she had made preparations for battle.

The path lord suddenly began to glare. His eyes shone with an almost-visible light as he stared at the Heavenly Enchantress in shock. His evilness grew heavier, and he sneered, "You want to take me on? Let me put this straight first. If you lose, you'll become my ninety-first wife. Are you willing?"

The Heavenly Enchantress' face sank as her eyes instantly became filled with killing intent. However, before she could respond, Yadriam flew from the crowd and coldly said to him, "What a shameless human Saint Emperor. You're a disgrace to the humans. Since you're so confident, I'll take you on. If I lose, you can do whatever you want to me, but if you lose, your life is mine." With that, Yadriam began to shine brightly with blue light as an extremely terrifying amount of water-attributed energy poured out of her. It caused the surrounding space to violently shake and the energy of the world began to rampage.

The vast presence from her also made the surroundings shake, boldly enveloping the path lord.

The path lord's body immediately sank. The tremendous pressure pressed his clothes against his body as his face darkened in that moment. He had never thought that the hall master would begin fighting right now, nor did he expect her to be so powerful. She had caught him by surprise.

The three Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent became rather stern. All of them grimly stared at the hall master. Although

they had not fought Yadriam before, just her presence allowed them to sense her strength. Even Kaiser was not confident he could defeat her.

“Three of the four champions from the ancient times have fallen. Only the sea goddess is still alive. The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall has definitely obtained the legacy of the sea goddess, which is why she’s so strong. She’s even grasped the shocking secret techniques of the sea goddess, so her strength cannot be underestimated. I cannot fight her as an opponent,” similar thoughts crossed Kaiser and Lankyros’ mind. The fear they felt for Yadriam had surpassed their fear for the Heavenly Enchantress.

This was because they had both thought of the great possibility that she was guided by an Origin realm expert. Her strength could not be compared to any regular Saint Emperor.

The path lord’s face darkened very much. He yearned to take the Heavenly Enchantress under him, to have her serve him everyday. He would never let such a beautiful woman go. Although her soul attacks were very powerful, he was confident he could deal with them, but that was not the case with Yadriam. At that moment, the path lord was caught in a conundrum. If he were to proceed, it would be extremely likely that he would end up fighting Yadriam, but if he were to hold back, he would feel very embarrassed as a mighty Saint Emperor.

“If I sever all my emotions and desires and complete my divine method, why would I still fear the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall,” the path lord harbored anger inside. He had a very strong feeling that if he completely severed his emotions and desires, he would definitely undergo a rebirth and transformation and become an Origin realm expert. It was just he could not make it past the last few stages.

“Hmph, you evil person. If you bully brother’s friends again, I will never let you go. I will beat you until your soul disperses,” Xiao Ling viciously waved her fist at the path lord. She was

extremely angry. She could feel a very dense feeling of familiarity from the Heavenly Enchantress. The feeling came from Jian Chen, so Xiao Ling knew that the Heavenly Enchantress' relationship with Jian Chen was something else. This was why she was so protective of the Heavenly Enchantress.

The path lord immediately revealed a different expression because of what Xiao Ling had said. He only felt some fear for the hall master, but he felt terror from the bottom of his heart for Xiao Ling. He had personally experienced Xiao Ling's power. Although she seemed like a naive little girl, the power she possessed was so terrifying that it was enough to slay Saint Emperors with a wave of her hand.

He also knew that even if he severed all his desires and emotions, he would still not be Xiao Ling's opponent since he would reach Reival at most. Xiao Ling was at Returnance.

All the experts here watched on. Yadriam, the path lord of carnal desires, and the Heavenly Enchantress had all become the center of attention. There were quite a few people among the experts of the Hundred Races and Sea race who paid attention to Xiao Ling. Many of them felt extremely surprised and shocked that the barrier spirit of Mercenary City was actually an Origin realm expert.

A terrifying pulse of energy suddenly appeared from afar while the path lord was caught in this dilemma. Even though it was several hundred thousand kilometers away, all the Saint Kings gathered there could clearly sense it. The terrifying pressure shocked all of them.

They no longer paid attention to Yadriam and the others. They shifted their gazes away and sternly stared in the direction the energy had come from.

“What's happening over there? Why has such a shock pulse of energy appeared, where even the mysteries of the world have been affected and have become disordered?”

“Have the people of the other world found another entrance and are coming to our continent through that tunnel?”

“That’s extremely likely. This matter is extremely important. Let’s go over and check the situation out immediately.”

The Saint Kings all discussed with one another before rapidly creating Space Gates and leaving. Very soon, half of the people there had left, only leaving behind around a thousand Saint Kings to keep guard and carefully observe the movements of the tunnel.

The path lord used this opportunity to break free from the situation. He was the first one to hurry over. He was soon followed by the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent and the hall master. They all traveled in the direction of the terrifying energy pulse.

It had already become gloomy over Flame City. The moment before, the sun had been shining strong, but now, a thick layer of dark clouds had drifted over from somewhere. They enveloped the entire sky, blotting out the sun and causing the entire world to darken.

Lightning flickered within the dark clouds as heavy sounds of thunder rang out from time to time, echoing through the entire region. The terrifying sound made the ground shake, and at the center of the clouds was a rapidly-spinning whirl. Directly below the whirl was the tungsten alloy mine several dozen kilometers away from the city.

Chapter 1305: Shocking Lightning (Three)

Not only was everyone in Flame City alerted to the changes, but even the people within the expanse of the dark clouds were alarmed by the sudden change in the sky. The dark clouds had arrived just far too quickly, and they were filled with extremely tremendous pulses of energy that formed a terrifying pressure that made everyone feel like they were suffocating. The situation was just too abnormal.

Within the city lord's estate, You Yue, Bi Lian, Bi Hai, and the Saint Rulers all stood outside the building, staring at the sky. They were shocked. They did not understand just what was going on in the weird dark clouds.

Fairy You Yue sat in her room within the silver-white divine hall, but her eyes suddenly snapped open. She stared out in interest. Although she was within the divine hall, her faze seemed to be able to pierce through all obstructions.

“T-this is a heavenly tribulation. Heavenly tribulations usually only occur on the Saints' World and rarely happen in lower worlds. Has this world given birth to something impressive?” She murmured as her eyes flickered in thought.

Bi Hai stared at the revolving whirl of clouds for a while before saying to You Yue and Bi Lian, “It's very abnormal there. I'll go investigate first. Take care of yourselves.” With that, he flew away.

“Be careful, great-grandfather!” Bi Lian called out from behind. Her voice was filled with concern. She has been staring at the huge whirl of clouds for a while and was starting to get the sense that something might be wrong. She said to You Yue, “Sister You Yue, these dark clouds are just far too odd. I'm afraid that something will happen to great-grandfather, so please take me over as well. I still have the Flaming Jadeites brother left on me, enough to deal the strike of a Saint King at Great Perfection. They can be very

useful at crucial times.”

You Yue nodded before tailing Bi Hai with Bi Lian in her arms. Bi Lian was still not a Heaven Saint Master, so he could not fly, which was why she needed You Yue’s assistance.

At this moment, a silver streak of light flashed by. The Bright Moon Divine Hall flew from the city lord’s estate and stopped the two of them.

“My dear disciple, you cannot go. Just stay here. Those are no ordinary clouds. It’s a heavenly tribulation. Once you get caught up in the tribulational lightning, even Saint Emperors will be doomed,” fairy Hao Yue’s voice rang out from the divine hall.

You Yue and Bi Lian did not understand what a heavenly tribulation was, but from what fairy Hao Yue said, the two of them immediately paled in fright. You Yue said with worry, “Master, great-grandfather Bi Hai has already flown over. Quickly call him back. He has to come back unscathed.”

A streak of light, completely condensed from moonlight, flew out of the divine hall. It traveled at an unbelievable speed, catching up with Bi Hai in a single moment and grabbing him by the waist.

Bi Hai knew that this light had come from fairy Hao Yue, so he did not resist. He allowed the streak of light to pull him back. Just when he wanted to ask out of doubt, fairy Hao Yue’s voice rang out again, “

If someone else had said that, none of them would have believed it. They would have never thought that a swathe of weird clouds would be enough to kill Saint Kings. But the person who had said this was fairy Hao Yue, so no matter how exaggerated it sounded, they believed what she said. Bi Hai’s complexion immediately changed, and he looked at the clouds with a mixture of fear and surprise.

At this moment, the space several dozen kilometers away began

to violently ripple and Space Gates rapidly appeared one after another. Great groups of Saint Kings emerged with a few Saint Emperors in between.

The group of experts had hurried over from Mercenary City and had arrived in the region at the same time. However, as soon as they emerged from their Space Gates, they quickly flew toward the tungsten alloy mine and finally stopped ten kilometers away from the central whirl of clouds. All of them stared at it sternly. None of them were bold enough to act recklessly before they understood the situation.

“Weird, what’s happened here? Why has such a large expanse of dark clouds suddenly appeared? These clouds are teeming with weirdness...”

“This doesn’t seem to be a tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints...”

“The energy hidden within these clouds is just far too powerful. Even with my strength as a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, I actually can feel my skin crawl...”

All the Saint Kings gathered together to discuss the weather. They talked about the weird clouds, and a few braver Saint Kings even advanced toward the whirl of clouds.

The Bright Moon Divine Hall flew over from afar and radiated clear moonlight. Fairy Hao Yue’s cold voice loudly rang from the divine hall, “This is a heavenly tribulation. It’s something that occurs extremely rarely here. The area below the whirl of clouds is the place affected by the heavenly tribulation. Once you set foot there, you will be locked onto by the Heavenly Tribulation, and you will die even as a Saint Emperor. That’s all I wanted to say. Do what you want.” After warning everyone, she moved the divine hall to another region, stopping twenty kilometers away from the center of the whirl of clouds.

“A heavenly tribulation? What’s that?” All the Saint Kings were

confused. They had lived for thousands of years and had heard about the various stories of the world. Some of them even possessed a clear understanding of a few matters that had happened in ancient times, but none of them had heard of the heavenly tribulation fairy Hao Yue mentioned.

Even the protector clans were the same. They found the term extremely unfamiliar because their records never mentioned anything to do with heavenly tribulations.

“Fairy Hao Yue, may I ask what a heavenly tribulation is? Why does it happen? Is it a signal? And how do you know about heavenly tribulations?” A great elder of a protector clan asked. He spoke calmly and treated her as someone who stood on equal ground as him. She was just a soul now, after all, so her prestige to them was not as great as a living Saint Emperor.

Yadriam, the three Class 9 Magical Beasts, and the path lord of carnal desires stared at the Bright Moon Divine Hall. It had been created from materials collected from the distant moon, so it was extremely rare and valuable. Not even Saint Emperors would possess a hall built of moon rocks because the moon was just too far away. They could not create Space Gates in outer space, so the only way to reach the moon was by flying.

Fairy Hao Yue remained silent. Nothing was worth her attention, even the thousand or so Saint Kings present and the five Saint Emperors. She had come with her divine hall just to see what had invoked the heavenly tribulation.

“Oh my god, what am I seeing? Is that actually a city completely forged from tungsten alloy? It’s tungsten alloy. Oh my god. Its value is measured by the weight of purple coins, and it’s such a huge city. Just how much tungsten alloy went into it?” A human Saint King that had hurried back to the continent discovered Flame City in the distance and immediately sighed in surprise. His eyes lit up.

A few other human Saint Kings who had only just returned to the continent immediately looked over with that. Their eyes widened because of what they saw.

“This is unbelievable. It really is a city completely forged from tungsten alloy. As long as you possess this city, you will become the wealthiest and most respected person on the continent. Have I seen wrong? This city’s not actually protected by a formation, nor does it have a barrier. It doesn’t even seem to have a Saint King. It seems to be in the possession of a mercenary group,” another Saint King sighed in surprise while his eyes began to burn with desire.

Although wealth was basically nothing to Saint Kings, it was still enough to interest many of them when it reached such an unfathomable level, tempting them to take it for themselves.

The surrounding humans who belonged to the continent looked at the two Saint Kings like idiots after hearing what they had said. A good-hearted Saint King arrived beside the two of them and softly informed them, “My fellow brothers, I’d advise you to not lay your hands on Flame City or even look at it. I can guarantee that you will regret it otherwise, because that city is something that the protector clans fare not to touch.”

The two Saint Kings immediately shrank back with that. They quickly looked away and dismissed the thoughts. The other Saint Kings behaved the same. Something that even the ten protector clans dared not to touch was not something they could covet.

At this moment, the pressure in the surroundings began to abruptly increase. With a deafening boom, a huge bolt of lightning, half a meter thick, fell from the whirl. It illuminated the surroundings with its light, turning them snow-white in a single moment, and struck the mountain range below at unbelievable speed.

Chapter 1306: Shocking Lightning (Four)

Crack!

A thunderous boom shook the surroundings as the bolt of lightning struck the tungsten alloy mine.

A large portion of the tungsten alloy within the mine had been extracted already, only leaving behind the purest tungsten alloy ore deep below. Since the alloy left behind was just far too pure, it was extremely tough and even a full-powered strike from a Heavenly Saint Master would only leave behind a shallow mark. It was extremely difficult to extract, such that probably only Saint Rulers possessed the ability.

However, why would Saint Rulers lower themselves to do something like that? As a result, the more pure ore had been left there untouched.

But at this moment, an almost-bottomless hole had been carved into the ore by the bolt of lightning. The ore that had been struck had vaporized without a single trace. The alloy seemed to have been reduced to nothingness by the lightning.

The entire mine violently shook as if a great earthquake was happening. Countless mountains in the surroundings collapsed, and in the blink of an eye, huge cracks littered the boulders. The mountain range had been reduced to rubble in the blink of an eye.

The surrounding Saint Kings, who were watching the spectacle, all became rather pale. They stared at the thick layer of clouds in the sky in both shock and dread. All of them slowly backed off subconsciously.

They had all sensed the extremely powerful energy within the lightning the moment it fell. It was enough to instill despair in them all. They had never seen such powerful lightning before. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection felt as insignificant as ants

before it.

It was not just the Saint Kings. Even the five Saint Emperors gathered there became extremely stern. The lightning was far more powerful than they had imagined. None of them believed they could block the lightning, and even if they managed to, they would be half-dead.

The power of the heavenly tribulation overwhelmed all of them, and they all retreated. They reached twenty kilometers away before stopping, afraid that they would be affected by the ripples.

Only fairy Hao Yue remained where she was. She had a very deep understanding of heavenly tribulations and understood just how powerful they were as well as how to avoid them. As long she remained outside the affected region, the heavenly tribulation would not be able to reach her.

Bi Hai, Bi Lian, You Yue, had arrived with the Saint Rulers of the Flame Mercenaries behind them. They all gathered beside the Bright Moon Divine Hall. There were just too many Saint Kings present. If something suddenly happened, they would hide in the divine hall immediately.

Crack!

With another deafening sound, the second bolt of lightning fell a few seconds after the first. It glowed with an extremely bright light as it landed in the exact same place.

The second bolt of lightning was clearly much more powerful than the first. It had reached a width of a meter and wherever it passed by, black cracks would appear in space. It completely obliterated the tungsten alloy below, reducing it into nothingness. All it left behind was a meter-wide hole of an unknown depth.

Suddenly, a faint, golden light began to glow at the bottom of the hole. The light was extremely dim, but it grew brighter and brighter at a visible rate. In just a few seconds, the light became

extremely dazzling, resplendent like gold. A tremendous ripple of terrifying energy emerged from within the hole, enough to cause the Saint Emperors to reveal a different expression. The Saint Kings leaped in fright.

“What a terrifying energy ripple. It’s no weaker than a Saint Emperor. Just what is this?”

“Has some treasure of the world appeared? Specifically for us to deal with the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints?”

“What’s hidden within this mine? It’s actually enough to invoke the wrath of the heavens and be struck by lightning. Is this a blessing or a curse for our continent?”

“Oh no. The ripple of energy deep in the mine is rapidly strengthening. The lightning is so powerful, but it’s unable to kill this unknown thing?”

The Saint Kings discussed the events occurring before them. None of them were able to keep calm. The five Saint Emperors were all stern as they stared fixedly at the bottomless hole formed from the lightning.

Many people had already raised many ideas of investigating just what was below the mine, but the place was enveloped by a powerful ball of energy. No matter what they tried, they could not pass through it. Even Saint Emperors were no exceptions.

At the bottom of the hole was a thirty-meter-wide space. A golden liquid currently floated there enveloped in a resplendent golden light. The liquid seemed to be completely condensed from energy, and the energy was so powerful that it was stunning. Even Saint Emperors would not be able to keep their calm before it.

The golden liquid slowly moved, forming a vaguely human shape. It seemed like an unborn fetus within the womb, where its limbs and head had not become fully distinguishable yet.

Chapter 1307: The Gold-clothed Boy

The third bolt of lightning that fell was even stronger than the others. It was much more violent than the second, having reached one and a half meters wide.

The lightning struck the ball of golden liquid with great speed, causing it to violently quiver. However, it forcefully resisted the lightning that could kill even Saint Emperors. The ball did not dissipate, only shrinking a little.

However, a closer look revealed that the energy within the golden liquid was rapidly strengthening even though it had shrunk after being struck. It was undergoing a growth in quality, and the features of a human infant became much more evident and clear.

Thunder boomed in the sky, shaking the surroundings. The lightning fell consecutively, with a fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh, and eighth bolt...

Very soon, eight bolt of lightning had rained down. Every single one of them struck the same place. Each one was more powerful and thicker than the last, and when the eighth bolt fell, the tremendous disturbance was enough to devastate the surroundings, turning them into darkness. The energy of the world in a surrounding ten thousand kilometers was vaporized and the laws there fell into disorder. The Saint Rulers and Saint Kings almost fell out of the sky.

The five Saint Emperors all paled. They all could feel the threat of death on that eighth bolt of lightning. It was so powerful that it could slay a Saint Emperor in a single moment. They would be helpless before it.

“Just what terrifying thing is hidden there? It can take on such terrifying lightning and still survive.” The five Saint Emperors all felt extremely curious as well as some unease. No one was able to

investigate just what was hidden beneath the mine, but all of them knew just how powerful and terrifying it was. Quite a few of them felt dread.

“This is transcendence. An Origin realm expert has been born on the Tian Yuan Continent, but it’s unfortunate that this world does not have origin energy. It is unsuitable for Origin realm experts to cultivate here, and the passage to the Saints’ World has been sealed by Shui Yunlan. If nothing happens, the Origin realm spirit will find it very difficult to leave here and will remain at the Origin realm for the rest of his life,” fairy Hao Yue murmured inside her divine hall. She was also unable to check just what had invoked the heavenly tribulation, but with her knowledge and experience, she had guessed what it was long ago.

Rumble! The sound of thunder roared across the sky, producing a string of heavy booms like the roar of a furious dragon. The clouds began to vigorously churn as tremendous energy gathered from all directions, condensing at its center.

All the people present were shocked by that. They could already see that the clouds were charging up to deliver the strongest bolt of lightning they had seen yet.

At the same time, the pulses of energy from beneath the mine became more and more powerful. The metallic essence within the mine began to rapidly gather from every direction. The tungsten alloy immediately lost its original luster with the loss of the metal essence, becoming extremely ordinary and fragile rock.

In just a few seconds, the largest tungsten alloy mine on the Tian Yuan Continent lost all the tungsten alloy it had. It was reduced to an ordinary mountain range.

The lightning in the sky had finished charging up. With a great boom that shook through the whole region, the ninth bolt of lightning fell resplendently. It was four to five meters thick and the commotion it created was just astonishing. Wherever the

lightning passed, the space would shatter like mirrors and reveal the eternal darkness behind.

At the same time, a tremendous ripple of energy appeared. A dazzling, golden light rose up from below, quickly taking to the sky as if it wanted to rival the darkness of the void.

It was a pillar of golden light. Like a dragon, it was vicious and violent as it climbed higher and higher into the air in an unstoppable manner. It collided with the lightning mid-air.

Boom!

A terrifying sound immediately erupted when two collided. Wild energy streams wreaked havoc in the surroundings while the mountain range immediately cracked apart. Countless mountains and cliffaces were flattened.

The boom finally disappeared, and the cracks in the space began to heal after a long while. The surroundings recovered their initial brightness while the lightning in the sky completely vanished. The sun shone just as resplendently as before, illuminating the surroundings.

The eighth bolt of lightning could easily slay Saint Emperors, but the ninth bolt was countless times greater. However, the golden pillar of light from the depths of the mine could actually rival it, causing both to vanish into the surroundings.

The Saint Kings hovered in the distance as they watched the scene unfold. What had happened earlier felt like a dream, completely overthrowing what they understood. They had never seen such terrifying lightning, nor did they ever imagine that such a terrifying but unknown thing would be hiding in the depths of the mine, which had greatly surpassed any abilities that Saint Emperors could possess.

The five Saint Emperors quietly hovered there with pale faces. They stared at the changed mountain range in a daze. All of them

were speechless.

“It’s ended. Let’s go,” fairy Hao Yue’s face rang in You Yue’s ears. Soon after speaking, the divine hall silently departed with Bi Lian and You Yue, returning to the city lord’s estate in Flame City.

Bi Hai stared at the unfamiliar mountain range, still rather taken aback with fright. He slowly calmed himself down before leaving with the Saint Rulers of the Flame Mercenaries. He no longer bothered with the matters that would follow. He knew very well that even if some treasure had truly appeared there, it would not be something that they could lay their hands on.

The mine had been reduced to an ordinary mountain range, and even the terrifying energy below had completely vanished. However, there were still many Saint Kings who dared not to approach it, staring at the huge hole caused by the lightning in fright.

A long while later, a bolder Saint King carefully made his way over to see what had happened. He even entered the hole, but he discovered nothing in the end. He did not find any treasure. There was only ordinary stone and nothing else.

Afterward, more and more Saint Kings approached the area to investigate. Even the five Saint Emperors did the same, but the outcome was the same. They failed to discover anything. Not to mention treasures, they did not even find the residue of any treasures.

“The lightning was so powerful, so the treasure was probably smashed into oblivion,” an older Saint King shook his head and regretfully sighed.

Many people agreed with what he said very quickly. They really could not think of any other explanation other than this. They immediately became regretful as well.

“Fortunately it’s not a new tunnel discovered by the Saints’

World. Everyone, since that's all to it, let's hurry back to Mercenary City and continue to keep guard," said the grand elder of Mercenary City.

Very soon, the Saint Kings from Mercenary City left and the mountain range became empty again. What was different from before was that it could no longer be called a mountain range. All the mountains had collapsed while a few of them had been flattened entirely.

Flame City was still as bustling as before, but interesting discussions about the lightning could be heard on the streets. The matter became more and more exaggerated and more and more mystical, producing many versions of the story.

A boy in gold clothes stood on a street of the city in a daze. He was less than a meter tall and possessed a pair of large, bright eyes. He passed through the crowd rather timidly, looking around as he walked as if everything was interesting.

The boy was white and chubby. He was extremely cute and only seemed to be three or four years of age. His golden clothes brightly reflected light and were as resplendent as gold. They seemed to have been made from pure gold.

The boy's attire drew the attention of many people in the surroundings very quickly, but even more people became fixated on his gold clothes. The gazes were mixed with greed, curiosity, envy, and so on.

Chapter 1308: Reverberating Through Flame City

“Who’s this kid? How can he wear such luxurious clothes at such a young age? They seem to be made from gold. I wonder which large clan he comes from...”

“Gold is extremely heavy, but the boy’s clothes look soft, just like cloth. However, it shines even brighter than gold. You can tell that it’s made from something extremely valuable with just a glance...”

“This body is really cute. He’s white and chubby and his large eyes are filled with brightness. He really does make people want to spoil him. I want to have a child as cute as him in the future...”

The people on the street became fixated on him and their discussions shifted to him as the topic. The boy in golden clothes was as attention-catching as fireworks. That was how unique and dazzling he seemed.

There were even quite a few people who went up to the boy to ask him about things. They asked for his name while some people directly asked him about his background. There were even some people had started fawning over him, asking about his well-being. They all believed that the boy belonged to an important clan, so once they got on good terms with him, they could even gain success and rise through the ranks.

There were various people among them. Not only were there members of the Flame Mercenaries, there were mercenaries from other groups as well. There were also those who had come to join the Flame Mercenaries, those looking for work, as well as merchants, and so on.

Very soon, a great group of people had gathered around the boy and endlessly spoke to him. There were quite a few people who had come to watch as well.

The boy was like a child who had never seen the world before. He became stunned when he was surrounded by such a large crowd, staring at them blankly. His eyes were filled with curiosity as well as some timidity.

“Kid, what’s your name...”

“Are you lost? Tell me where your home is. I’ll take you back...”

However, the boy said nothing no matter what the surrounding people asked. He just stood there in a daze as he blankly stared back at everyone. His face was filled with confusion.

A few sharper people immediately caught an inkling from the boy’s behaviour. They immediately guessed that the boy’s background was nowhere near as complicated as they had imagined, because all descendants of large clans would undergo extremely strict education from a young age or be spoiled by their seniors’ parents. They would possess a natural type of pride or supremacy and not behave in such a confused manner.

“Is there something wrong with this child? Has he been abandoned by his parents?” A person inquired. At that moment, the people around him became much quieter. Many people’s opinions of the boy underwent some minute changes.

At this moment, a fat, wealthy-looking, middle-aged man dressed as a merchant approached the boy with small, white clothes. He crouched down and said with a wide smile, “Child, I’ve been a merchant for several dozen years and my foresight is extremely great. I can tell with a single glance that the clothes on you are just far too ugly. They don’t suit you. Look, I just happen to have these beautiful clothes on me. I’ll give them to you. Come, let me take off your clothes and then you can wear this.”

The fat man quickly moved as he said that, taking the boy’s golden clothing off as quickly as he could. He then changed the boy into the white clothes that were also rather valuable.

The boy acted like he understood nothing. He did not resist, allowing the man to take off his clothes and change him into the white clothes that seemed even better. This was because he could sense that the fat man would not harm him, nor did he hold any hostile intent.

“You filthy merchant. You’re tricking a kid for his stuff...” Many people in the surroundings began to curse when they saw this. There were also a few people who sighed inside. They felt regretful over the fact that they did not act earlier. The boy’s clothes were clearly something extraordinary, but unfortunately, the merchant had taken them away first.

After getting the gold clothes, the fat man twisted them forcefully. As expected, they were as soft as embroidered cloth. They could not fade since they obviously had not been dyed. They were made from a material he had never seen before, and with his knowledge, he could immediately tell how extraordinary the material was. He immediately smiled complacently, disappearing into the crowd with the clothes.

A few burly men in the crowd looked at each other before leaving the crowd as well, tailing the fat man.

The most valuable item on the boy was his clothes, so now that it was gone, the crowd immediately lost interest and dispersed very quickly.

The boy continued on without the crowd. He looked around as he moved, curious about everything. He would sink into his thoughts from time to time, but no one paid anymore attention to him.

The fat man who had taken the clothes had already made it outside the city now. He had discovered that a few people were tailing him, but he paid no heed to them at all. Instead, he hurriedly pulled the golden clothes from his bosom in excitement.

He had already determined that the value of the clothes was far greater than anything he could imagine with his many years of

experience, because he was unable to determine what they were made out of, even with all his knowledge. He had never seen nor heard about anything like this.

However, his face immediately hardened when he stuck his hand into his bosom. The shining clothes were no longer present. He had grabbed a handful of soil. The soil had already been reduced to fine sand, slowly slipping through his fingers.

“W-what’s happened?” The fat man stared blankly for a while before crying out. He immediately became flustered and continued to dig into his bosom. Unfortunately, the clothes were nowhere to be seen. He could not find them no matter where he looked, only grabbing handfuls of soil.

“How is this possible? How is this possible? How is it soil? Where did the clothes from before go? Where did they go? I clearly put them here,” the man said in sorrow. He thought through everything he had done since then, but he could not understand what had happened.

“F*cking fatty, hand over the clothes if you want to live.” Over ten burly men charged up from behind and surrounded him. They were all malicious, and the leader was an Earth Saint Master.

The fat man had just lost the clothes, so he was furious. His face immediately sank when he saw the surrounding people and angrily bellowed, “Piss off! I’m not in a good mood!” He arrived before the Earth Saint Master in a single stroke, directly hurling a punch. The fist shone with fire-red light as it erupted with a suffocating wave of heat.

The punch moved very quickly. The Earth Saint Master could not dodge it, so he placed the huge sword in his hand vertically across his chest.

A heavy sound immediately rang out when the fist collided with the sword. The First Cycle Earth Saint Master was blown away along with his sword.

“A Sixth Cycle Earth Saint Master!” The man who had been blown away cried out as his expression became extremely ugly.

The surrounding men all revealed different expressions when they heard that. They were only Great Saint Masters, so how could they be an opponent of an Earth Saint Master? They immediately turned and fled.

The fat man did not chase after them. He racked his head in annoyance and cursed, “Some great expert must have realized the extraordinary clothes and secretly messed with me. It’s my bad luck. I’ve lost several hundred gold coins because of this.”

The boy had already crossed a street back in Flame City. However, his white clothes became golden once again. They shone even brighter than gold.

He was surrounded by another crowd of people again. His clothes were taken away by someone else again because of his naivety, causing the clothes on him to be replaced once again.

The boy looked at the new clothes and found the process to be extremely odd. He could not understand why people liked to change him into beautiful clothes and celebrated when they saw the beautiful clothes on him.

Very soon, someone cried out in a building in the city. The man who had taken the boy’s clothes away had discovered that they had been reduced to something ordinary after taking them back to his inn. Not only that, they were reduced to dust once he touched it.

Bi Lian currently handled the daily matters of the mercenaries in the city lord’s estate while You Yue sat beside in leisure, eating delicious cake.

At this moment, a guard ran in from outside and dropped to one knee. He said, “Vice city lord, I’ve just received a report that an extremely weird boy has appeared in our city. The boy wears gold clothes made from unknown material, and it’s made many people

go green with greed. Quite a few of them have used various methods to take his clothes, but they become extremely ordinary without long and turn to dust with a single touch. Meanwhile, the boy's new clothes will become golden once again. I suspect that this boy is far less simple than he seems, so I've specifically come to report this matter."

Chapter 1309: A Desirable Boy

Bi Lian raised her head and looked at the guard in doubt after hearing his report. She asked, “Are you saying that all the clothes the boy wears will turn golden, like how they were before they were taken off, and the clothes that were taken turn to dust as well?”

“Yes, vice city lord. That’s exactly what’s happening, and I’ve even sent people to verify the outcome. This matter cannot be wrong. The boy only looks to be three or four years of age, so he hasn’t cultivated before, yet he possesses an ability like this. I believe he is definitely something impressive,” the guard politely replied. Although he was an Earth Saint Master, a reasonably powerful expert, people like him were just far too plentiful in the Flame Mercenaries. As a result, he dared not to show any arrogance before Bi Lian even though she was weaker than him.

You Yue looked over as she ate her cake and became interested. She said to Bi Lian, “Sister Bi Lian, I’m assuming that this boy possesses some natural ability. These types of people are extremely rare on the Tian Yuan Continent. Why don’t we go see just how wondrous he is?”

Bi Lian became interested as well. She put down her work at hand and stood up in excitement. She said, “Okay, sure. I haven’t gone out in ages, so we can stroll through the city with this.”

You Yue and Bi Lian had hit it off since they were around the same age, so they immediately left the estate on two mighty Class 5 Magical Beasts with a group of guards. A Saint Ruler secretly tailed them to protect them.

The Bright Moon Divine Hall stood within the estate silently as it shone with an everlasting glow. Its presence was vast, and it was beautiful, but it was also filled with a holy presence.

In an empty corner of Flame City, an ordinary house sat. It was

pitch-black inside. Visibility was non-existent, and it was filled with the silence of the dead. However, an invisible pressure seemed to permeate the interior, making the house feel suffocating.

At this moment, the door to the building opened, but the sunlight outside failed to enter the room. A skinny man entered the house like a ghost before silently closing the door. He dropped to one knee and growled, "Sect master, vice sect master, the vice city lord, Bi Lian, and You Yue have left the estate together."

"Have they brought the Bright Moon Divine Hall with them?" A deep and husky voice materialized in the dark.

"The Bright Moon Divine Hall remains in the estate. They have not brought it with them," the man politely replied.

"I understand. You can leave," the same voice rang out again. It seemed to come from everywhere, making it impossible to discern the place it originated from within the darkness.

"Yes sect master, vice sect master. I shall leave," the person turned around and left. He did not make a single sound as he walked, even when opening or closing the door.

"Fantastic. They've finally left the city lord's estate without the Bright Moon Divine Hall. Sect master, we can use this opportunity to take revenge." A heavy voice rang out again within the dark room, but it was clearly different than the person who had spoken before.

"We've already remained here for a long time just to kill the people most important to Jian Chen. You Yue is his fiancée while Bi Lian is his sister. If we assassinate the two of them, Jian Chen will definitely be left in agony. It's just been a pity that they've been hiding in the city lord's estate and have never come out. I fear the Bright Moon Divine Hall that resides there, which is why we've waited until today. An opportunity has finally presented itself now. I'll wipe out their souls for sure, so they won't be able to be

revived by a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master.”

“Hmph, Jian Chen, my Underworld sect is not something that can be trifled with. You’ve wiped it out, so just wait for our wild revenge. Killing your fiancée and sister will only be the first step...”

The people hiding there were sect master Gu Zhen and vice sect master Luo Qi of the Underworld sect who had managed to flee.

At this moment, a large group of people gathered in a large street. They discussed events with one another, causing the entire street to be blocked. A boy in gold clothes stood blankly in the center of the crowd as he looked at the people around him in confusion. His cute face was filled with curiosity.

Ever since he had found the city, he had been encircled by large crowds of people numerous times. Many of them hurriedly gifted him beautiful clothes, which made him extremely happy, but he could never understand why the people around him always liked to point at him.

“I’ve heard that no matter what clothes they are, once they are worn by this kid, they’ll turn golden. Its quality is extremely great, such that it becomes invaluable. Just look at the clothes on him. Anyone with some insight can tell that his clothes are worth even more than gold with just a single glance...”

“I’ve heard of that as well, but I also heard that once the clothes are taken off him, they will return to how they were before and that they cannot be touched, or they’ll be reduced to dust...”

“What a wondrous boy. Surely he doesn’t have an ability like the Midas Touch. If that’s true, doesn’t that mean that he can produce endless amounts of wealth...”

Many people conversed around the boy, but when they heard about the Midas Touch, all of their eyes burned with desire.

At this moment, a middle-aged woman squeezed her way to a

spot right before the boy. She smiled as warmly as she could and softly inquired, “Precious, you can’t find your family? All the people around here are bad people. Only I’m good. Come with me, I’ll go find your family with you, okay?”

“Kid, come with me. I can guarantee you a hearty life...”

“Brother, come with sister. I like you the most...”

The people around the boy frantically began to fight over him, but since they were not people with great statuses, they could not use force due to the lack of deterrence from people fighting back. As a result, they could only try various methods to trick the boy away.

At this moment, four Heaven Saint Masters descended from the sky while flickering with light colored by specific attributes. They landed in the center of the crowd and surrounded the boy from four different directions. Afterward, one of them clasped his hands at the surrounding people and said, “Everyone, we are from the Zhou hermit clan of Zhou. This boy belongs to our Zhou family, so we shall be taking him away.”

Chapter 1310: Assassination (One)

“What’re you saying? I may not know why this boy’s appeared in the city, nor do I know which clan he belongs to, but I am certain that he does not belong to your Zhou family...”

“Do you still need to mention that? The boy’s special ability has obviously caught the Zhou family’s eye, which is why they want to take him away. After all, it’s extremely likely that this boy has the ability of Midas’ Touch. If such a wondrous ability fully matures, the Zhou family will enjoy an endless supply of wealth. They can buy large quantities of monster cores and cultivation resources for their descendants and make the clan even more powerful...”

“Sigh, too bad they’re strong. They’ve sent four Heaven Saint Masters right off the bat, and they’re a hermit clan as well. They possess a Saint Ruler, so we can’t provoke them. Looks like the boy’s going to be taken away by the Zhou family...”

“Hahaha, people of Zhou, I never thought you would actually arrive so quickly. Unfortunately, you cannot take away the child.” At this moment, a loud chuckle rang out. Three middle-aged men in white robes quickly flew over from afar and also landed beside the boy. The three of them seemed valiant with straight eyebrows, but they all looked the same. They were triplets.

The four Heaven Saint Masters from the Zhou family revealed different expressions when they saw the three men. One of them growled, “I never thought the Yun brothers of the Heartsword sect would come as well. You sure have quick access to information to hurry over from over ten thousand kilometers away.”

The four Heaven Saint Masters from the Zhou family clearly feared the triplets very much. Although the Heartsword sect was also a hermit clan, it was far more powerful than the Zhou family, as they possessed three Saint Rulers, outnumbering the Zhou family. At the same time, the three brothers had all reached the

Sixth Cycle. Coupled with the fact that they were triplets, they understood one another and knew how to use combined attacks. They could work together perfectly, and if the three of them began fighting at the same time, they could defeat the four of them easily.

The eldest among the three brother chuckled and clasped his hands at the four Heaven Saint Masters, “Our Heartsword sect will be taking this child away. You shouldn’t have any problems with that, right?”

The four Heaven Saint Masters hesitated, so a second brother immediately sneered, “Do not say that this kid is a part of your Zhou family. I think you understand why...”

The four Heaven Saint Masters immediately revealed ugly expressions. After a moment of hesitance, the person who seemed to be in charge finally gritted his teeth and said, “Alright, we don’t want the child anymore. If you want to take him away, take him away. I hope your Heartsword sect can protect this child. His ability is unique, so it’s probably already caught the attention of a few ancient clans.

The eldest brother smiled mildly, “That’s our problem, so there’s no need for you to worry.” He then turned around and said to someone beside him, “Third brother, take this child back.” The three brother were secretly worried as well. This was the territory of the Flame Mercenaries, and they did not know if the upper echelon of the Flame Mercenaries had received the news. They needed to take the child away before someone from the Flame Mercenaries could hurry over.

The third brother nodded once before arriving beside the boy and grabbing his arm, but the next moment, his face slightly sank. He seemed slightly startled by the boy. He could not help but call out, “What a heavy boy. He’s at least several tons.”

The people in the surroundings broke into a hubbub with that exclamation. Some experts possessed many abilities that could

make their bodies as heavy as mountains, connecting themselves with the earth, but the child right in front of them were only three or four years of age. Everyone became surprised once again since he possessed an ability like that.

The third brother immediately used both his hands. He wanted to lift the boy off the ground, but after using all of his strength and after his face had become flushed with blood, the boy did not move at all.

He was shocked, and the gaze he sent the boy reflected exactly that. With his strength, he could lift things that were several dozen tons heavy, yet he was unable to lift the boy who was less than a meter tall. He found it difficult to believe.

The eldest brother frowned slightly. At that moment, he too realized that the boy was probably far more complicated than he had imagined, which made him feel an even greater urgency to take the boy back. He did want the boy to be taken by another organization.

“Second brother, let’s do it together,” he called out before grabbing the boy with the other man. However, even when all three of them worked together, they failed to lift the boy up, shocking the crowd.

The boy stared at the three brothers in confusion as he blinked his large eyes. The three brothers wanted to vomit blood from his pure gaze. To think that they were mighty Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master, yet they could not even lift a kid. Even though the child was unique, it was still embarrassing for the three of them.

“The vice city lord has arrived!”

Suddenly, a loud voice rang out from beyond the crowd, immediately causing the crowd to fall into a commotion. The densely-packed people split apart by themselves to open a wide path.

The three brothers sank inside as soon as they heard the voice. The matter they worried most about still happened in the end.

You Yue and Bi Lian slowly made their way over on large, ferocious Class 5 Magical Beasts. Beside the two of them were several dozen guards. Even the weakest guards were Third Cycle Earth Saint Master. They all wore armor forged from tungsten alloy, and ten Heaven Saint Masters formed the final line.

“We greet the vice city lord!”

All the people gathered in the street clasped their hands and bowed. They cried out thunderously. The position of vice city lord virtually reigned supreme in regard to the Flame Mercenaries and Flame City. It was even greater than the status of a king in the eight great kingdoms.

The three brother sighed inside and helplessly let go of the child. They bowed deeply at Bi Lian with the four Heaven Saint Masters from the Zhou family and called out together, “We greet the vice city lord!”

“There’s no need to be so polite,” Bi Lian smiled. Her voice was soft and she spoke nonchalantly. She had experienced things like this countless times already, so she had learned how to easily deal with the situation.

“What a cute boy!” You Yue stared at the boy in clothes that seemed to be made of gold, and she immediately took a liking to him.

Bi Lian looked at the boy as well and her eyes immediately lit up. She also took a liking to him. The boy was white and chubby. His large, dark eyes were filled with purity and naivety. He really was extremely cute. Let alone females, even a few men would be tempted to glance at him a few extra times and sigh in praise.

The boy stared at You Yue and Bi Lian without blinking. His eyes were filled with curiosity and confusion. For some reason, he felt

that the two of them were particularly close with him at first glance, because he could feel an extremely warm presence from them.

You Yue and Bi Lian dismounted at the same time and hurried to the boy's side. The ten Heaven Saint Masters beside them immediately followed close beside them, protecting the two of them in a loyal manner. Even the Heaven Saint Masters from the Zhou family and Heartsword sect were driven ten meters away.

However, they dared not to show any displeasure and, instead, maintained a smile throughout.

“Little boy, tell sister what your name.” You Yue crouched down beside the boy and smiled warmly as she asked softly.

The boy stared at You Yue in confusion and said nothing.

“Little boy, tell sister what your name and where you live,” Bi Lian asked as well in concern.

The boy remained the same, confused and silent. It seemed like he did not how to speak at all.

At this moment, You Yue violently quivered. Her expression immediately underwent a drastic change and the gaze she viewed the boy with was filled with extreme shock and disbelief.

Just then, fairy You Yue had spoken to her, so she had learned the true identity of the boy. The boy was actually the metal spirit that had withstood the nine bolts of lightning from the tungsten alloy mine. He was a natural spirit, possessing extremely great potential. You Yue had also learned that the boy was an Origin realm expert from fairy You Yue at the same time.

You Yue felt extremely shocked because of this. She could not believe that the harmless-looking boy was even more terrifying than Saint Emperors, standing at the same level as the four great champions from ancient times.

“You Yue, what's wrong?” Bi Lian sensed You Yue's changes and

immediately became suspicious.

You Yue sucked in a deep breath and forcefully calmed herself down. However, her opinion of the boy had already undergone a drastic change.

After a short while of silence, You Yue extended her hands toward the boy in a rather trembling manner. You Yue softly said, “Little brother, I know you have no home. Why don’t you come with me and live with me from now on? I’ll treat you like my own brother, okay?”

No one knew whether the boy understood what You Yue had said or what she intended, but he did not turn her down. He obediently grabbed onto her hand. The boy found You Yue and Bi Lian to be especially close, like family, because You Yue and Bi Lian gave off a feeling that made him feel extremely warm.

The boy was taken onto the Class 5 Magical Beast mount that You Yue rode, but to everyone’s surprise, the beast easily withstood the boy’s weight, as if he was no longer as heavy as before.

The Yun brothers bitterly watched everything unfold. They did not even think of the possibility that the boy had been resisting the three of them before, unwilling to go with them, which was why he had become so heavy that he was immovable.

Just as You Yue and Bi Lian were returning to the city lord’s estate with the boy, the space within a radius of a hundred meters suddenly froze. All the people within that area became immobilized, and even the Saint Ruler watching over Bi Lian secretly suffered the same fate.

Chapter 1311: Assassination (Two)

The two of them moved extremely fast. They seemed to have fused with the surrounding space, appearing before You Yue and Bi Lian in a short moment through the use of Spatial Force. The dagger in their hands stabbed toward the center of You Yue and Bi Lian's eyebrows, wanting to wipe out their souls in a way that even Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters could not revive them.

This time, the strongest guard they had brought was only a Saint Ruler. They did not possess any Saint Kings secretly watching over them, so the impressive-looking group of guards were completely useless against the assassination attempt from two Saint Kings. They had just been reduced to a deterrence.

Even the Saint Ruler protecting them secretly suffered the same fate. He was immobilized by the frozen space.

However, not everyone within the hundred meter radius had been frozen. The boy who sat on the Class 5 Magical Beast with You Yue was completely unaffected. He stared at the two Saint King assassins as they rapidly approached him with his large, naive eyes. He only seemed to be three or four years old, but he could easily follow the movements of the two Saint Kings.

At the same time, a ball of gentle, white light rose out from You Yue. The Moon God Scepter flew out of her Space Ring. It was small and exquisite, and its simple patterning was clearly visible. The fist-sized white gem embedded at the top shone with gentle moonlight.

The Moon God Scepter hovered before You Yue, and suddenly, an extremely powerful ripple of energy swept out of the gem. It formed a thin-looking but tough barrier around You Yue and Bi Lian.

This was the energy fairy Hao Yue had left behind. It was her power when she was a peak Saint Emperor, which had been

activated during this crucial moment.

The two Saint Kings were less than a meter away from You Yue and Bi Lian right now. Seeing how they had become protected by a barrier of energy, a sharp light immediately flashed through their eyes. They used all they had. The vast energy within them surged into their daggers, slicing through the surrounding space. They wanted to kill them in a single blow.

The boy's gaze finally underwent some changes at that moment. His eyes were no longer filled with confusion or curiosity. Instead, they glowed bright like stars and contained some anger.

The boy could sense the killing intent from the two Saint Kings. The boy would not have reacted if the Saint Kings attacked other people, including the guards around You Yue and Bi Lian, but they just had to attack the two people that he felt most close with and who gave him a warm feeling.

At this crucial moment, the boy struck out. He extended his two soft, white, small hands. They shone with dazzling golden light, even more resplendent than gold and more blinding than the sun. The light directly engulfed the two assassins.

The next moment, the two assassins came to a sudden halt before their daggers could land on the barrier of Moonlight Force. They had already become trapped in the air by a mysterious and powerful force.

The two assassins were shocked. They had been Saint Kings for a very long time. Although they had not reached Great Perfection, even those at Great Perfection would not be able to completely trap them. They would only be able to make them pause for a moment. Yet, they were trapped right now. Not only were they immobilized, even the energy within them had broken away from their control. They had been reduced to ordinary people, shocking them greatly.

Now that the two Saint Kings were trapped, the frozen space in the surroundings returned to how it had been before, and the

several dozen guards all noticed what had happened.

“There are assassins! Protect the vice city lord and princess You Yue!” The hidden Saint Ruler loudly called out as he aggressively charged at the two Saint Kings first. However, his face was pale. This paleness did not come from being frightened by the two Saint Kings, but by what was about to happen to You Yue and Bi Lian.

He understood just far too well how important the two of them were to Jian Chen. If the two of them had been assassinated under his watch, it would be him who would have been held responsible. Probably only his death would suffice at that time.

A flare shot into the sky and loudly exploded. It was visible across the entire city. A guard had sent out a signal for help as quickly as he could.

The Saint Ruler had already arrived beside one of the Saint Kings and swung his machete toward Luo Qi's neck without any hesitation.

Even though Luo Qi was a Saint King, he was currently trapped by the boy. Not only did he lose his mobility, he even lost control over the energy inside him. He could not use any Saint Kings abilities either. He could not dodge the strike at all, only helplessly watch as the flaming machete flew toward his neck.

Spurt! Luo Qi was easily beheaded. His head parted from his body. The blood spurted a meter into the sky, but he was still alive. As long as the souls of Saint Kings remained, they would not be able to die.

The Saint Ruler became stunned when he saw how he had beheaded the Saint King so easily. However, he returned to his senses very quickly, and without any hesitation, he immediately swung at Luo Qi's head again, in attempt to wipe out his soul.

Luo Qi's head was sliced into two by the swing. His fragile soul disintegrated away.

Meanwhile, the ten Heaven Saint Masters around You Yue and Bi Lian boldly charged at Gu Zhen as well. They all struck out as hard as they could, covering Gu Zhen with wounds in a short moment even though he was just about to become a peak of Saint King.

Chapter 1312: Xiao Jin

Gu Zhen became wide-eyed and became filled with regret and humiliation. He was a mighty Saint King only an inch away from the peak of Saint King. Even with the whole continent in perspective, he was able to rampage wherever he went, yet he was now covered in wounds from ant-like Heaven Saint Masters and even Earth Saint Masters. He was in horrible condition and this would become a permanent stain to his name.

However, he was just unable to do anything. A mysterious and powerful force trapped him, where he could not resist at all. He just became a sitting duck as ant-like existences heavily injured him.

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt! Spurt...

The several dozen Earth Saint Masters and Heaven Saint Masters rapidly swung their Saint Weapons at every inch of Gu Zhen's body. In the blink of an eye, he was covered in blood and the wounds on him had become countless. A large portion of his neck was gone, and only a third of the flesh kept his head connected to his body. His head had almost fallen off and was covered in wounds as well. He had become blind in one eye.

Gu Zhen was an extremely powerful Saint King, but he was a human after all. He did not possess a naturally tough body like magical beasts. If a Class 8 Magical Beast was in the same situation, its body would be able to remain unscathed even from attacks of Saint Rulers.

"Am I really going to die to the hands of ants today? God dammit, I never thought that there would actually be a Saint Emperor hidden within Flame City. Is it fairy Hao Yue? No, that's impossible. She's just a soul now. She doesn't possess her former strength," Gu Zhen growled inside. He was more willing to be slain by an expert as strong as him than be hacked away by a group of

ants. He struggled with all he had, but the mysterious force was far greater than he had ever imagined. It was useless no matter how hard he tried.

“This person’s a Saint Ruler at the very least. Experts at those levels will not die as long as their souls remain. Let’s attack his head together,” a Heaven Saint Master called out. He was unable to tell whether Gu Zhen was a Saint Ruler or Saint King with his strength. He only knew that Saint Rulers possessed the ability to freeze space.

The other guards chopped at Gu Zhen’s head with that. In just a short while, Gu Zhen’s head was obliterated by the flurry of attacks, but his soul remained. An illusionary figure condensed in the air, but it seemed as thin as a wisp of smoke.

The strongest were only Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters. Clearly, they were unable to wipe out his soul with a single attack, but their attacks were enough to deal extremely heavy damage. The soul had become extremely illusionary.

The guards immediately felt surprised when they saw that Gu Zhen was still alive. Suddenly, Gu Zhen’s soul beamed with joy since he had sensed that the mysterious force around him had vanished. Without any hesitation, he immediately attempted to flee.

But a streak of fire-red light flashed over at this moment. The Saint Ruler who secretly guarded Bi Lian charged over with his machete surrounded by flames. He swung it at Gu Zhen’s soul with an unstoppable force.

A Saint Ruler’s strength was incomparable to a group of Heaven Saint Masters. Gu Zhen’s weakened soul collapsed from the strike. He had been killed off.

The Saint Ruler slowly put away his weapon after Gu Zhen’s soul dispersed. His face was flushed while his body gently trembled due to extreme excitement. Only he understood that the two assassins

were not Saint Rulers, but Saint Kings. He had actually killed two Saint Kings with his strength today. If such an unprecedented feat was broadcast, it would definitely shake the entire continent. He felt extremely prideful about this feat.

You Yue had already grasped the Moon God Sceptre, except its gem had become much dimmer now. Although You Yue and Bi Lian had just experienced something frightening, the two of them maintained their usual demeanor, because You Yue always carried the sceptre with her. It contained a fragment of power from fairy Hao Yue all those years ago, so let alone attacks from Saint Kings, it could even easily block attacks from Saint Emperors. There was enough to last until the divine hall arrived.

“Little brother, I really have to thank you for before. If it weren’t for you, I’d probably be in danger now.” You Yue put the scepter away and gently rubbed the boy’s head. Her face was filled with affection.

The boy immediately felt a warm feeling expand inside, as if he was being embraced by his family. It was comforting, calming, and lovely, while the closeness and familiarity he felt for You Yue deepened as well.

The boy suddenly looked at You Yue with his large, round eyes. They were so pure, yet filled with curiosity. He finally stuttered after a long while, “S-s- s-sister...” The boy did not seem to have spoken before, so the word seemed extremely difficult and foreign when he uttered the single word.

You Yue immediately beamed with joy. She happily said, “Oh, you’ve finally spoken. And I had thought that you didn’t know how to speak.” You Yue was extremely excited inside. She knew the boy quite well. It was quite an honor to be called ‘sister’ by an Origin realm expert.

“Good boy. Say sister as well,” Bi Lian stuck her head over as well and looked at the boy affectionately. She paid no attention to the

two bloody corpses up ahead.

“Sister!” The boy blinked as he looked at Bi Lian, calling her ‘sister.’ However, he spoke much smoother this time.

“You probably still don’t have a name, right? Why don’t I give you one? Seeing how you’re wearing gold clothes, you might as well be called Xiao Jin,” Bi Lian giggled happily.

TL note: Jin means gold/golden.

The boy tilted his head and seriously thought about the name. Afterward, he stuttered as he repeated the name, “Xiao-Xiao- Jin... Xiao Jin... Xiao Jin...”

At this moment, most of the other guards and Saint Rulers had all hurried over from the city lord’s estate. The person leading them was Bi Hai. He was in a complete panic, but when he saw that You Yue and Bi Lian were fine, he let out a sigh of relief.

“Fortunately you’re fine, or I would have been riddled with regret. Oh right, have you investigated who the assassins are? Once we find the main instigator, we cannot forgive them at all,” Bi Hai said with some lingering fear, and when he reached the end of his speech, he immediately became stern.

“Bi Hai, the people who have tried to assassinate the vice city lord and princess You Yue were two Saint Kings,” the Saint Ruler who secretly stood guard sternly replied.

Bi Hai’s face changed as soon as he heard that. After a moment of silence, he said, “Take the corpses of these two people back. Looks like we can only deal with this after my grandson gets back.” Saint Kings had already surpassed the limits of what Bi Hai could deal with. The city possessed nothing else that could deal with Saint Kings other than the Bright Moon Divine Hall.

You Yue and Bi Lian returned to the estate in a formidable fashion under the protection of the guards. However, a boy in gold clothes had appeared within the estate from that day on. He

basically followed You Yue and Bi Lian around everywhere, sticking close at all times. He spoke very less and was extremely obedient, making him everyone's favorite. He would purposefully get close to Bi Hai at times as well, revolving around him such that even Bi Hai began to take a liking to the child.

You Yue secretly told Bi Lian and Bi Hai about Xiao Jin's secret identity. Bi Lian wavered between belief and disbelief while Bi Hai broke into laughter. He completely thought that You Yue was joking, so he did not believe her at all.

It was far too shocking that a boy, who seemed to be three or four years of age and could not even talk, was an Origin realm expert. Nobody would have believed this revelation.

Chapter 1313: Movements of the Tao Family

In the World of Forsaken Saints, the scorching sun shone like blood as its demonic light illuminated the world. It was extremely hot, such that it felt like one's skin was being burned when it landed on people.

The cultivation resources in the World of Forsaken Saints far outclassed the Tian Yuan Continent. To the people of the continent, the World of Forsaken Saints was like the heaven of legends, a holy land for cultivation.

However, Tian Yuan Continent seemed like the realm of immortals in terms of scenery. There was nowhere in the World of Forsaken Saints that could rival the beauty of just a few places on the Tian Yuan Continent.

A vast mountain range only smaller than the World Mountains stood on the eastern side of the world. All the steep mountains possessed flat peaks, as if they had been forcefully chopped off by someone, allowing majestic, ancient halls to stand on them. The hall in the very center was over ten kilometers long and wide. It stood several thousand meters tall. It was the most eye-catching since it was completely made from white jade. The snow-white structure gave off a different kind of ambient light as the blood-red sun shone from above. It was enchanting.

This was the most sacred and most glorious place of the World of Forsaken Saints, the Sacred Spirit Hall.

The Sacred Spirit Hall was supreme within the World of Forsaken Saints because they were the rulers. If the World of Forsaken Saints was an extremely vast empire, the Sacred Spirit Hall would be the imperial palace while the Spiritking would be the current emperor. He possessed supreme authority and controlled the world.

The Spiritking currently sat on a grand throne in simple clothes

with a metal sword on his back within the hall. Below him sat over forty Origin realm experts quietly, and below them were the illusionary souls of several dozen Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

“Spiritking, the other world is pitifully weak. Not even a single Saint Emperor has appeared...”

“Spiritking, the other world does not have origin energy and the energy of the world is thin. The strongest people among them are equivalent to Saint Kings at Great Perfection, and there’s only a few thousand of them.”

“Spiritking, the other world lacks origin energy, but the scenery there is extremely beautiful. It’s like a realm of immortals. I swear that I’ve never seen such a beautiful world before...”

The Saint Kings all reported everything they had learned from the other world to the Spiritking without hiding anything at all.

The Spiritking and the other Origin realm experts all frowned. The strength of the other world was nowhere near what they had imagined.

“Spiritking, there’s an extremely frightening plain of ice in the other world. As soon as I was transported away, I was frozen by extremely heavy frost. I lost consciousness without even being able to exist,” another Saint King at Great Perfection reported courteously.

However, this only raised the slight attention of the Spiritking and the Origin realm experts. There were quite a few danger zones in the World of Forsaken Saints that could kill Saint Kings at Great Perfection instantly, so it did not attract their attention.

“Spiritking, since the other world does not have origin energy, it’s impossible for them to give birth to Origin realm experts. As a result, the Origin realm expert who guards the seal is likely to be a natural spirit, because only natural spirits can continue cultivating in such horrendous conditions,” said an old man at Returnance. He

had lived for several tens of thousand years, so he was knowledgeable. He knew many secrets and rumors, something that the Spiritking could not rival since he was only eight hundred years old.

“Elder Mu Tu has raised a fair point. The Origin realm expert is definitely a natural spirit. There can’t be many of them, so what should we do next, Spiritking?” Another Returnance elder asked.

The Spiritking paused for a while before coldly replying, “The plan will remain the same. Once the spatial tunnel stabilizes enough, send five hundred personal guards through. Since the other world does not welcome us, we can only conquer it by force.”

“But your personal guards are only Saint Emperors. They won’t be able to contend with that Origin realm expert,” a Returnance elder said with some worry.

The Spiritking did not waver at all. The metal sword on his back produced a clear resonance as it flew into his hand as a dark streak. He gently rubbed it and said, “Just let my Cloudstream Sword deal with that Origin realm expert. I’ll leave a portion of my power in the sword. I may not be able to use my full strength, but it’ll be more than enough to keep that expert busy.”

A huge divine hall stood in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall within the sea realm. It was the main base of the Tao family. Many newly-built buildings stood around it, housing a few ordinary clansmen within the alliance.

After experiencing the intense battle with the Turtle clan, the alliance always kept the divine hall outside. All the important members of the alliance, including the several Saint Kings, stayed in the divine hall to prevent a sudden sneak attack from the Turtle clan.

The Tao family had suffered heavy casualties last time and had lost several Saint Kings. The violent ripples of battle had even affected the foundation of the clan, but this failed to weaken them.

They had become even more powerful than before.

This was because Tao Zhengtian used this as an opportunity to gain complete control over the clans in the alliance. He was the only one in possession of a divine hall, so the other Saint Kings could only join the Tao family to protect themselves from the Turtle clan's attempts at revenge.

Tao Zhengtian sat at the center of the divine hall in the back while the Saint Kings from the other clans sat beneath him in an orderly fashion. They were very reluctant to have their relationship with the Tao family devolve from allies to subsidiaries, but they were helpless to stop the transformation.

“The strength of the Turtle clan has surpassed all of our imaginations. We may have a divine hall that the Turtle clan can do nothing to, but they also have one as well, so we can't do anything to them either. Our enmity has already reached a point of no return, where only one of us, the alliance or the Turtle clan, can remain in the end. With my understanding, the ruler of the Turtle clan is an unprecedented genius. His strength has rapidly increased, and in just a few short years, he's grown from the 15th Star expert to the 16th Star, and he's a rather powerful 16th Star expert. If this continues, he'll become an emperor without long,” Tao Zhengtian said heavily. He was extremely stern.

The Saint Kings below felt shocked. One of them immediately asked in doubt, “Patriarch Tao, becoming an emperor is not that easy. Aren't you overestimating the ruler of the Turtle clan by saying he will become an emperor?”

“Yeah, patriarch Tao. The ruler of the Turtle clan really does have some skill. I do believe that he will reach the level of hall elders, but I cannot believe that he will become an emperor.” The Saint Kings in the hall revealed their doubts.

Tao Zhengtian slowly answered, “Who knows about the future? I've conducted special investigations of the ruler from the Turtle

clan, and according to what I can recall, he was not even a 14th Star expert a few years ago. The grand elder of the Turtle clan had been slain by one of the five great magical beasts and two of the great human experts. It's only been so long since then, yet he's already become one of the stronger 16th Star experts. His rate of improvement really is unbelievable. If you're saying it's due to some heavenly resource, I really cannot think of any one that can increase his growth at such a rate. As a result, I've concluded that he possesses shocking talent, and his potential is tremendous. If he successfully matures, he will definitely become an emperor in the future. At that time, there will only be death for us even if we have the divine hall."

The Saint Kings all revealed ugly expressions. They all felt extremely heavy inside.

Tao Zhengtian continued, "As a result, we need to kill him before he fully matures."

"Patriarch Tao, the experts of the Turtle clan outnumber us, and they also possess a divine hall. We cannot kill their ruler," a Saint King bitterly replied.

Tao Zhengtian sinisterly smiled, "I have my plans for this. If it succeeds, the ruler of the Turtle clan will be dead for sure, even if he has a divine hall."

Tao Zhengtian immediately concluded the meeting before silently leaving the divine hall without alerting anyone. He made his way to the territory of the Serpent God Hall as quickly as he could.

At the same time, it had already reached the final few days before the three month deadline in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. Jian Chen and Tie Ta had embarked on their journey back with bountiful harvests. They followed the marks they had left behind, heading to the exit of the world as quickly as they could.

The Xuanhuang Microcosm was extremely large. They had not

even covered a tenth of the entire space in the time they had spent there, but they still found many heavenly resources and gathered many energy crystals of Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts.

However, what Jian Chen was most joyous about from this trip was not the large amount of high quality heavenly resources, but that he had found all the materials for the Azulet swords. His dream of many years would finally come true.

A day later, a Saint King elder walked courteously into a vast but extremely quiet hall within the central divine hall of the Serpent God Hall's territory. He said to the empty hall, "Hall master, the ancestor of the Tao family, a peak-level clan in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, wishes to see you. He stated that he has some important matters to report."

Chapter 1314: Hall Master of the Serpent God Hall

“The Tao family of the Sea Goddess Hall?” A heavy voice suddenly rang out from the empty hall. It seemed to come from everywhere, making it impossible to determine its origins.

“Esteemed hall master, it is the Tao family of the Sea Goddess Hall. Tao Zhengtian is currently waiting outside the divine hall. He wants to see you,” the elder said courteously.

The hall master thought a little in silence and said, “Recently, an intense battle erupted between the Turtle clan and the Tao family. The Tao family suffered heavy casualties. I already know why Tao Zhengtian has come. Let him in.”

“Yes, sir!” The elder bowed before leaving.

Soon, Tao Zhengtian was brought to this majestic hall under the lead of the elder. Tao Zhengtian immediately erased all presence of arrogance when he arrived there. He lowered his head slightly and behaved politely. He refrained from breathing heavily and dared not to look around.

“Esteemed hall master, Tao Zhengtian is here,” said the elder politely.

“You may go.”

“Yes, hall master.”

Only Tao Zhengtian stood in the extremely grand hall after the elder was dismissed. He immediately bowed at the empty throne there and politely said, “Tao Zhengtian greets the esteemed hall master.”

The hall master did not appear, but his heavy voice rang through the hall, “Tao Zhengtian, I know why you’ve come. You want me to help you deal with Jian Chen.”

The voice seemed to possess a certain amount of pressure. Tao Zhengtian immediately felt like his soul was about to shatter from the voice, which terrified him. Afterward, he became even more courteous toward the hall master.

“The esteemed hall master is too smart for me, to have actually read my intentions. You are correct. I have come this time hoping that the hall master can step in and remove the threat of the Turtle clan, so my Tao family can be saved,” Tao Zhengtian said in a deep voice, without the dignity of the patriarch of the Tao family at all.

“Your Tao family belongs to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. It has nothing to do with my Serpent God Hall, so why should I save you?” The hall master queried.

Tao Zhengtian immediately dropped to one knee and politely said, “Esteemed hall master, the enmity between my clan and the Turtle clan has reached the point of no return. Only one of us can remain standing in the end. Meanwhile, the ruler of the Turtle clan has an unknown friendship with the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, so it’s impossible for her to protect us. With the entire sea realm in perspective, only you can save my clan. Please protect us.”

Tao Zhengtian paused before continuing, “Not only does the ruler of the Turtle clan, Jian Chen, possess an extremely deep enmity with my clan, he’s never viewed the sacred Serpent God Hall with any importance at all. Back then, he came to challenge the dignity of the Serpent God Hall with just his Octoterra Divine Hall, so he cannot be forgiven. Even cutting him to pieces would not be enough to make up for his crimes.

“Unfortunately, the ruler of the Turtle clan possesses unprecedented talent. He’s growing just far too quickly. He’s reached the 16th Star from the 14th Star in just a few short years, and he’s reached the higher levels of the 16th Star. If he is given some more time, he’ll definitely reach the level of emperors. At that time, not only will he devastate my Tao family, he’ll become

even more fearless. He will cause trouble for the Serpent God Hall and cause endless problems for the esteemed hall master.”

The hall master fell silent after listening to Tao Zhengtian’s analysis. Only after a long while did he say, “What you said is rather reasonable. Jian Chen’s talent is very great and his speed of growth has even taken me aback. He really might become an emperor once he is given enough time.”

Tao Zhengtian cheered inside. He knew that the hall master had been tempted, so he took the opportunity to add, “Esteemed hall master, we cannot let the ruler of the Turtle clan to become an emperor, because he belongs to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall and has an extraordinary relationship with the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall. If he becomes an emperor, the strength of the Sea Goddess Hall will skyrocket. At that time, probably the balance of the entire sea realm will shift. This is extremely detrimental to you, esteemed hall master, so we need to eliminate the ruler of the Turtle clan as soon as possible.

This time, the hall master fell silent for quite a long time. He also seemed to be able to sense the danger that Jian Chen would bring. The forces of the sea realm were locked in a three way stalemate right now, where each territory possessed an emperor. They were in a balance with one another, but if the Sea Goddess Hall gained another Saint Emperor, then the balance would definitely be broken.

The hall master finally said after a very long time, “Tao Zhengtian, there are restrictions between we three emperors. We cannot trespass each other’s territory so easily. At the same time, that little girl, Yadriam, has become a Saint Emperor slightly later than me, but her strength is unfathomable. She is not easy to deal with, so I cannot cross the boundary to slay the ruler of the Turtle clan. You are responsible for baiting him into my territory. As soon as he sets foot here, I can kill him without any fear. At that time, even that little girl Yadriam won’t be able to say anything.

“Yes. Do not worry, hall master. I will definitely draw the ruler of the Turtle clan here,” Tao Zhengtian was overjoyed. He appeared excited but mumbled inside, “I never thought that the hall master of the Serpent God Hall would fear the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall so much. Looks like she’s stronger than him.”

Chapter 1315: Family Conflict (One)

Virtually all the Saint Kings of the Tian Yuan Continent had gathered in Mercenary City. Only a few Saint Rulers were temporarily able to avoid the affair, people needed to be at least Saint Kings to deal with the threat of the foreign world. The Saint Rulers were no different from cannon fodder before Saint Kings and Saint Emperors.

Although there were far more Saint Rulers than Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent, their numbers were limited. Unless they ran out of options, they would never let Saint Rulers die for nothing because they were the future of the continent.

Over thirty people of different ages had gathered in the ancestral hall of the protector Changyang clan.

They were all Saint Rulers, and a few of them had reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer. They were only an inch away from becoming Saint Kings.

An old, dignified, Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler said to the group, “Everyone, I’ve summoned you here today to discuss an important matter. Not only does this relate to our dignity, it also connects to the prestige and status we should have as a protector clan.”

The old man was Changyang Qing Yu, the most prestigious person among the Qing branch aside from the esteemed great elders. Not only was this because of his level of cultivation, it was also because of his talent. He was one of the few Saint Rulers who had managed to grasp a Saint Tier Battle Skill. At the same time, he already had a foot planted in the realm of Saint Kings and would become the fourth great elder of the Qing branch soon.

None of the Saint Rulers from the Qing and Yuan branch said anything. They all looked at Changyang Qing Yi. He had become the backbone of the clan in some vague sense now that the great

elders were not present.

Changyang Qing Yi paused and looked around. He became extremely stern and then said, “I think some of you already know what I am going to say next. Correct, it’ll be related to the Zu branch breaking away from the protector clan. Since ancient times, the three branches have all been one family, yet the people of the Zu branch have actually broken away over a single Saints’ Fruit and have even worked with magical beasts to seal our miniature world. We’re one of the ten protector clans after all, so when have we ever experienced such humiliation without doing anything? As a result, we cannot let this matter slide. The esteemed great elders have gone to Mercenary City for some important matters, so they are busy for now. This is why we need to act personally to regain the dignity of the clan.”

“Changyang Qing Yi, do you plan on making trouble for the Changyang clan in Lore City? What do we do if we come across the three magical beasts? We can’t deal with them,” another old man, also a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, asked.

Changyang Qing Yi smiled mysteriously and said, “That’s not necessarily true. We’re not looking for trouble, but resolving matters within our clan, getting the people of the Zu branch to return to our protector clan. The Zu branch won’t be able to leave so easily just because they want to. You don’t need to worry about the three magical beasts. According to what I know, virtually all the Saint Kings have gathered in Mercenary City, so the three magical beasts are no exceptions either. The Changyang clan in Lore City no longer possesses a Saint King watching over them. They just have a few old friends that we know.”

“Changyang Qing Yi is correct. We’ve been sealed up in the miniature world for such a long time, so how can we let the matter slide without saying or doing anything? Otherwise, people will just look down on us.” A middle-aged man in red robes nonchalantly added. He was a Saint Ruler from the Yuan branch, currently at the

peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer.

The other Saint Rulers obviously had nothing else to say now that the representatives of the two branches had agreed, so the rest of them agreed with Changyang Qing Yi's suggestion. They had been locked up in the miniature world like prisoners since a few days ago, so they were utterly furious. All they lacked was someone to initiate everything.

The Changyang clan remained as peaceful as before in Lore City. Only the people from a few nearby hermit or ancient clans had come to visit them. Because of the Changyang clan, even the status of the Gesun Kingdom had risen. They had become a kingdom even more well-renowned than the eight great kingdoms.

Although the overall power of the kingdom did not rise quickly, its status was different than before.

Suddenly, the sky above the peaceful clan began to violently twist. A Space Gate quickly formed. Before the people had even emerged, a vast presence surged out like a tidal wave, permeating the entire region and engulfing the entirety of Lore City.

Saint Rulers poured out of the Space Gate one after another soon after. There were over thirty of them in total. They all floated high up in the air with the Changyang clan beneath them.

They were the Saint Rulers from the Yuan and Qing branches. They had come through the Space Gate in the clan without the need of a Saint King.

All the people in the city sensed their arrival, because the presence from over thirty Saint Rulers was far too powerful, having even surpassed the presence of a single Saint King. It caused the surrounding air and clouds to churn as the energy of the world was sent into a rampage. It alerted all the people within the city.

The Saint Rulers in the forbidden grounds of the Changyang clan

sensed that the people had come with hostile intent. They took to the sky as quickly as possible. All the Saint Rulers from the Zu branch moved together, meeting the Yuan and Qing branches in the air. They looked at them in anger.

“So it’s you! Why have you come?” A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler old man from the Zu branch heavily questioned. They had severed their connection with the two branches long ago, so they were no longer related to one another.

Changyang Qing Yi coldly smiled, “The Changyang clan in Lore City was originally a branch family of our protector clan, so we obviously can come and go as we please. Do we need a reason?”

“What a bunch of lies! The Changyang clan of Lore City was founded by my master, Changyang Zu Yunkong, single-handedly. Now that master is no longer a member of the protector clan, the Changyang clan of Lore City is obviously not connected to the protector clan in any way or fashion,” uncle Chang flew up from below in the attire of a caretaker. He spoke forcefully.

He had already learned that Changyang Qing Yun wanted to take the Saints’ Fruit from the fourth young master, so he had caused the two other branches to battle the Zu branch. As a result, he did not have a good opinion of the Changyang protector clan. Coupled with the fact that he was a Saint Ruler now, he stood on equal level with the people there. It was obvious that he possessrd the confidence to speak.

Chapter 1316: Family Conflict (Two)

“Hmph, since when did you have the right to meddle in the affairs of your masters? Chang Wuji, do you really think that you stand on the same level as us just because you’re a Saint Ruler now?” A Saint Ruler from the Yuan branch coldly said to Chang Wuji.

“Chang Wuji, don’t forget your status. You were only a dog that was adopted by the protector clan. If the dog bites his master, the master can kill it at any time,” another Saint Ruler from the Qing branch called out. He spoke with a cold voice, looking at Chang Wuji like he was looking at a servant. They were descendents of the protector clan, so they possessed a natural sense of supremacy and arrogance. Meanwhile, Chang Wuji was of low birth, so even after becoming a Saint Ruler, he still did not catch the eyes of the Saint Rulers from the protector clan.

The dozen or so Saint Rulers from the Zu branch remained with neutral expressions. None of them said anything. They were not close with Chang Wuji, so they did not speak for him.

Below, Changyang Ba and the elderly members of the clan all became extremely furious when they saw uncle Chang being abused. If they possessed the strength, they would definitely charge up and cut the people cursing at uncle Chang into pieces.

Although uncle Chang was only the caretaker of the Changyang clan, his status in the clan was extremely great, not to mention the fact that he was now a Saint Ruler and no longer a Heaven Saint Master. His status had risen yet again because of that.

“These people have gone too far by abusing uncle Chang like this. It’s a pity that Xiang’er’s not present, or these people would have gotten more than they bargained for today,” Changyang Ba said through gritted teeth. He had paled from his anger.

Beside him, Bi Yuntian, Yu Fengyan, Ling Long and Bai Yushuang

were the same as him. Uncle Chang had been the caretaker of the clan for several centuries now. He cared for every single member of the clan very much. He diligently dealt with all the miscellaneous matters of the clan as the caretaker and never complained, which was why no one could rival his prestige within the clan. Everyone loved him.

And after becoming a Saint Ruler, he maintained his position as caretaker, basically becoming the first Saint Ruler caretaker on the entire continent. He did not change at all with his increase in strength. Thus, the people from the clan held even more respect and loved him even more.

As a result, virtually everyone in the clan had become angered by the Yuan and Qing branches' words. Only the people of the Zu branch remained the same since they did not have close ties with uncle Chang.

"The Saint Ruler ancestors of the Zu branch don't seem to be willing to speak for uncle Chang. We're outnumbered, so I hope nothing happens to uncle Chang," Bi Yuntian said with some worry. She was very worried about uncle Chang's safety. Although he was a Saint Ruler now, he was only at the First Heavenly Layer.

A sliver of determination immediately appeared in Changyang Ba's eyes with that. With a flip of his hand, he pulled out two fist-sized rocks from his Space Ring and said through gritted teeth, "I have the quaking thunders that Xiang'er left behind. Xiang'er said that these quaking thunders have been charged by Saint Kings. Although they might not harm Saint Kings, they are more than enough to deal with Saint Rulers. If they dare to touch uncle Chang, then I'll do it."

In the sky, Chang Wuji kept his cool as if he did not hear the insults at all. He said, "Correct, I was indeed picked off the streets by master, and I was taken to the protector clan. If you want to call me a dog, then I only have one master and that is Changyang Zu

Yunkong. This has nothing to do with you people of the Yuan and Qing branches.”

The Saint Ruler from the Qing branch became utterly furious with that. He yelled out, “How dare you speak like that to us as a mere dog? I, Changyang Qing Shan, said that if a dog dares to bite his master, the master can make the dog disappear forever.” Changyang Qing Shan immediately attacked Chang Wuji. He used his abilities as a Saint Ruler and fused with the surrounding space, appearing before Chang Wuji in a single moment through the use of Spatial Force. Energy surged in his hand as he used a secret technique to condense a small, green mountain, sending it toward Chang Wuji.

The faces of the Saint Rulers from the Zu branch hardened when they saw this green mountain. They recognised that this was Changyang Qing Shan’s famed technique, the Seal of the Green Mountain.

The Seal of the Green Mountain was an adaption of an ancient secret technique by Changyang Qing Shan. It was not a Saint Tier Battle Skill, but it was not weaker than one.

TL note: Qing Shan (青山) can mean a lush, green mountain, so the secret technique is named after Changyang Qing Shan.

Changyang Qing Shan used his power as a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler to cast the Seal of the Green Mountain. Chang Wuji would end up extremely injured, if not dead, if he was struck by it with his strength at the First Heavenly Layer.

A Saint Ruler from the Zu branch immediately wanted to stop Changyang Qing Shan. Although he was not close to Chang Wuji at all, he could not just watch him lose his life. However, the people from the Qing and Yuan branches seemed to have been prepared. They all moved and stopped the Saint Rulers from the Zu branch, preventing them from interfering.

Chang Wuji’s face changed. He had never expected Changyang

Qing Shan to attack him in such a brazen fashion. He was also a Saint Ruler now, but he understood just how much weaker he was. He dared not to accept the attack head-on and dodged as fast as he could.

However, the space around him suddenly froze, immobilizing him and causing him to pause.

Chang Wuji sank inside. He immediately bellowed out as powerful energy surged out of him, shattering the frozen space. However, he lost the perfect opportunity to dodge with the delay. All he could do was cast a barrier of energy around him and allow the attack to hit that.

Bang! The seal viciously struck his chest, and with a heavy sound, blood spurted into the air from Chang Wuji's mouth. He was thrown far away.

“Uncle Chang!

The people in the Changyang clan all cried out. Changyang Ba was absolutely furious. At that moment, an extremely powerful killing intent rapidly rose up in Changyang Ba, filling his entire chest. Without any hesitation, he threw his two 15th Star quaking thunders at Changyang Qing Shan.

Changyang Ba dismissed all his thoughts. He did not think about the consequences that the two quaking thunders could cause at all. He only had one thought in mind and that was to avenge uncle Chang.

Quaking thunders originated from the sea realm, but a few of them would make their way to the Tian Yuan Continent, so all the Saint Rulers recognized what they were. They immediately revealed different expressions and dodged in all directions, moving away from the quaking thunders as quickly as possible.

The Saint Rulers from the Zu branch all landed in the clan, and one of them charged into the back courtyard as quickly as possible.

Shortly afterward, a transparent barrier silently appeared, engulfing the entire clan.

This was a barrier that Changyang Zu Xiao had secretly cast down. Only the Saint Rulers of the Zu branch knew of its existence. Even Changyang Ba hadn't been told about it.

Chapter 1317: Family Conflict (Three)

Changyang Ba returned to his senses after throwing the quaking thunders. His face immediately changed as he muttered inside, "Oh no." This was because the two quaking thunders he had thrown were of the 15th Star, equivalent to strikes from Fourth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. Attacks from Saint Kings were terrifying. Even if they exploded several hundred meters in the sky, the ripples could still flatten the entire Changyang clan.

After all, the Changyang clan was not a capital city of the continent, let alone Flame City. It was an extremely ordinary clan, so it was unable to defend itself at all.

However, Changyang Ba finally calmed down a little when he saw the transparent barrier being erected in the air. There were around a dozen Saint Rulers from the Zu branch around as well. If they cast down a barrier together, it might not have been able to stop the ripples of the quaking thunders entirely, but it could minimize the damage.

The extremely powerful ripples of energy from the two quaking thunders followed after Changyang Qing Yun while all the Saint Rulers of the two branches fled frantically. All of them had become ghastly pale from fright, because they could tell that these two quaking thunders were of the 15th Star from the energy inside. Once they erupted, they would be equivalent to an attack from a First Heavenly Layer Saint King at the very least. They could even be more powerful.

The Saint Rulers of the two branches fled from the quaking thunders as quickly as possible. None of them wanted to come into contact with them, and Changyang Qing Shan was no exception either. He quickly shot back with a pale face. He was both surprised and angered. He was surprised over how such a weak person in the Changyang clan possessed a high quality quaking thunder, and he was angered over the fact that a mere branch clan

member dared to throw a quaking thunder at him, an elder of the protector clan. That was an unforgivable offence.

However, Changyang Qing Yun dismissed all his thoughts very quickly. His gaze became horrified and filled with fear. He had discovered that the two quaking thunders had locked onto his presence. They had been tailing behind him the entire time. No matter how he fled, it was useless, and the energy within the quaking thunders was rapidly beginning to activate, so they moved faster and faster.

“No!” Changyang Qing Shan yelled in fright as he became horrendously pale. He could at least survive, albeit half alive, against just a single 15th Star quaking thunder, but it was extremely likely that he would die if he had to take on two quaking thunders at the same time.

Suddenly, Changyang Qing Yun changed directions and flew in the direction with the most people. The two quaking thunders began to shine with bright, white lights as they tailed behind him with terrifying pulses of energy. They moved faster and faster.

“Changyang Qing Yun you bastard! Don’t follow us! Go somewhere else!”

“F*ck! Changyang Qing Yun, we’ve never offended you, so don’t draw them over here!”

The Saint Rulers from the two branches were exasperated. They all cursed his ancestors as they desperately scattered.

Changyang Qing Yun was bitter. He had only punished a rude person. He had never thought that that punishment would end with him being pursued by two 15th Star quaking thunders. If he had known this earlier, he would have never laid his hands on Chang Wuji even if he was a much bolder person.

“The quaking thunders have locked onto my presence, so I can’t shake them off. If you don’t help me block them, I’ll probably die

here today,” Changyang Qing Yun explained as he secretly rejoiced inside. It was fortunate that the person who had thrown the quaking thunders was not strong, so their initial velocity was slow, which was why he was able to flee for so long despite being pursued by these quaking thunders. However, as the energy within them was activated, their speed would increase as well. At that time, even Saint Kings would not be able to avoid even one of them, let alone him, a mere Saint Ruler.

Changyang Qing Yi halted and cried out, “Don’t panic, everyone. We have over thirty Saint Rulers with us. Let’s work together to stop the two quaking thunders. Everyone gather near me immediately.”

Everyone’s eyes immediately lit up. If a single person were to attempt to stop the quaking thunders, it would indeed be extremely dangerous, but if they all worked together, these two 15th Star quaking thunders were not so terrifying anymore.

All the Saint Rulers began to gather near Changyang Qing Yu at almost the same time. They all created a powerful barrier of energy as Changyang Qing Shan charged over with the two quaking thunders.

The quaking thunders collided with the barrier, and they exploded simultaneously. The explosion produced a deafening boom as violent streams of energy wreaked havoc in the surroundings, causing space to twist and crack. A powerful ripple of energy shot down, but it was stopped by the barrier Changyang Zu Xiao had cast down, allowing the Changyang clan to safely endure.

All the Saint Rulers from the two branches displayed various complexions and became rather pale. The barrier they had created together had collapsed. They had all cast down another barrier around themselves as quickly as possible, before retreating from the surge of energy that the quaking thunders had released.

Changyang Qing Shan was the most miserable. The quaking thunders had locked onto his presence, so he suffered the heaviest attack. Blood sprayed from his mouth as he shot off like a broken kite. He constantly spat out blood. He managed to stay alive, but he was very severely injured.

The two quaking thunder expanded across a very large area, so most of Lore City was affected. Countless structures collapsed, reducing the entire city to a mess. There were a lot of people who became injured, but fortunately, many people in the city knew that things were going to happen in the Changyang clan, so they had all made preparations, and thus, no one died.

A while later, the ripples of energy from the quaking thunders finally settled. The Changyang clan below emerged undamaged while the Saint Rulers from the Qing and Yuan branches gathered together in the air. They were dirty and in horrible conditions. Changyang Qing Shan had lost his ability to levitate due to his injuries, so he was carried by two other Saint Rulers from the Qing branch.

They were all sheet-white. They had set out with such a large party to regain their lost dignity, to vent their unhappiness from being trapped for so long, and to get the people from the Zu branch to return to the clan. They had never thought that they would get more than they bargained for.

Changyang Ba finally let out a breath of relief after seeing that the Changyang clan was fine. He pulled out another two quaking thunders from his Space Ring and furiously roared at the group of people in the sky, "I have quite a few quaking thunders here! Those two before were 15th Star ones. I'm holding 16th Star quaking thunders in my hands right now. If you want to act so brazenly, I won't be holding back."

"Not only did they insult uncle Chang, they've injured him as well. We cannot spare them today," Bi Yuntian furiously added and also pulled out two 16th Star quaking thunders from her Space

Ring. They were also of the 16th Star.

Jian Chen had obtained quite a few 15th and 16th Star quaking thunders from the sea realm, several at the peak of the 16th Star. He had basically left all of them with his family.

The people from the Qing and Yuan branches revealed extremely ugly expressions when they saw Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian pull out four 16th Star quaking thunders. Even the Saint Rulers from the Zu branch leaped in fright with a shiver. Even in the sea realm, 16th Star quaking thunders were extremely rare, so why were there so many here?

The Saint Rulers from the two branches became rather offended and embarrassed. This was definitely an unprecedented matter. A mighty protector clan was being threatened by a mere branch clan. If this was broadcasted, they would no longer possess the dignity to see anyone in the future.

Changyang Qing Yi's complexion became terrifyingly pale. He stared coldly at the group of people below and icily said, "This matter will never end after injuring an elder of our Qing branch. We can't do anything to you, but there will obviously be someone who can." With that, Changyang Qing Yi formed a seal with his two hands. He used a secret message to communicate what had happened here to Changyang Qing Yun.

The protector clans possessed many secret techniques, and there were plenty that had been made for communication. What Changyang Qing Yi used was Soul Communication. The technique allowed someone to send a message to the soul of another person. The only flaw was that the process was rather complicated.

Chapter 1318: Family Conflict (Four)

Many Saint Kings and a few Saint Emperors hovered above the ruins of Mercenary City. They paid close attention to the underground tunnel, waiting for any changes to occur.

Several dozen divine halls hovered nearby and radiated with vast presences. Above Mercenary City, the ten protector clans and a few powerful ancient clans had all mobilized their divine halls. They rested inside to gather strength so that they be in peak condition.

None of them knew when the next attack from the World of Forsaken Saints would come, but all of them believed that the attack would definitely be even more terrifying than before, where even Saint Emperors might appear. They all became extremely heavy-hearted because of this, and they were not in the mood to enter the miniature world of Mercenary City either since they just worried far too much.

Not every Saint King there was selfless, but they all understood one thing, which was that the World of Forsaken Saints was just far too powerful. If they could not stop them from entering this world, the four races would all suffer the threat of completely dying off. At that time, they would not be able to avoid death themselves either.

As a result, many of the Saint Kings from the four races had gathered to guard the tunnel, not for their own race or for their descendents, but for themselves.

In one of the divine halls floating in the sky, Changyang Qing Yun, Changyang Qing Jueri, Changyang Qing Yunfeng, Changyang Yuan Zhenghua, and Changyang Yuan Wuji sat together like statues.

Suddenly, Changyang Qing Yun's face twitched as his eyes snapped open. Immediately, his eyes shone with an almost-visible light, disturbing the space in front of him and causing it to twist

slightly.

The four other great elders simultaneously opened their eyes. They had been cultivating, but they paid attention to the outside world at all times. They obviously sensed the change that occurred within Changyang Qing Yun.

Changyang Qing Yun stood up as his face darkened in a terrifying manner. He said, “Changyang Qing Shan has been injured. The Saint Rulers from our Qing and Yuan branches have been humiliated by the branch clan in Lore City. Hmph, they’ve gone too far. Do they really think they can abuse our protector clan in such a fearless manner just because they have the protection of the three magical beasts?” Changyang Qing Yun looked around at the four other great elders and growled, “Let’s go to Lore City of the Gesun Kingdom immediately.”

Changyang Qing put the divine hall away before leaving with the four other Saint Kings. Although their departure had alerted everyone present, no one stepped forward to stop them, because none of the Saint Kings present had the right to meddle with other people’s business.

At the same time, Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun sat together in another divine hall in the same manner. Suddenly, Changyang Zu Xiao slowly opened his eyes. His gaze was deep as he looked in the direction that Changyang Qing Yun and the others had set off in. He slowly said, “The people of the clan have sent me a message. The people of the Qing and Yuan branches have created quite a mess in Lore City. Changyang Qing Yun and the others have just departed as well, so they’re probably going to Lore City. Let’s go back and have a look as well. I’ve cast a barrier to protect the clan, but it won’t be enough to stop Changyang Qing Yun.”

Lore City was over a million kilometers away from Mercenary City, but Saint Kings only needed a single instant to traverse this distance. A Space Gate ripped open near the city soon after

Changyang Qing Yi had sent the message. A tremendous presence wildly surged out before anyone could emerge from it, causing the space there to freeze. Even the surrounding energy of the world fell silent.

Afterward, the five great elders emerged from the Space Gate with Changyang Qing Yun at the lead. When they saw the Saint Rulers from the two branches in horrible conditions, their faces immediately sank. Sharp killing intent filled their eyes.

They then saw the bloodied Changyang Qing Yun, who was basically hanging off two other Saint Ruler, and they became even more enraged.

“How dare they! They’re just a mere branch clan, yet they dared to injure an elder of my Qing branch,” Changyang Qing Yun immediately fell into an utter rage as he roared out, causing the energy around him to churn. He had almost snapped.

Changyang Qing Yun arrived before Changyang Qing Shan with a single flash and carefully examined his wounds. His complexion became even more ugly, and he growled, “Qing Shan’s extremely heavily injured. He’s basically clinging onto half of his life. He’ll need several years to achieve a full recovery even with the wondrous medicines in the clan.”

“This branch clan is getting bolder and bolder. Before, that mongrel, Jian Chen, worked with foreigners to seal up the Changyang clan, and we only broke out in the end because the grand elder of Mercenary City stepped in. Now, the people of this branch clan dare to beat Qing Shan into such a shape. They cannot be forgiven. I will be flattening this place today.” Changyang Qing Jueri coldly decided. His gaze toward the clan was filled with heavy killing intent. He then pushed his hand toward the structures below.

Changyang Qing Jueri’s attack drew in vast amounts of energy from the surroundings. The invisible energy gathered in his hand

before forming a palm several hundred meters in length. It fell toward the ground at an extremely fast rate.

The people from the Changyang clan became rather pale. As the palm fell, they all felt an extremely great pressure descend from above, limiting their breathing and causing their chests to feel abnormally tight.

A Saint Ruler from the Zu branch immediately activated the barrier in the forbidden grounds of the clan. A transparent barrier silently appeared, blocking Changyang Qing Jueri's attack. It did not waver at all as it shone with hazy light. Changyang Qing Jueri's attack actually failed to shake it at all.

Changyang Qing Yun coldly sneered and took a step forward. He appeared before the barrier as if he had teleported and coldly said, "I never thought that Changyang Zu Xiao would treat this clan with some importance, seeing how he cast down such a powerful barrier to protect this place. Looks like he's truly reached Great Perfection now, but a mere barrier is not enough to stop me. Let me smash through this barrier."

Changyang Qing Yun's face became filled with heavy killing intent. He hated Changyang Zu Xiao very much. If Changyang Zu Xiao had not stopped him back in the miniature world of the Changyang clan, he would have obtained the Saints' Fruit long ago and would probably have become a Saint Emperor right now. Jian Chen would not have been able to escape either, let alone returning with the magical beasts to seal up the clan.

Right now, Changyang Qing Yun had completely made up his mind to destroy this place, so he could vent his anger. It was a sensitive period of time with the invasion of the other world, so he did not fear the three magical beasts if they personally came since there would be other people who would appear to stop them.

Just when Changyang Qing Yun wanted to start his attack, another Space Gate ripped open nearby. Changyang Zu Xiao,

Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun had all hurried back from Mercenary City.

“Changyang Qing Yun, do you still plan to be obstinate and make another foolish mistake?” Changyang Zu Xiao immediately bellowed out when he realized Changyang Qing Yun’s intentions. He arrived in front of Changyang Qing Yun with a flash to stop him from destroying the barrier.

Chapter 1319: Family Conflict (Five)

Changyang Zu Xiao blocked Changyang Qing Yun, and as a result, Changyang Qing Yun's face immediately darkened. His expression sank as he glared at Changyang Zu Xiao. He had never expected him to arrive so quickly, and now that Changyang Zu Xiao was present to stop him, it would not longer be as easy for him to viciously punish the members of the branch clan.

“Okay! Good! Very well! Changyang Zu Xiao, your clansmen of the Zu branch are getting bolder and bolder and more and more fearless. First you declared you would depart from the protector clan, then you work with foreigners to seal up the clan, and now you've allowed a member of the Zu branch to injure an elder of the Qing branch, heavily wounding Changyang Qing Shan. Do you really think that you can now look down on everyone else just because you have the magical beasts on your side and that you can provoke the dignity of our protector clan time and time again?” Changyang Qing Yun coldly questioned. A tremendous presence began to radiate from him as he spoke, forming an invisible mountain that crashed down on Changyang Zu Xiao. He showed signs that he was about to engage in a great battle with Changyang Zu Xiao.

Changyang Zu Xiao's face remained the same. He stood there unmoving, like an ancient tree rooted firmly to the ground. He had truly reached Great Perfection now, having reached the apex of Saint King. He was at the same level as Changyang Qing Yun now.

“Qing Yun, we all know exactly what happened, so quit spouting lies. You asked for everything that happened before. If you didn't lust over the Saints' Fruit and attempt something so condemning, would any of those things have happened later on? I'd like to ask you instead why has Changyang Qing Yun become injured. Why have your people of the Qing and Yuan branches appeared here?” Changyang Zu Xiao emotionlessly replied. He was very

disappointed by the actions of the two branches.

“Great elders, we have appeared here because we wanted the people of the Zu branch to return to our protector clan. Although our clan is divided into three branches, we were all connected with one another. We were one big family, so if we split just like this, it will enact a heavy loss on the clan. Our generation would become eternally condemned. How would we be able to face our ancestors after we pass away? We never thought that we would be provoked by a mere servant right when we arrived here, which Qing Shan was then heavily injured by a quaking thunder from a member of the branch clan. If we hadn’t interfered, we would have never been able to see Qing Shan again,” Changyang Qing Yi said. He spoke in a righteous manner in the beginning, before immediately becoming sorrowful when he mentioned Changyang Qing Shan. He blamed the people from the branch clan.

“Cut the bullsh*t, it was you who injured uncle Chang first...” Changyang Ba loudly retorted. He was extremely confident. Although the great elders of the two other factions were present, he felt no fear at all.

At this moment, Chang Wuji flew over from afar in a tottering manner. He was covered with blood and his face was pale. His injuries were just as heavy, almost falling mid-flight several times.

“Uncle Chang!”

The group of people in the clan cried out in both sorrow and joy. They felt sorrow for uncle Chang’s injuries, but they were joyful over the fact that he was still alive.

Changyang Zu Xiao waved his hand and a vast amount of energy in the surroundings immediately gathered, gently wrapping around Chang Wuji and delivering him into the clan. He gently said, “Heal first. With me here, no one will be able to harm a single one of you.” Although Changyang Zu Xiao spoke very softly, his voice was filled with dominance, causing Changyang Qing Yun’s

complexion to become extremely horrible.

Chang Wuji politely bowed to Changyang Zu Xiao before immediately sitting down to heal. Bi Yuntian began to use her abilities as a Radiant Saint Master beside him, but since her class was not high, the effects were not as obvious on a Saint Ruler like Chang Wuji. Changyang Ba also shoveled large amounts of Radiant Spirit Pills into his mouth from his Space Ring, immediately causing him to be enveloped by a thick layer of Radiant Saint Force.

They were Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills. Jian Chen had made a large box of them before and had given them all to his family.

“You’ve already injured Changyang Qing Shan regardless of everything. Changyang Zu Xiao, you have to give me an explanation today, or I swear that I will not step down over this matter,” Changyang Qing Yun coldly responded. He did not give in at all. The protector clan had been humiliated and this could not continue. Otherwise, they would not even be able to show themselves before the other organizations of the continent.

“Changyang Qing Yun, I don’t fear you. You may have more Saint Kings than us, but if we do end up fighting, we’ll both suffer heavy casualties. Leave and never come back,” said Changyang Zu Xiao nonchalantly, but his words became exceptionally unpleasant when Changyang Qing Yun heard them. Not only was it a threat, he was looking down on them.

Changyang Qing Yun became utterly furious and his hair began to wildly dance about, like an angered lion. He laughed aloud, “Heavy casualties? Changyang Zu Xiao, aren’t you overestimating us a little too much? I’ll show you exactly how I will defeat your clansmen of the Zu branch today.” Changyang Qing Yun immediately departed through a space gate after his sarcastic remarks.

Several Emperor Armaments were stabbed into the ground in

Mercenary City. They were of all different shapes and sizes, but all of them radiated with a pressing presence without any exceptions, enough to cause Saint Kings to shiver inside.

The Emperor Armaments were all clan treasures of the protector clans. They had placed them there without any fear of them being stolen since the weapons could only be controlled by a member of the clan.

Changyang Qing Yun returned to Mercenary City in a mighty manner and used a secret technique to draw the Emperor Armament of the Changyang clan. Afterward, he departed through another Space Gate, alerting all the Saint Kings and causing them to glance over.

“What is Changyang Qing Yun doing? Has something happened with how furious he seems?” The grand elder of Mercenary City muttered in doubt. Many people had similar thoughts.

As that all happened, Changyang Zu Yunkong sat within a mountain in a vast mountain range far away. The powerful and pure energy around him pulsed, causing the surrounding space to gently tremble.

Changyang Zu Yunkong’s figure distorted in and out of obscurity within the cave. This was not only because of the distortions in the surroundings space, but he had also truly fused with the space there, becoming one with it. His comprehension over the mysterious of the world and his grasp over Spatial Force had reached a completely new level. It was undergoing a qualitative metamorphosis.

Chapter 1320: Yunkong Becomes a Saint King

Changyang Zu Yunkong's talent was extremely great, but it had been sealed up by the great elders of the Changyang clan together, preventing him from ever reaching Sainthood, but even with that being the case, the breakthrough occurred uncontrollably several times back on Three Saint Island, conflicting with the seal in his head and torturing him in an excruciating fashion. If it were not for the Heavenly Enchantress' matchless accomplishments in the way of the zither that allowed her to send him into a slumber, he would have passed away long ago.

Afterward, the seal in his head was removed because of Jian Chen. With his talent, his cultivation immediately surged. Coupled with Xiao Ling's assistance in personally invoking the mysteries of the world, the mysteries were presented in the clearest fashion possible right in front of him, allowing his strength to skyrocket. It increased at an unbelievable rate, allowing him to reach the peak of Saint Ruler after only recently becoming one a few short years ago.

Changyang Zu Yunkong sat in the cave like an old monk in meditation. He was solemn and showed no other emotions. The space around him rippled in an even more unstable manner like water while powerful energy surged from his body from time to time, causing the ground to crack like a web.

Not only was Changyang Zu Yunkong's comprehension of the mysteries of the world deepening with every moment, undergoing a qualitative metamorphosis, even the energy within him was strengthening, becoming more and more powerful and pure.

Suddenly, the distorted space around him stopped and even the energy within him stabilized. At that moment, everything calmed down and his surroundings fell silent, as if the entire world had

descended into silence in that single moment. It also seemed like time had stopped while the energy of the world around him stopped flowing as well.

The odd situation lasted for a short while. Suddenly, a tremendous presence began to radiate from Changyang Zu Yunkong, sweeping out like a storm and engulfing the entire mountain range.

At the same time, an even more tremendous presence erupted from Changyang Zu Yunkong. Like a flash flood, it violently surged out in all directions.

Boom! The mountain Changyang Zu Yunkong was residing in erupted, disintegrating into rocks that splayed out in all directions. He remained floating at the same altitude in the same sitting posture as the energy erupted from him uncontrollably, wreaking havoc on the surroundings.

At that moment, the calm sky suddenly began to churn. The energy surged into the sky like a flood, obliterating the layer of clouds above.

Soon afterward, a layer of rainbow clouds silently appeared in the sky. They shone with a colorful and beautiful light, illuminating the entire region.

They were seven-colored rainbow clouds, and they silently expanded in all directions. They engulfed a radius of several hundred thousand kilometers, making all the Saint Rulers in that area envious and eager.

This was because they all knew that this was the sign of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler breaking through to Saint King.

Reaching Saint King did not only mean an increase in strength, elevating the person to the apex of the continent, it also meant an increase in longevity.

Saint Rulers only possessed a lifespan of three thousand years,

and even with heavenly resources, they could only live for an additional two hundred years at most. However, reaching Saint King would directly increase one's lifespan to six thousand years.

From two other regions within the mountain range, Huang Tianba and Yang Ling emerged from cultivation. They both looked up at the sky.

“Changyang Zu Yunkong's talent really is terrifying. A few years ago, he was nowhere near as strong as me, yet he's reached Saint King before me,” Huang Tianba mumbled emotionally. He faintly smiled because of the joy he felt knowing Changyang Zu Yunkong was becoming a Saint King.

“I need to work hard as well. My talent may not be as impressive as Changyang Zu Yunkong, but I can't fall too far behind, or that's just far too embarrassing,” Huang Tianba then said. He was also at the Ninth Heavenly Layer right now, only requiring a final step to break through.

On the other side, Yang Ling stared at the rainbow clouds in the sky with mixed emotions. He could still clearly remember that when he was cultivating with Changyang Zu Yunkong back in Mercenary City. Changyang Zu Yunkong was only a Saint Ruler of the First Heavenly Layer, yet he had already become a Saint King after so little time. On the other hand, his strength had not increased at all. He remained a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master.

“My talent is horrible. The young master has given me such a great opportunity, yet I've still failed to reach Saint Ruler. I've really failed to live up to his wishes. There's no chance I will reach Saint King in this life,” Yang Ling gently sighed. He became rather dejected. All fighters wished to see themselves become even more powerful.

Changyang Zu Yunkong was only several tens of thousand kilometers from Mercenary City, so the rainbow clouds obviously reached there. However, there were already two thousand Saint

Kings from various races that had gathered there, and there were even a few Saint Emperors. The breakthrough obviously did not catch the attention of many people.

Back at the Changyang clan, Changyang Qing Yun's sudden departure made a lot of people sigh in relief. The people who had no idea what was happening thought that Changyang Qing Yun had permanently left and started to secretly praise Changyang Zu Xiao's might since he had driven away an enemy as soon as he arrived.

Only Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun remained with very pale faces. They had already thought of some things that might end up happening after hearing what Changyang Qing Yun had said before he left.

Before they could delve into the matter, a Space Gate ripped open again and Changyang Qing Yun emerged. He had arrived with an Emperor Armament that was over twenty meters in length in his hands.

The Emperor Armament immediately radiated with a powerful might as soon as it appeared. Its presence swept through the surroundings and made everyone shiver.

Just the appearance of the Emperor Armament, without even displaying its powers, had caused the surrounding space to ripple, as if it were going to shatter at any moment.

Changyang Qing Yun stood where the hilt of the sword was and held onto it with both of his hands. His hair and clothes were ruffled despite the windless sky as a tremendous ripple of energy radiated from him. He was currently using his full strength to stabilize the Emperor Armament.

The four other great elders simultaneously charged over, joining with Changyang Qing Yun to control the Emperor Armament together.

The ancestral weapon of a protector clan was just far too powerful. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection would struggle to control it by themselves. They needed several people to work together.

“Changyang Zu Xiao, I’ve like to see how you will block the Emperor Armament. Do you really think your Zu branch has the ability to achieve mutual defeat?” Changyang Qing Yun laughed at the sky. He was already confident he would achieve victory now that this weapon was in his hands.

The three Saint Kings of the Zu branch became extremely ugly. Even the Saint Rulers beneath looked the same.

“Changyang Qing Yun, I never thought you’d become so mad that you’d use the Emperor Armament against us. Have you forgotten the ancestral teachings? They’ve clearly recorded that the protector clans can only use the Emperor Armaments when the continent faces a severe threat or when the protector clan is facing a life or death situation,” Changyang Zu Xiao cried out in a heavy voice as his expression became extremely horrible.

Chapter 1321: Yang Lie (One)

“Since ancient times, we three branches have always been one big family. We’ve gone through countless eras like that, but your Zu branch wants to leave and create their own clan. The descendant of the branch clan, Changyang Zu Xiangtian, has even worked with foreigners against the clan, sealing us within our miniature world. This is treachery. If we give you some more time, you’ll become even bolder, and you’ll probably do things that are even more outrageous. You may even try replace us as a protector clan,” Changyang Qing Yun coldly replied. He had not only come to the Changyang clan to deal with the conflict that had erupted between the three branches, but he had also come to vent his suppressed anger as well.

When the five great elders and the various clansmen had been trapped in the miniature world, they had accumulated an incredible amount of anger and hatred. Basically all five great elders pondered over how they would take revenge on the people of the Zu branch while they were trapped in there. It was just that they had quickly been invited to Mercenary City due to the World of Forsaken Saints when the new grand elder of Mercenary City had come with over twenty other Saint Kings to smash through the seal, so they had to delay the day they would take revenge.

Now that the conflict between the branches had occurred, the great elders obviously obtained the opportunity to take revenge as well as gained a reason to do so this time.

“Changyang Qing Yun, so much for being a great elder of a protector clan. You actually have no conscience. You clearly wanted to take the Saints’ Fruit from Xiangtian to become a Saint Emperor, yet you keep making up excuses to make it more confusing. Wasn’t the reason why our protector clan became like this all because of your greed?” Changyang Zu Yunxiao responded with a heavy voice. His voice was filled with anger.

Changyang Qing Yun did not become flushed from embarrassment. Instead, he rebuked righteously, “Have you forgotten about the rules of the protector clans? The rules clearly state that all descendents of the clan must treat the clan as top priority. As a member of the clan, Changyang Zu Xiangtian obviously has to abide to the rules. It’s an extremely big deal that he obtained the Saints’ Fruit, so he obviously has to hand it over.”

Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun became extremely furious. They had never thought that Changyang Qing Yun would have already turned into a person like this. He seemed like a completely new person compared to before.

Changyang Qing Yun had never been like this before. However, the temptation of becoming a Saint Emperor was just far too much. When Jian Chen brought the Saints’ Fruit back to the clan, Changyang Qing Yun technically had the right to consume it as the most powerful person in the clan, but to everyone’s surprise, Jian Chen refused to hand it over no matter what. In the end, Changyang Qing Yun missed this close opportunity of becoming a Saint Emperor and was trapped in the clan for a period of time as well. The two matters had a massive impact, which was why he had changed.

After all, the Saints’ Fruit had become the only chance at becoming a Saint Emperor in this age. There were no Saint Kings who could resist such a great urge. Even Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao felt themselves waver in front of it in the past, but they did not lose themselves like Changyang Qing Yun and act crazy.

“The Saints’ Fruit was obtained by Xiangtian with the assistance of the three magical beasts, and they even stopped the scheme of the Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent in the end. If it weren’t for the three of them, the Saints’ Fruit probably would have been taken by the Saint Emperors even if it ended up in your hands. As a result, the Saints’ Fruit does not completely belong to

Xiangtian, and the clan obviously has no right to take it away,” Changyang Zu Xiao calmly berated.

“Hmph, Changyang Zu Xiao, cut the bullsh*t. If you hadn’t stopped me before, I would have become a Saint Emperor already. I will make you pay for what you did back then!” Changyang Qing Yun bellowed out as madness filled his eyes. He began to control the Emperor Armament with the four other great elders.

Immediately, a terrifying ripple of energy radiated from the Emperor Armament, enough to make the surroundings tremble. It caused the space around it to burst with a single moment, causing cracks to form around the Emperor Armament, before finally collapsing entirely.

The Emperor Armament was just far too powerful, and the space of the world was not as tough as the space within the miniature world of the protector clans. It lacked the stabilization of the eighteen divine halls as well, so the space shattered as soon as the Emperor Armament was activated.

“From today on, the Changyang clan will cease to exist here,” Changyang Qing Yun laughed aloud as the Emperor Armament was swung at the residences below in attempt to obliterate them.

The Changyang clan was only a cluster of extremely ordinary buildings. Changyang Zu Xiao had cast down a protective barrier, but the barrier was insignificant before the Emperor Armament. It was completely useless.

Within the clan, all the people paled. Even Changyang Ba, Bi Yuntian, and the Saint Rulers of the Zu branch became very nervous. The terrifying presence of the Emperor Armament had locked onto everyone below, crushing them like it was mountain. They could not avoid it at all.

The weaker guards and servants of the clan all fell unconscious while blood leaked from the corner of their mouths. Their organs had been injured by the pressure of the Emperor Armament.

Changyang Ba, Bi Yuntian, and a few other important figures of the clan were protected by the Saint Rulers, so the pressure they felt was not as great.

In the sky, Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun abruptly revealed different expressions. If they let the Emperor Armament fall, it would probably not just be the Changyang clan that would be annihilated. Even this large city with a population of a few million people would vanish.

Reaching Saint Ruler would activate the limit of celestial decay, preventing someone so powerful from committing monstrous sins. If over a million people were slain in a single moment, celestial decay would immediately descend, reducing the attacker into a pile of bones no matter how powerful they were.

The three Saint Kings immediately began to use a secret technique to interfere with the great elders' control over the Emperor Armament. The Emperor Armament could only be controlled with a corresponding secret technique and only those who had reached Saint King could learn it. They were Saint Kings, so they knew it.

Control over the Emperor Armament was greatly disturbed as terrifying energy began to violently pulse out. The sword surged with light, alternating between being dim and being bright. Even its motion came to a halt.

“Changyang Zu Xiao, don't you dare take control of the Emperor Armament!” Changyang Qing Yun bellowed and began to use all he had. Even the four other Saint Kings were the same.

The Emperor Armament violently trembled in the air as energy surged within them an extremely unstable manner. The three Saint Kings of the Zu branch were currently locked in a fight with the five Saint Kings from the Yuan and Qing branches, a fight of secret techniques, trying to wrestle away the control of the Emperor Armament.

Spurt!

Changyang Zu Xiao and the other two vomited a mouthful of blood as their faces paled in a single moment. Soon after, the five other Saint Kings vomited a mouthful of blood as well while their faces became sheet-white, without a shred of blood.

Both sides suffered the backlash from the Emperor Armament, becoming heavily injured. However, they still did not give up, continuing to fight for control. They all knew that the side that gained control would gain the upper hand.

Chapter 1322: Yang Lie (Two)

At this moment, the Emperor Armament suddenly resonated at a clear pitch. The sound lasted for an extremely long time, and it filled the surroundings. However, the facial expressions of the great elders of the Changyang clan hardened when they heard the noise because the Emperor Armament had never produced a sound like that before. It was clearly extremely unusual.

But before they could think about anything more, a powerful force suddenly erupted from the Emperor Armament like a tsunami. It shattered the space in the surrounding several dozen meters, reducing it to darkness.

Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, and even the five Saint Kings from the other two branches vomited blood at the same time. They became extremely heavily injured from the force that had suddenly erupted and were all sent flying back. Every single one of them became haggard as shock filled their eyes. They stared at the Emperor Armament in disbelief.

They had suffered from the backlash of the Emperor Armament, but it was much more severe than any time in the past.

After stabilizing themselves, all of them used the secret technique as quickly as possible to control the Emperor Armament. This was where victory lay.

But their faces all displayed their surprise because none of them could regain control over the Emperor Armament through the secret techniques. The weapon had completely broken free from their control.

All eight Saint Kings revealed ugly expressions. It was an extremely terrifying matter for the Emperor Armament to have broken free.

The huge Emperor Armament hung in the sky and constantly trembled. It erupted with pulses of terrifying energy as it continued to resonate. The resonating pitch was clear and ear-piercing, like the cry of the Emperor Armament.

Suddenly, the Emperor Armament shot off as a streak of light. It was lightning-fast and vanished beyond the horizon in the blink of an eye. Wherever it passed, the space cracked into fragments while its terrifying pressure caused the entire earth to shake.

“Oh no, the Emperor Armament’s flown away. We can’t afford to lose it. It’s our ancestral weapon. Chase it!” Changyang Qing Yun was surprised. He no longer paid any attention to the wounds on his body and immediately chased after it as quickly as he could.

The other Saint Kings from the Qing and Yuan branches did not hesitate either. They tailed behind Changyang Qing Yun. They fused with the surrounding space. Using Spatial Force to travel, they moved at a lightning-fast speed.

The Emperor Armament would affect the stability of the space it passed through, making it impossible for them to create Space Gates. At the same time, they had no idea where the Emperor Armament was flying off to, so Space Gates were unsuitable as well. They could only fly.

“Yeyun, you stay here. Yunxiao, let’s go check it out,” Changyang Zu Xiao looked back and gave an order to the couple before hurrying off with Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

The Emperor Armament crossed many mountains and rivers, traversing several hundred thousand kilometers at an unbelievable speed. In the end, it entered a desolate mountain range. The Saint Kings behind it were nowhere to be seen even with their speed.

The rainbow clouds in the sky still loomed over the mountain range. Changyang Zu Yunkong sat in the middle of the air as he stabilized his own level of cultivation while Huang Tianba stood on a mountain peak several kilometers away to watch over him.

At this moment, a terrifying ripple of energy appeared far away, causing the space to constantly shake. The space in the distance had even shattered, turning into darkness.

Huang Tianba's face changed as he gazed at that area in interest. His face became extremely stern. The energy ripples were extremely terrifying and powerful. They made him shiver.

A streak of light shot into the mountain range, heading for Changyang Zu Yunkong. It moved far too quickly. It was on the horizon the moment before, yet it had arrived before Changyang Zu Yunkong by the next. Huang Tianba failed to react to it at all.

It was a sword that was twenty to thirty meters long. Its design was simple, but it gave off a terrifying presence as tremendous energy surged from it, causing the surrounding space to ripple.

Huang Tianba sighed a breath of relief. He could already tell that the sword that had randomly flown over would not harm Changyang Zu Yunkong. Instead, it just hovered above his head, resonating at a lengthy pitch.

Huang Tianba was afraid that the sword would affect Changyang Zu Yunkong's cultivation, so he immediately flew over. However, he was stopped by a mysterious force that was formed by the sword as soon as he reached a kilometer away from Changyang Zu Yunkong. He was unable to move beyond that point with his strength as a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

Suddenly, a terrifying glow erupted from the sword. The light surged into the sky and illuminated the entire place, causing the world to light up. The glow enveloped Changyang Zu Yunkong, but it did not harm him at all. Soon afterward, a wondrous ripple emerged from the sword and entered Changyang Zu Yunkong's forehead. It seemed to be awakening memories that had been sealed long ago.

Huang Tianba stood afar as he watched this unfold in wonder. He had no idea what was happening, but he knew very well that he

could do nothing, whether the actions of the sword were beneficial or detrimental to Changyang Zu Yunkong.

Several hours later, Changyang Qing Yun and Changyang Zu Xiao arrived. They became stunned at first glance by the weird scene.

Changyang Qing Yun roared out and flew toward the Emperor Armament first. He used the secret technique at the same time in attempt to regain control over the Emperor Armament.

In the end, he too was stopped a kilometer away by a powerful and mysterious force, just like Huang Tianba. He was unable to get through it no matter what, and even his secret technique to control the Emperor Armament became useless.

“What’s happening? Just what is happening? Why is the Emperor Armament behaving like this?” Changyang Qing Yun questioned in a panic. The Emperor Armament had existed within the protector clan for countless years, but it had never exhibited behavior like this. It made Changyang Qing Yun feel uneasy inside.

Changyang Zu Xiao silently hovered in the air far away. He only stared at the Emperor Armament and Changyang Zu Yunkong as his eyes shone with thought. None of them could find an explanation for the weird scene.

Soon afterward, the other Saint Kings arrived as well. They all frowned. No one knew what had happened to the Emperor Armament.

“Why would this happen? The Emperor Armament has actually shot off by itself. Probably even Saint Kings at Great Perfection won’t be able to stop it with its force, but why is Changyang Zu Yunkong unaffected even though he’s only just become a Saint King?”

“This is just far too odd. Changyang Zu Yunkong can actually remain unscathed by the power of the Emperor Armament. Does this mean that the Emperor Armament’s power cannot harm him

at all?”

The Saint Kings from the Yuan and Qing branches revealed their doubts. They all found this to be too odd. No one could explain what was going on.

“Let’s all wait here for now. Once Changyang Zu Yunkong rouses from his cultivation, we’ll ask him what’s going on,” Changyang Qing Jueri said with a heavy voice. Many people had a rather horrible feeling as to what was going to happen.

A day later, the glow from the Emperor Armament dispersed, and it became simple and ordinary again. However, its presence still remained. Not only had it failed to weaken, it was even stronger than before. Changyang Zu Yunkong slowly opened his eyes. An almost-tangible spark seemed to shoot from his eyes at that moment. The particular charm he gave off shocked all of them even more. It seemed like the charm that only a ruler who lorded over the world could possess.

Huang Tianba and the Saint Kings all stared at Changyang Zu Yunkong. At that moment, all of them felt the same thing. Changyang Zu Yunkong seemed to be vastly different from before.

With a wave of his hand, the Emperor Armament above Changyang Zu Yunkong’s head immediately shrank to a 1.3 meter long sword that obediently landed in his hand. It seemed like a docile little lamb.

The eyes of the Saint Kings almost popped out from how wide-eyed they had become. The Emperor Armament had always been described as powerful and violent in the protector clan. It had never behaved in such a docile fashion. This docile behavior made the people from the Yuan and Qing branches feel even more uneasy.

“Changyang Zu Yunkong, hurry up and return the Emperor Armament. Are you scheming to steal it from the protector clan?”

“Changyang Zu Yunkong, hurry up and spit out everything you just experienced as well as why you can control the Emperor Armament so easily. Have you learned some secret technique that we don’t know. Spit it out right now.”

The Saint Kings from the Yuan and Qing branches aggressively demanded answers.

Changyang Zu Yunkong smiled. He smiled very resplendently and held the Emperor Armament before his chest. He said, “This belonged to me in the first place, so why should I return it to you? Even if I hand it over, you probably don’t have the power to accept it.”

“How dare you, Changyang Zu Yunkong! Are you trying to revolt? You will not be making it past today since you plan to steal the Emperor Armament of our protector clan!” Changyang Qing Yun exclaimed and immediately attacked Changyang Zu Yunkong since he had sensed that the invisible barrier had vanished.

Changyang Qing Yun was a Saint King at Great Perfection. Even after becoming heavily injured, he was still powerful. He first used his abilities to freeze the space around Changyang Zu Yunkong before hurling a palm forward. Tremendous amounts of Saint Force surged into his hand, almost enough to shatter the surrounding space. He clearly did not hold back.

Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao revealed different expressions. Changyang Zu Yunkong had only reached Saint King, so it was impossible for him to be Changyang Qing Yun’s opponent. When they made a move to stop Changyang Qing Yun, they were stopped by the four other Saint Kings from the other two branches.

Changyang Zu Xiao roared out and struck out with lightning-like speed. He knocked away his two opponents before immediately charging after Changyang Qing Yun.

However, Changyang Qing Yun was already extremely close to

Changyang Zu Yunkong. It was too late for Changyang Zu Xiao to help out.

“Changyang Qing Yun, if you even dare to touch a single hair on Kong’er, I will never spare you,” Changyang Zu Xiao furiously roared out.

Changyang Qing Yun’s lips curled into a sneer as he ignored what Changyang Zu Xiao had said. He pushed the energy gathered in his hand firmly and viciously toward Changyang Zu Yunkong.

Changyang Zu Yunkong was as calm and steady as a mountain. He did not become flustered at all as mockery flashed through his eyes. Soon afterward, a terrifying energy, enough to make the surroundings tremble, erupted from the Emperor Armament. It immediately smashed through the frozen space. He swung the flat side of the sword at Changyang Qing Yun.

Changyang Qing Yun’s entire arm crumpled when it came in contact with the sword. It exploded with blood as his bones shattered before drooping down powerlessly. The Emperor Armament continued on without slowing down at all and struck Changyang Qing Yun in the chest.

Spurt! Blood sprayed from Changyang Qing Yun’s mouth as the great force hidden inside the attack shattered his organs. He shot off like a loose arrow. He could not resist the power at all.

Everyone became stunned by this and Changyang Zu Xiao came to a halt. Even Changyang Zu Yunxiao and the other two Saint Kings stopped fighting as they looked at Changyang Zu Yunkong in utter shock.

“How is this possible? Just how is this possible? He can actually control the Emperor Armament by himself and not suffer a backlash,” Changyang Yuan Zhenghua said in shock as his heart churned.

“Changyang Zu Yunkong, you actually dare to injure great elder

Qing Yun. You are disrespecting his authority. Are you trying to rebel?” Changyang Qing Jueri sternly asked despite feeling the exact opposite inside. He was very fearful of Changyang Zu Yunkong now.

Changyang Zu Yunkong warmly smiled and said, “You shouldn’t call me Changyang Zu Yunkong. From now on, my name is Yang Lie!”

Chapter 1323: Yang Lie (Three)

“Who cares if you’re Changyang Zu Yunkong or Yang Lie? The Emperor Armament in your hands is the ancestral weapon of our protector clan regardless of all that. Although I don’t know what secret technique you’re using to control the Emperor Armament without suffering a backlash, you need to return the ancestral weapon to us no matter what,” Changyang Qing Yunfeng said heavily. His face was extremely sunken. He had not treated Changyang Zu Yunkong’s breakthrough with any importance since he would only be at the First Heavenly Layer, but now that the ancestral weapon was in his hands, his strength was indescribable. Even Changyang Qing Yun, who was at Great Perfection, was not his opponent, having been injured without being able to resist at all. This caused the people of the Yuan and Qing branches to become flustered.

However, Changyang Qing Yunfeng tried to recall where he had heard the name Yang Lie. For some reason, he felt a sense of familiarity, as if he had heard it somewhere before, but he could not recall where at the moment.

Changyang Yuan Zhenghua’s face slightly changed. His gaze toward Changyang Zu Yunkong became extremely sharp as he cried out in a low voice, “Yang Lie is the founding ancestor of our Changyang clan. How dare you, Changyang Zu Yunkong! How dare you use the name of our ancestor to do such treacherous things!”

Immediately, everyone present became startled before coming to an understanding. Changyang Qing Yunfeng was not the only one who had sensed a feeling of familiarity from the name, but Changyang Zu Xiao and the others also could not recall where they had heard the name before.

Changyang Qing Jueri laughed out of anger, “Okay! Good! Good! Your Zu branch really wants to revolt now! First you break free from the protector clan. Now you want to blaspheme our founding

ancestor, Yang Lie, while holding the ancestral weapon. People of the Zu branch, do you really think that you can replace the protector clan just because you have Jian Chen and a secret technique that can control the Emperor Armament from who knows where?” Hmph, your wild ambitions will never come true.”

“We will definitely call on the world for this matter and get everyone to understand exactly what you, the people of the Zu branch, have done. The Zu branch is fated to be cursed by all the people of the world,” Changyang Yuan Zhenghua yelled. He was extremely furious. The people of the Zu branch were becoming bolder and bolder and more reckless.

Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao looked at each other and frowned. The development of the matter had completely exceeded anything they could have anticipated. They did not know what had happened to Changyang Zu Yunkong. They felt like he had turned into a completely different person.

Changyang Zu Yunkong warmly smiled as he gently rubbed the Emperor Armament. He said, “The founding ancestor you speak of is me. I was the one who founded the Changyang clan in the past and left my Righteous Yang Sword there. At the same time, I cast down the formation with the eighteen divine halls and the Origin Formation so that the clan would never decline. You really have lived up to my hopes. After so many years, the Changyang clan has not declined at all. It is just as glorious as back then; except this generation is just far too greedy, to have ended up fighting with one another just for a Saints’ Fruit.”

“Changyang Zu Yunkong, y-y- y-” The Saint Kings of the Yuan and Qing branches became utterly speechless from anger as they pointed at Changyang Zu Yunkong. In terms of seniority, they had the right to be Changyang Zu Yunkong’s great-grandfather or even great-great-grandfather. Right now, the youngest descendent in their eyes was actually called himself the founding ancestor. That would mean that they, people who had lived for thousands of

years, were his descendents of countless generations.

Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunkong displayed rather ugly expressions, but they said nothing because they could clearly sense that Changyang Zu Yunkong no longer seemed like the Changyang Zu Yunkong of the past. Although he looked the same, his presence and charm were completely off.

Changyang Zu Yunkong had just reached Saint King, but he happened to give off an unfathomable feeling.

Changyang Qing Yun slowly dragged his injured body over from afar. He said nothing, only staring at Changyang Zu Yunkong in shock. Disbelief was plastered across his face. He understood that he had just been injured by the Emperor Armament and not Changyang Zu Yunkong himself. He struggled to believe that Changyang Zu Yunkong could control the Emperor Armament in such an easy fashion. Not only could he use its power at will, he did not suffer a backlash from it at all.

A Space Gate ripped open and a middle-aged man in tight robes emerged. He carried a shiny silver blade. Strands of powerful energy would pulse from the blade from time to time, surprising the Saint Kings of the Changyang clan.

The Saint Kings all looked at the man who had suddenly appeared. Their eyes all narrowed because they were unable to see through the man at all. The blade he carried in particular even made them violently jerk away. No matter how they looked at it, the blade seemed like the Emperor Armament from the Tyrant's Blade School, except it had shrunk by a lot.

The man was Guihai Yidao. He did not even look at the Saint Kings from the Changyang clan. His eyes were only fixated on Changyang Zu Yunkong. He happily smiled and said, "Yang Lie, you've finally returned!"

Yang Lie stared at Guihai Yidao for a while before a gleam of light flashed through his eyes, and he said, "Guihai Yidao, I never

thought that you would have awakened already, and you've even recovered your strength to the level of a Saint Emperor."

The Saint Kings were immediately surprised by what they had just heard. They all stared at Guihai Yidao with wide eyes while shock was plastered across their face. The middle-aged man before them was actually a Saint Emperor? They did not recognize him at all, nor did they know when the middle-aged man had become a Saint Emperor. The nine-colored rainbow clouds did not accompany his breakthrough.

Guihai Yidao laughed aloud. He was overjoyed after seeing an old friend. He said, "Yang Lie, I only came a few years earlier than you. The energy gathered in your Righteous Yang Sword is not lesser than my Wave-breaking blade. If you use the energy in it to cultivate, you'll reach the peak of Saint Emperor very soon. However, returning to our level of cultivation will be rather difficult."

"We're unable to reach the Origin realm? Why not?" Yang Lie asked.

Guihai Yidao stopped smiling and became rather stern. He gently sighed. "Yang Lie, your clan doesn't seem to be very peaceful. Deal with that first. I'll wait for you in the northern sea."

"Sir, may I ask who you are? Why have I never heard of an expert like you on the Tian Yuan Continent?" Changyang Qing Jueri used this opportunity to ask Guihai Yidao a question.

If it was any other day, Guihai Yidao would have never paid any attention to what his juniors asked him. However, an old friend of his had just returned today, so he was in an extremely good mood. He chuckled, "I founded the Tyrant's Blade School. I believe my disciples and grand disciples have told you about it already." With that, Guihai Yidao directly departed through a Space Gate.

The Saint Kings of the Changyang clan became stunned. Back when Mercenary City had asked to borrow the Tyrant's Blade

School's Emperor Armament, the great elders of the Tyrant's Blade School had mentioned that their founding ancestor had returned. Although the five great elders had still been trapped in their miniature world back then, they had overheard the news from the conversations of a few other Saint Kings. They all believed that it was just an excuse the Tyrant's Blade School had used to decline lending out their Emperor Armament. None of them had thought that their ancestor had actually returned.

It was unrealistic that someone who had been dead for a million years could return. It was just unbelievable.

“Changyang Qing Yun, Changyang Qing Yunfeng, Changyang Qing Jueri, Changyang Yuan Zhenghua, and Changyang Yuan Wuji. The five of you turned on your own clansmen over a Saints' Fruit. Do you understand your crimes?” Yang Lie looked at the five great elders as his tone gradually grew cold. A domineering aura appeared. Even Changyang Qing Yun and the others found it difficult to not heed his commands.

“A-are you really the founding ancestor of our Changyang clan, Yang Lie?” Changyang Qing Yun asked in shock. He could already vaguely sense the answer to his question. Their Emperor Armament came from their founding ancestor in the first place, and only the true owner of the weapon would be able to use it so easily.

“How can that be false? The Righteous Yang Sword in my hand is the best evidence there is. Back then, all of you thought I was dead, but the truth is different. Back then, the nine other founders and I were all heavily injured. Our cultivation levels had fallen and our strength had decreased. Our souls had suffered from an unrecoverable injury. In the end, the ten of us made up our minds to leave behind a legacy and seal our memories into the saint artifacts. We used a secret technique to cast our souls into samsara, undergoing countless rebirths as we slowly cured the wounds of our souls. It's just that I've only just recovered and returned; that's

all,” said Yang Lie.

Chapter 1324: Returning to the Sea Realm

What Yang Lie said was like a story to the Saint Kings of the Changyang clan. How could such a method exist, where someone could seal their memories in their ancestral weapon and then cast their soul into samsara?

At the very least with what they knew, there were countless Saint Emperors that had appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent in the past, and there were many who had possessed injured souls as well. However, no one had accomplished what Yang Lie did, undergoing countless reincarnations before awakening and recovering his former memories.

“Do the five of you understand your crimes?” Yang Lie continued to judge the five great elders. Not only did he recover his past memories, he had retained his current memories as well.

“Hmph, Changyang Zu Yunkong, do you really think that you can use this opportunity to pose as the founding ancestor by using some secret technique to control the Emperor Armament? Because if that’s true, it’s wishful thinking. Do you really think that you can trick us with a story you just made up? Do you think we’re children?” Changyang Qing Yun cried out. He decided to not remain in the area any longer. He immediately turned around to flee. He traveled toward Mercenary City as quickly as possible.

They had already started to believe the part about him being Yang Lie, but they refused to admit it because they had committed far too many mistakes already. The most severe one among them was sealing up Yang Lie’s talent, preventing him from reaching Sainthood for the rest of his life. He had almost lost his life because of that.

“I’d like to see how you flee before me,” Yang Lie coldly cried out. He was no longer as warm as before. His face became rather dark. If Changyang Qing Yun had admitted to his mistakes out of

his own accord, he might have ended up letting him go easily, but not only did he refuse to acknowledge them, he was committing even more mistakes. This angered Yang Lie.

Swish! The Righteous Yang Sword shot out of Yang Lie's hands with a resplendent glow as it pursued Changyang Qing Yun at the speed of lightning. It hovered above Changyang Qing Yun's head before suddenly expanding, returning to its thirty-meter-long size. Afterward, it viciously pushed down with a tremendous presence, sending Changyang Qing Yun into the ground.

Changyang Qing Yun roared out. Powerful energy wildly surged from his body as he attempted to stop the Righteous Yang Sword. The sword was only thirty meters long at most, but it was even heavier than a mountain. Even with Changyang Qing Yun's full strength, Saint King at Great Perfection, he was unable to stop it.

Boom! Changyang Qing Yun's hands forcefully dug into the ground and produced a heavy sound. He wanted to blast open the ground, carve out a tunnel, and flee through it.

A tremendous and powerful energy leaked out of the Righteous Yang Sword, causing the ground to become as tough as steel. Changyang Qing Yun's strike, which could easily destroy mountains on any other day, actually failed to penetrate the earth at this moment.

Seeing how the Righteous Yang Sword had left Yang Lie's hands, the eyes of the four other Saints Kings from the Qing and Yuan branches immediately lit up. They looked at one another and attacked Yang Lie together.

The four of them did not hold back at all, striking out with their full strength. They all swung their Saint Weapons at the weaponless Yang Lie. The Saint Weapons criss-crossed with one another and formed a huge, invisible net around him, cutting off any path of escape. They then froze the space around him, limiting his movements.

Yang Lie was immobilized by the surrounding space, but he did not become flustered at all. His lips curled like he had just heard a joke, and with a flash of light through his eyes, four powerful sword Qis erupted from the sword that constrained Changyang Qing Yun in the distance. They shot toward the four Saint Kings.

The four sword Qis were shockingly powerful. Every single one of them was two meters long and radiated with a dazzling light. Wherever they passed, space would rip open, leaving behind four, long, black gashes.

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

The four sword Qi instantly arrived before the four Saint Kings. The four of them were unable to dodge the sword Qis as they pierced through their chests.

The four Saint Kings all spat out a mouthful of blood. They were heavily injured. The four sword Qis had originated from the Righteous Yang Sword, so their power was incomparable to ordinary attacks. Even though they did not deal life-threatening damage to them, they had caused them unimaginable injuries, basically incapacitating them.

“You really are getting bolder and bolder to attack me after learning by identity. If it weren’t for the fact that you are direct descendants of the Changyang clan, I would have taken your lives long ago,” Yang Lie said with a sunken face.

The Saint Kings became afraid. They could already tell that their junior, who claimed to be their founding ancestor and had only just reached Saint King, was at a level they could not resist, even if they were all at Great Perfection.

This was because the Emperor Armament was just far too powerful. They believed that he could use all the energy hidden within the weapon.

With a wave of his hand, Yang Lie summoned the sword back.

However, Changyang Qing Yun did not dare to run anymore.

“The five of you return and think about your actions and make up for the mistakes you made in the past. If it weren’t for the fact that the Tian Yuan Continent is currently facing disaster and is in need of people, why would I be letting you off so easily?” Yang Lie coldly said to the five of them. Afterward, he looked at Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao. He could not help but become filled with mixed emotions. After a moment of silence, he said, “During the period I’m gone, you can deal with the matters in the clan. After I return, I will give you origin energy and will do my best to make you Saint Emperors.” With that, Yang Lie ripped open a Space Gate and left.

Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao stood there speechless. At that moment, they were strewn between all sorts of feelings and had no idea how to describe them. The return of their founding ancestor was something that they should have been happy about, but they did not feel happy at all.

The five other Saint Kings all left in a disheveled manner. They dragged their bodies toward Mercenary City. They wanted to use the Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters there to heal. However, the five of them were not calm. Their founding ancestor had returned, which had greatly shocked them.

Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao returned to the Changyang clan in Lore City and explained everything that had happened to Changyang Zu Yeyun. She immediately became stunned after learning that her child was the incarnation of their founding ancestor. She was strewn with emotions while her face reflected her bitter thoughts.

“I never thought that Changyang Zu Yunkong would actually be the incarnation of founding ancestor of the Changyang clan. This is just far too shocking,” Huang Tianba was speechless as he watched everything unfold on a mountain peak. He then returned to seclusion to undergo his final breakthrough.

Back in the sea realm, Jian Chen and Tie Ta successfully emerged from the Xuanhuang Microcosm and returned. They appeared in the huge whirlpool of energy.

The worldly ebb lasted for only half a year and was almost over, so the energy had already thinned. It was nowhere near as abundant as before.

“Fantastic, you’ve finally come out. I had thought an accident had happened.” The sea goddess’ joyful voice rang out as soon as the two of them emerged. They saw the sea goddess’ illusionary figure floating before them. She was extremely excited.

“Esteemed sea goddess, fortunately I’ve succeeded and collected all the materials to reconstruct your body,” Jian Chen clasped his hands at the sea goddess with a smile before pulling out the two materials for the sea goddess to see.

The sea goddess could not help but tremble. She said, “Good! Good! Good! Jian Chen, I really haven’t misjudged you. You’ve really completed the task I gave you. This is fantastic. This just just fantastic.” The sea goddess could not calm down for quite some time now that there was a hope of being revived. This was because she had looked forward for this day for far too long.

Chapter 1325: The Tao Family's Clamor

“Your majesty, may I ask how I can give you these items?” Jian Chen asked. The sea goddess was only a soul right now, so she could not take things with her.

The sea goddess calmed down after hearing the question. She said, “Jian Chen, first go find the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, Yadriam. She has an Abyssal Crystal with her. The crystal only appears in the Sea of Despair, and she is in possession of the only piece that has made it out. You can find my divine hall in the Sea of Despair through the use of the crystal.

The sea goddess vanished after explaining some things to Jian Chen. She had left already.

Jian Chen looked around. He and Tie Ta were currently located in the depths of the whirlpool. If it was as before, it would have been impossible for the two of them to stand there so easily, but now that their strength had skyrocketed in the Xuanhuang Microcosm and with the weakening energy, they obviously were no longer affected as much as before.

Jian Chen stared at the energy that was gradually decreasing in the surroundings. If the Xuanhuang Microcosm had not appeared, he would have stayed here to cultivate some more. However, he had already reached the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, so the amount of energy he needed to reach the fifth layer had increased yet again. The energy of the whirlpool no longer seemed very important to Jian Chen.

Nubis and the white tiger were still cultivating within the artifact space. They had ingested the various heavenly resources Jian Chen had gathered in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, including the tea made from the Comprehension Tea Leaves. As a result, their strength surged at an extremely great rate during this period of time. Their cultivation was smooth sailing, and the white tiger had

formally reached Class 8, becoming a Saint King. However, since he broke through in the saint artifact, no rainbow clouds formed.

Although Nubis' strength didn't increase as quickly at the Winged Tiger God, he had still reached the Fifth Heavenly Layer, and he was rapidly advancing toward the Sixth. Once he did reach the Sixth, he would even be able to fight against Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings with his modified Saint Tier Battle Skill. Even against the Ninth Heavenly Layer, he would be able to clash a few times using the Saint Tier Battle Skill.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta left the area and made their way to the Sea Goddess Hall to complete the sea goddess' request.

At the same time, Yadriam, who was hovering in the sky above the ruins of Mercenary City, suddenly said to the people around her, "Everyone, I must return to the sea realm for some matters, so I will leave behind the elders of the Sea Goddess Hall. If anything happens, I will hurry back as quickly as possible." With that, Yadriam left in a hurry after handing over a few matters to the experts that had come with her. She returned to the sea realm as quickly as possible.

Two days later, Jian Chen and Tie Ta arrived at the central divine hall of the Sea Goddess Hall. They met the hall master in a room.

Although Yadriam was not enveloped by a layer of blue light right now, making her figure distinct, her face remained blurry. It seemed to be obscured by a layer of mist.

"Very good, Jian Chen. You really haven't let her majesty down by successfully bringing back what she needs. However, the Sea of Despair is no safe place. Even emperors can die there, so I need to make sufficient preparations before we go there. We will leave in three days," Yadriam said to Jian Chen. She had learned everything from the sea goddess while she had made her way back.

"Alright, then I will return in three days, hall master," Jian Chen

said before heading to the territory of the Turtle clan. He did not stay.

It had been half a year since he had been to the Turtle clan, so he used the opportunity to go back and have a look. He could gain an understanding of the current situation of the Turtle clan as well as deal with the enmity that had been formed with the Tao family.

Back then, Jian Chen was helpless due to the divine hall in the Tao family's possession, but now, both Jian Chen and Tie Ta were no weaker than Saint Emperors. The divine hall of the Tao family was basically non-existent to them.

However, there was not a single clansmen of the Turtle clan seen in their territory. Though, a huge divine hall stood in the center. It was still covered with unhealed cracks, but that did not affect its awe at all.

It was the Octoterra Divine Hall that Jian Chen had left behind. It was currently being used, and all the clansmen of the Turtle clan gathered inside. No one came out.

Another huge divine hall stood several kilometers away from the Octoterra Divine Hall. It was the divine hall in the hands of Tao Zhengtian.

Tao Zhengtian and the Saint Kings that had allied themselves with him sat on top of the divine hall. They all sneered at the Octoterra Divine Hall. It had already been several days since they had come. They had fearlessly blocked the main entrance of the Turtle clan.

“Come out, ruler of the Turtle clan. Today, my Tao family will completely finish what we started with you,” Tao Zhengtian taunted the Turtle clan as he sat on the top of the divine hall.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, what're you scared? You won't even come out after we've blocked your main entrance. All you know is how to hide in the divine hall. Do you plan on hiding for the rest of

your life...”

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, your clan is still a large one in the end. It’s one of the peak powers in the sea realm, yet you’ve become cowards right now. If this makes it out, you’ll take quite the hit to the name of the Turtle clan...”

“Jian Chen, hurry up and come out to die. How long are you going to hide in the divine hall...”

“Hahahaha, I never thought that the ruler of the Turtle clan, famed in the sea realm, was someone who feared death...”

The five Saint Kings of the alliance constantly raised a clamor. They showed no fear, as if victory was in their grasp. They did not dread the Turtle clan at all and would even send powerful attacks at the Octoterra Divine Hall from time to time, causing it to rumble. Although the attacks failed to even mark the divine hall, it annoyed the clansmen hiding inside very much.

Within the divine hall, Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas had all paled from anger. They were tempted to immediately charge out to engage in a battle to the death with the Saint Kings of the Tao family.

“We have to endure their mockery and not act recklessly. We have the same amount of 16th Star experts, but Tao Zhengtian is just far too powerful. He can take on two or three of us all by himself while the ancestor of the Moxi clan is stronger than any one of us. If we really end up fighting, we’ll lose for sure. At the same time, they definitely have something they can count on since they are flaunting themselves in such a fearless manner. So we can’t go out no matter what,” Lan Jing growled.

“Hmph, this Tao family is only bold enough to raise a clamor when the ruler isn’t present. If the ruler was present, I’d like to see if Tao Zhengtian would be brave enough to do the same time,” Tai Dou fumed. He was quite furious.

Qing Yixuan's face had sunken. She said through gritted teeth, "Where the bloody hell has Jian Chen gone? Isn't he taking it a little too easy as the ruler of the Turtle clan? Always going missing, he even disappears for several months on end. It's almost impossible to contact him. He always throws such a huge mess at us to deal with. Look at it now. We have so many people, yet we've been frightened into the divine hall by the Tao family, and all we can do is stay here. We have to endure their insults as well. Hmph, this sure is the first time I've been forced to go through something like this."

Chapter 1326: Return

Every single person hiding within the divine hall was fuming. They were furious, yet there was nothing they could do to vent their anger. They were completely helpless due to the current situation. They were not the opponents of the Tao family's Saint Kings, and if they acted too recklessly, it would be extremely easy for them to die.

"I wonder when the ruler will return. If the ruler returns, he'll definitely make the Tao family pay," said an elder of the Turtle clan. He felt admiration from the bottom of his heart for Jian Chen, because he would never forget that the declining clan had only powered up so quickly under Jian Chen's leadership. The reason why the clan possessed five 16th Star experts right now was all because of Jian Chen. It had nothing to do with the clan itself.

Qing Yixuan raised an eyebrow and disdainfully pouted. She sneered, "Tao Zhengtian has a divine hall. It's not like you don't know how tough divine halls are. Those that are not Saint Emperors cannot smash through them. I must admit that Jian Chen's talent is extremely impressive and that he's extremely powerful. However, he still can't do anything to Tao Zhengtian since he has a divine hall. Even if he takes on Tao Zhengtian himself, he's not his opponent. Under these circumstances, he'll be useless even if he returns."

"We believe in the ruler. The ruler is wise. He's our only hope. As long as the ruler is present, our clan will be able to take on any problem head-on." A clansmen clearly heard Qing Yixuan talk about Jian Chen from nearby and immediately stood up before righteously roaring out. He was extremely protective over the ruler.

"Yeah, that's right. Our ruler is powerful. He is wise. Right now, our clan has only become like this because the ruler is not present. If the ruler was present, I believe our clan would be able to deal

with any problem under his wise leadership.”

“Isn’t everything happening today explaining everything even clearer? We cannot be without the ruler. Only when the ruler is with us can we become extremely powerful. Without the ruler, we are nothing.”

More and more people spoke. They were extremely protective of Jian Chen and rebuked Qing Yixuan. They all possessed blind devotion to the ruler. Even their minds and beliefs were unconsciously affected by Jian Chen.

Seeing the mad devotion within the eyes of the clansmen, Qing Yixuan rubbed her head in pain. She shook her head helplessly and murmured, “You’re helpless. I really don’t understand how Jian Chen’s convinced so many people with how long he’s stayed in the clan.”

Outside, Tao Zhengtian and the other Saint Kings continued spewing provocations. They virtually used everything to try to force out the ruler, but after several days of hard work, they had not caught even a single glimpse of Jian Chen.

Meanwhile, Tao Zhengtian and the others could not help but begin doubting themselves. They had already guessed that it was extremely likely that Jian Chen was not present, or he was in secluded cultivation.

“Let’s remain here. Even if the ruler of the Turtle clan isn’t here, he probably received a message from someone long ago. He’ll probably return soon.” Tao Zhengtian sat on the top of the divine hall at ease. He stared at the Octoterra Divine Hall with half-squinted eyes. He was extremely confident.

At this moment, the whistling of air rang out. Two figures quickly shot over from the distance.

To the Saint Kings, the two figures’ grasp over space was not very profound, but their speed was stunning because it was not slower

than Saint Kings. Even some 16th Star experts could not travel as fast as them.

In the blink of an eye, the two of them stopped between the two divine halls. Their faces were finally visible at that moment. One of them was a young man who seemed to be in his twenties. He wore white robes and was handsome, filled with masculinity. His eyes were sharp like swords, and staring into his eyes would make the observer's own eyeballs hurt.

The other person was an extremely burly man. His skin was golden and glowed with a faint, metallic luster. He seemed to be made of gold, and the most eye-catching part of him was the center of his brows. There was actually the imprint of an axe there.

"It's the ruler of the Turtle clan. The ruler's returned," a Saint King from the alliance saw them and immediately cried out.

The two of them just happened to be Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

Tao Zhengtian's eyes began to glare at them at that moment. He stared at them in interest as he sneered, "Ruler of the Turtle clan, you've finally returned. I've waited for you for several days already."

Jian Chen stared at Tao Zhengtian and the others who were blocking the main entrance of the Turtle clan with a sunken face. He then glanced over at the Turtle clan. He immediately let out a breath of relief. Although the Turtle clan had been reduced to a mess, there were no corpses or bloody marks. All of them had hidden in the Octoterra Divine Hall.

Jian Chen's face became filled with heavy killing intent at that moment. He had never thought that Tao Zhengtian would come and block the main entrance of the clan before he could even find him to settle their debt. If he had not left behind the divine hall, the entire clan would probably have been rinsed in blood.

"Tao Zhengtian, I was just about to go to your Tao family to

completely settle our enmity. I never thought that you'd be so smart and obediently come to meet your maker," Jian Chen growled.

Tao Zhengtian chuckled aloud, "Ruler of the Turtle clan, you overestimate yourself. I'm standing right here. I'd like to see how you kill me." He was confident. He was currently at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer as a Saint King and infinitesimally close to the Ninth. He had gained a clear understanding of Jian Chen's strength in the battle before, which was not enough to threaten him at all.

Jian Chen sneered, "Then I'll show you I can kill you right here." Suddenly, a vast presence surged from Jian Chen. It crushed down on Tao Zhengtian with an unstoppable force.

Tao Zhengtian and the four other Saint Kings suddenly displayed different expressions. Jian Chen's presence was just far too powerful. Even Tao Zhengtian, a peak Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King, shivered inside. At that moment, he even gained the impression that he was standing before a Saint Emperor.

The five of them were no longer as composed as before. They all stood up in shock while disbelief plastered across their faces. Their hearts churned inside.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, I've treated you with a lot of caution, but I've still underestimated you in the end. I never would have thought that your strength would have reached such a level in such a short amount of time. You're no weaker than me. However, just that much strength is still wishful thinking if you want to kill me. If you don't believe me, we can fight it out somewhere else." Tao Zhengtian no longer remained where he was after throwing that out. He immediately flew off into the distance with the divine hall, traveling extremely fast. He disappeared into the horizon in the blink of an eye.

The four other Saint Kings had entered the divine hall as quickly

as they could, so Tao Zhengtian had taken them with him.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, if you have the guts, then come!” Tao Zhengtian’s voice loudly rang out from afar.

Jian Chen moved. He used the Illusory Flash, causing his body to fuse with the surrounding space. He chased after Tao Zhengtian extremely quickly at a speed no slower than him.

Jian Chen’s understanding of the Illusory Flash had reached a new level in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. Coupled with his increase in strength, the speed he traveled when using the Illusory Flash had increased as well.

“Mysteries of War, Celestial Movement!” Tie Ta turned into a streak of golden light as he tailed behind Jian Chen.

Chapter 1327: Setting Foot in the Serpent God Hall

Jian Chen and Tie Ta pursued Tao Zhengtian. Meanwhile, the main entrance of the Octoterra Divine Hall in the territory of the Turtle clan opened up. With the Saint Kings leading them, a large number of clansmen poured out.

“It’s the ruler. The ruler’s returned. Fantastic, this is just fantastic...”

“Did you see? Once the ruler returned, even Tao Zhengtian was scared into fleeing in such a horrendous manner. He dares not face the ruler head-on because he fears death...”

“Long live the ruler! The ruler is invincible...”

The group of clansmen said in high spirits. The respect and admiration they felt for the ruler had already reached an unbelievable level.

The paleness of the five Saint Kings finally eased a bit after holding in their anger for so long. Now that Jian Chen and his powerful friend had returned, they finally possessed the power to deal with the Tao family. They did not need to hide within the divine hall and be verbally abused any longer.

The five of them stared in the direction Jian Chen had traveled off in in interest. They all frowned.

“Odd. Tao Zhengtian has been causing a great disturbance saying he will fight and kill Jian Chen constantly, but now that he has returned, why has he fled without even fighting? Even if they’re worried that they’re no longer our opponents, they still have a divine hall. As long as they hide within the divine hall, we won’t be able to do anything to them. There’s no need for them to flee so quickly,” Mochas said in doubt.

The others nodded as well. They all felt that Tao Zhengtian’s

actions were extremely suspicious.

“I know. Tao Zhengtian’s objective is probably to draw Jian Chen away. He’s probably already set up some trap for Jian Chen,” Qing Yixuan said with a heavy voice. Her complexion had become very ugly. She had already severely offended the Tao family by participating in the battle against them with the Turtle clan, so if Jian Chen died, she could no longer stay in the sea realm.

Suddenly, Qing Yixuan turned to the clansmen behind her. She said, “Everyone enter the divine hall. Tao Zhengtian’s probably set up a trap for Jian Chen. We need to go save him with the divine hall to prevent any accidents.”

The clansmen all revealed different expressions and entered the divine hall as quickly as possible.

Afterward, Qing Yixuan chased after Jian Chen with Lan Jing, Xin Pian, Mochas, and Tao Dou along with the divine hall.

Tao Zhengtian wildly fled as he carried the divine hall. At this moment, his heart violently surged. He was nowhere near calm. He had been frightened by the tremendous presence Jian Chen had released. Just from Jian Chen’s presence, he had deduced that Jian Chen was no weaker than him, possibly even much more powerful, because even he shivered before Jian Chen’s presence.

Other than that, Tao Zhengtian could sense that Jian Chen’s golden-skinned companion was very strong as well, no weaker than himself either.

“God dammit. It’s only been so long! How has the ruler of the Turtle clan’s strength increased by so much?” Tao Zhengtian bitterly grumbled inside. The rate at which the ruler of the Turtle clan was growing had completely exceeded anything he had anticipated.

Behind, Jian Chen and Tie Ta tailed him. One of them was reduced to a blur and seemed to fuse with the surrounding space to

blink across a very great distance, while the other shone with a dazzling, golden light as he shot through the sky like a comet.

The two of them were slightly faster than Tao Zhengtian, so they gradually moved closer.

Very soon, they arrived over a hundred thousand kilometers from the territory of the Turtle clan. They had crossed the territories of many large clans and caused a very large disturbance along the way.

“Tao Zhengtian, this place is far enough away. I’ll make this region of desolate mountains your grave,” Jian Chen suddenly yelled out when they arrived at a mountain range. He pushed the Illusory Flash to the limits of his understanding and his speed skyrocketed. In just a few seconds, he caught up with Tao Zhengtian and condensed a sword in his hand with his Chaotic Force. He stabbed out

“How can he be so fast?!” Tao Zhengtian was shocked, but he did not respond slowly either. With a boom, a tremendous amount of energy erupted from within him, condensing into a layer of armor in the blink of an eye. A trident appeared in his hand as well as he stabbed out as hard as he could.

Boom! Tao Zhengtian’s trident clashed with Jian Chen’s sword and immediately produced a terrifying ripple of energy. It caused the mountains below to collapse. They were reduced to a mess.

Tao Zhengtian’s face changed. With a grunt, he shot back like a broken kite. The trident in his hand dimmed while the armor on him had almost shattered.

The sword in Jian Chen’s hand remained just as powerful as before, without weakening at all. His gaze was cold, and he said, “Tao Zhengtian, your strength remains where it was before. You have not improved at all in the past half a year, so killing me with just that much is wishful thinking.”

“Y-you...” Tao Zhengtian was both shocked and enraged. He pointed at Jian Chen in a speechless manner before roaring out, “Just what has happened in the past half a year!? Why has your strength increased by so much!?” From just that single clash, Tao Zhengtian had become filled with fear. He had discovered, out of shock, that after half a year, he was not the ruler of the Turtle clan’s opponent at all. This matter was shocking and unbelievable.

Tao Zhengtian did not expect Jian Chen to answer his question at all. He turned around and flew into his divine hall, controlling it as he fled. He pushed its speed to the limits as he attempted to reach the territory of the Serpent God Hall as quickly as possible.

Jian Chen sneered as he chased behind with Tie Ta. It was impossible for him to not see through Tao Zhengtian’s scheme since Tao Zhengtian had come in such a bold manner to block the main entrance of the Turtle clan even though Tao Zhengtian knew he could not do anything to them, but he had still purposefully angered them in attempt to draw him out. However, Jian Chen was extremely confident after returning from the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He was not afraid no matter what Tao Zhengtian was counting on.

“So the Serpent God Hall is supporting him,” very soon, Jian Chen understood Tao Zhengtian’s intentions from the direction he fled. Jian Chen immediately revealed a mysterious smile.

“I’ll try you this time, hall master of the Serpent God Hall. I’d like to see just how powerful Saint Emperors are compared to the Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts,” Jian Chen thought. Now that he had reached the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body and reached the Sword Origin realm in terms of comprehension, his strength had increased a bunch. Even without forging the Azulet Swords, he was somewhat confident that he could deal with Saint Emperors. Even if he could not defeat them, he was able to flee with his current strength.

Jian Chen was not in a hurry to smash Tao Zhengtian’s divine

hall. Instead, he concealed his strength and followed along, continuing to travel toward the territory of the Serpent God Hall.

The pursuit lasted for two whole days before Jian Chen finally entered the territory of the Serpent God Hall. The moment Jian Chen stepped over the boundary, Tao Zhengtian almost began to tear up in joy. He was tempted to roar at the sky.

“Hahaha, Jian Chen, your end is here. So what about how great your talent is or how unprecedented you are? You’re still going to meet your end today,” Tao Zhengtian laughed out loud. His greatest enemy was finally going to fall before him, so he felt indescribable joy.

A supreme energy flowed through the surroundings and behind Jian Chen. An extremely powerful energy sealed up the boundary to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, cutting off Jian Chen’s path of escape.

Chapter 1328: Fighting a Saint Emperor

Jian Chen smiled sarcastically. He glanced back at the boundary behind him and calmly said, “Tao Zhengtian, aren’t you celebrating a little too early? It’s still rather difficult to determine today’s outcome.”

Tao Zhengtian stopped and did not continue running. However, he remained hidden within the divine hall. He believed that Jian Chen could do nothing to him no matter what, causing him to chuckle out loud. “Jian Chen, you’re overconfident. Do you really think that you can act as you wish just because your strength has abruptly increased? I admit that I am no longer your opponent, but in this vast sea realm, who knows how many people are more powerful than me? Obviously, there are quite a few experts that can kill you. As of now, you are at the gates of death. No one can save you.”

As soon as Tao Zhengtian finished speaking, the energy of the world in the surroundings suddenly became violent as if it had been listening to his speech. A supreme force filled the surroundings. It became more and more powerful and denser and denser, causing the air to shake. Vaguely enough, it seemed to let out the deep, angry growl of a serpent dragon.

But Jian Chen ignored everything, as if he could not sense the changes occurring around him at all. Only Tie Ta, who stood beside him, stared at the sky in interest. He was tempted to take it on. His eyes were brimming with powerful battle intent. The war god’s blood within him boiled as his body shone with a dazzling golden light.

“What happens to me is not for you to decide. However, this barrier has already determined that you will die today for sure, Tao Zhengtian,” Jian Chen sneered.

Tao Zhengtian chuckled because of his rage and bellowed, “Jian

Chen, your arrogance and ignorance has surpassed everything I was expecting from you. I'm right here, so if you have the power, come and take my life. If you can't do that today, I'll fill your Turtle clan with corpses and make them bleed so much that their blood will form rivers."

Heavy killing intent appeared in Jian Chen's eyes. He coldly said, "Tao Zhengtian, you will never get that chance. Even if the hall master of the Serpent God Hall is protecting you, I will kill you. No one can save you."

With that, the powerful force around Jian Chen immediately became even more violent. Endless amounts of energy of the world gathered from the surroundings before condensing into a figure in the blink of an eye. The figure was a wide-chested, burly, middle-aged man. His face was blurry and obscured. As he stood there, he gave off an extremely powerful presence, like a monarch ruling the world.

"Esteemed hall master, please kill Jian Chen and eliminate any future threats." Tao Zhengtian also discovered the figure completely condensed from energy in the sky while he remained in the divine hall, so he immediately made a request in excitement.

It was a clone condensed by the hall master of the Serpent God Hall by controlling the energy of the world using his mind. The hall master did not need to act personally to deal with Jian Chen since he was not even at the Great Perfection of Saint King. To the hall master, just a clone would be enough to deal with any opponents below Saint Emperor because he was a Saint Emperor, and one that had been a Saint Emperor for many years. He had made a corresponding amount of progress in the realm of cultivation as well.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, I like to see how you kill people before me," said the clone of the hall master. His voice was loud and clear, booming out like rolling thunder, like a serpent dragon's roar. Afterward, he pointed his finger at Jian Chen. It elongated and

thickened into a pillar of energy as it shot toward Jian Chen. The energy in the surroundings constantly surged into his finger, making the pillar more and more powerful. The great force of a Saint Emperor was hidden inside the attack.

Jian Chen showed no fear. He taunted, "Hall master, just a clone of yours does not possess the ability to stop me. It's better if you come personally." Suddenly, Jian Chen's presence underwent a great change. Like a drawn sword, he glowed brighter. He had already reached Sword Origin, so his entire body seemed to have transformed into a sharp sword. He then collided with the energy the hall master had shot over with an unstoppable force. An extremely bright white light appeared around him, wrapping around him while giving off surging sword Qi.

The sword Qi caught the hall master's clone by surprise. It was just far too powerful and far too abnormal. He had lived for countless years and read many secret records, so he was extremely knowledgeable, but he had never seen such sharp sword Qi.

The sword Qi Jian Chen used after reaching Sword Origin was no longer condensed from energy after comprehending the Way of the Sword. Instead, it was a way, a method to use laws.

The clone's attack failed to harm Jian Chen at all. Jian Chen swiftly broke through the energy attack like a sword, having approached the hall master. Sword Qi condensed in his hand as he stabbed at the clone's head. A sliver of the hall master's soul was there, so once that sliver was wiped out, the energy used to condense the clone would disperse.

The hall master was unable to remain as calm as before. His facial expression greatly changed as a hint of disbelief appeared in his eyes. He had never thought that Jian Chen would have become so powerful already.

The hall master reacted extremely quickly despite his shock. During a crucial moment, he retreated to several hundred meters

away as if he had teleported, avoiding Jian Chen's fatal attack. Although he was just a clone, if the soul hidden within the clone was destroyed, he would still suffer an unimaginable injury.

Even to Saint Emperors, injuries of the soul would still be fatal. They were the most difficult to recover from.

Jian Chen seemed to have expected the clone of the hall master to flee long ago, so he immediately used Illusory Flash. He left behind a trail of blurs as he chased after the hall master like he was teleporting as well. With a white flash, the powerful sword Qi in his hand stabbed into the clone's head.

This time, the hall master's clone failed to dodge in time. His head was pierced and most of his soul was immediately obliterated. Only a small fragment was left to flee into the distance.

Jian Chen extended a finger and shot a sword Qi a finger wide at the fragment of the soul, finishing it off as well.

At the same time, a miserable cry rang through the central divine hall within the territory of the Serpent God Hall. Closely following it was a tremendous presence that radiated out of the divine hall, like a slumbering primordial beast had awakened. It shook the entire divine hall.

A figure quickly charged out of the divine hall, storming off into the distance with a supreme presence. It vanished in a single moment, moving extremely fast.

"It's the esteemed hall master. The hall master has never appeared personally over the past few hundred years. He's always been in seclusion..."

"That miserable cry seems to have come from the hall master. What's happened to the great hall master? Has something gone wrong with his cultivation?"

"Just what has happened to the hall master? Why has he left in such a rage with such powerful killing intent? Has someone

angered him?”

The various elders and emissaries discussed the situation within the divine hall. They felt utterly confused and puzzled. Even the few esteemed hall elders did not have an answer.

“I-impossible.” Tao Zhengtian and the four other Saint Kings of the alliance personally witness this exchange. All of them became stunned. They were filled with disbelief.

A clone of the hall master had actually been slain in such an easy fashion. This was an extremely terrifying matter to them.

After all, the hall master was a Saint Emperor. A being who possessed supreme strength. Not to mention the fact that the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was quite accomplished as a Saint Emperor, just a clone of his was enough to easily slay Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

Chapter 1329: Little Resistance

“This is impossible. The esteemed hall master of the Serpent God Hall is one of the three great experts of the sea realm. He can crush someone at the level of a hall elder to death just by sending out a clone of his. How has the clone been slain by the ruler of the Turtle clan...”

“I personally witnessed the strength of the ruler of the Turtle clan a few months ago. He could only fight even-handedly with me at most. How has he become so powerful in just a few short months...”

“Is the ruler of the Turtle clan also an emperor? Was he hiding his strength during the battle several months ago...”

“Was that not an energy clone of the hall master, but the clone of a hall elder...”

The several Saint Kings in the alliance within the divine hall all spoke aloud. All of their faces became extremely ugly.

Without any hesitation at all, Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash to arrive before Tao Zhengtian’s divine hall after slaying the hall master’s clone.

The Illusory Flash was an extremely high level and profound movement technique. Even though Jian Chen’s Chaotic Body was at the fourth layer, it was still useful to him, and his understanding of it had reached an even higher level back in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. However, Jian Chen still felt like he had not grasped the highest possible level of the movement technique.

It was unlike the Heaven’s Stolen Fortune that Jian Chen had obtained back then. Although the battle skill could increase his battle prowess by several folds, the quality of the skill was just too low, making it useless to Saint Rulers.

Boom! Jian Chen struck his palm against the Tao Zhengtian’s

divine hall. Although his palm and the divine hall's huge structure did not match up, the divine hall rumbled while the whole building violently shook.

Jian Chen kept his palm on the divine hall as a layer of silver-white sword Qi appeared, covering his entire hand. The sword Qi clashed with the divine hall, producing a series of creaking sounds. The tough divine hall quickly became riddled with web-like cracks, extending from Jian Chen's hand.

As the master of the divine hall, Tao Zhengtian possessed full control over the structure, so it was impossible for him to miss any changes occurring to it. He immediately became ghastly pale from fright. He knew exactly how powerful the divine hall was. It could emerge unscathed even after taking on attacks from multiple hall-elder-level experts. Yet, it had actually cracked before the ruler of the Turtle clan, which was just far too shocking.

Tao Zhengtian was utterly shocked. His earlier confidence had completely vanished. He dared not to stay any longer and was even more afraid of leaving the divine hall. He immediately directed the structure to flee toward the central divine hall of the Serpent God Hall.

"Tao Zhengtian, do you still think you can leave now?" Jian Chen sneered as the killing intent in his eyes grew heavier. He used the Illusory Flash and left behind a trail of blurs as he quickly pursued the divine hall. The speed Jian Chen had erupted with was far greater than before. He arrived in front of the divine hall in a single moment and clenched his hand into a fist. Chaotic Force wrapped around his entire arm and surged into his fist, causing it to shine with a dark light. Dazzling, powerful sword Qi was hidden inside the light as well.

Boom! Jian Chen hurled his fist forward with an unstoppable force, causing the surrounding space to violently tremble. The punch was extremely powerful, and just the single attack blasted the majestic doors open and caused the entire divine hall to fly

backward.

All the clansmen from the clans that had allied themselves with the Tao family remained hidden in the structure, but the entire divine hall violently shook from Jian Chen's forceful punch so much that all the people hidden inside stumbled and almost fell. Even the Saint Kings shook a few times.

"Oh no, the door of the divine hall has been smashed through by the ruler of the Turtle clan. He can actually smash through this divine hall," said a Saint King from the Tao family alliance. His eyes first became filled fear, then slowly despair.

The other Saint Kings felt the same way. They had all thought of the outcome. Since the ruler of the Turtle could destroy the divine hall, it meant that he had already become an emperor. Even if he was not one, he still possessed an emperor's battle prowess.

Tao Zhengtian was pale-faced as he piloted the divine hall high up in the air before making it quickly fall. He was going to use the base of the divine hall to squash Jian Chen. The divine hall's toughest parts were the base and its main entrance.

The divine hall had already become several thousand meters long and wide. It filled the sky like a gloomy cloud, creating a huge shadow. Powerful strands of the divine hall's power circulated around its base, giving off a great pressure. As the pressure increased, the space below the divine hall became filled with ripples.

Jian Chen stood beneath the divine hall and raised his head to the sky. A gleam of light flashed through his eyes before he raised a hand. He used just a hand to stop the rapidly descending divine hall.

Bang! The moment his hand came in contact with the divine hall, a heavy sound rang out and the divine hall came to a halt. Jian Chen stood in the air as he supported the divine hall with a single hand. He seemed as steady as a mountain, without sinking at all.

The true advantage of a divine hall was their tough exterior. They did not possess very many offensive capabilities. As a result, Jian Chen was able to do this with his current strength. After all, he was no ordinary fighter since he was in possession of the Chaotic Body. His body was extremely powerful.

White light flickered on Jian Chen's arm before he suddenly shook it, sending the divine hall into the air. With the tremble of his arm, the tough base of the divine hall became covered with thick cracks, all caused by the sword Qi.

Suddenly, Jian Chen shot into the air like a loose arrow. He was covered by a layer of powerful sword Qi. At that moment, he seemed to have become a sword himself, a sword of endless power. He collided with the base of the divine hall.

With a great boom, a hole immediately cracked open where Jian Chen collided with the structure. He had already charged into the divine hall while coated in sword Qi, directly making his way up. He smashed through various obstacles and emerged from the roof in the end. He had pierced through the entire structure, producing a clear hole through the entire thing.

Tao Zhengtian had been plucked from the divine hall. Jian Chen emerged with his hand around Tao Zhengtian's neck. Tao Zhengtian still seemed to be dazed since his eyes appeared somewhat confused.

However, he soon understood the current situation he was in and immediately became astounded. He examined Jian Chen, who was only inches away, in utter fright.

Jian Chen carried Tao Zhengtian by the neck as if he had grabbed a chicken. His eyes were cold and filled with heavy killing intent. He sneered, "Tao Zhengtian, I said that no one can save you today."

Tao Zhengtian opened his mouth. He tried to say something, but no voice came out since his neck was in Jian Chen's hands.

Afterward, blood began to pour out of his mouth. His face became sheet-white while his body was drenched in his blood.

Jian Chen had injected his Chaotic Force into Tao Zhengtian's body. The Chaotic Force of the fourth layer was so powerful that even Jian Chen's third layer Chaotic Body was unable to withstand it, let alone Tao Zhengtian who was in possession of a body that was not as tough.

Chaotic Force rampaged within Tao Zhengtian's body, turning his organs to a mess. All his bones, flesh, and blood suffered from the destruction. His entire body turned into mince meat.

At this moment, four figures charged out of the divine hall. They fled into the distance in various directions as quickly as they could. The four Saint Kings of the Tao family had sensed that the situation was bad, so they had already decided to flee by themselves.

"Tie Ta, stop them for me," Jian Chen said to Tie Ta.

Tie Ta said nothing, but he immediately transformed into a golden streak of light in pursuit. He had used the Celestial Movement of the Mysteries of War. It was an extremely advanced technique, far more powerful than the Illusory Flash. It was a secret technique that only warring gods could learn. Tie Ta actually moved even faster than Jian Chen right now.

With a golden flash, Tie Ta had already caught up with one of the people. He heavily injured the Saint King with a casual punch before pursuing the next person.

Jian Chen did not take part in rounding them up. The four fleeing Saint Kings were all captured by Tie Ta, and to prevent them from resisting, Tie Ta had heavily injured them.

"Spare me, ruler. We never intended to become enemies with your Turtle clan. We were all forced by Tao Zhengtian," one of the four people began to plead. He knew that he could flee today, but

he did not want to die like this.

Jian Chen was not wavered by his pleas at all. He coldly stared at them and said, “Many of my clansmen have died by your hands. My clan was almost doomed because of you, almost vanishing from the sea realm permanently. Your final fate will be decided by all the clansmen once I return. Thus, the dead clansmen will receive an explanation for their deaths. I will send you all into an alternative space now. If you resist, I’ll wipe out your soul on the spot.” Jian Chen pulled out the saint artifact and sent all five Saint Kings involved in the alliance into the artifact space. He was not afraid of them causing any trouble since the artifact spirit was there to watch over them.

Chapter 1330: Facing Against the Hall Master (One)

Tao Zhengtian's divine hall had been pierced and was severely damaged. It was nowhere near as powerful as before. Jian Chen condensed a few sword Qi and sent them at the divine hall. Each sword Qi was no weaker than an attack from a Saint Emperor, so they sliced the divine hall into pieces, causing it to fall from the sky.

There were several tens of thousands of direct descendents and experts from the alliance within the divine hall. Even more branch descendents and unimportant members had been dismissed to avoid the trouble. Now that the divine hall was destroyed, all the people hiding in it were exposed, including several dozen Saint Rulers.

Although the people had no idea what had happened outside, they felt that something was off. Seeing how the tough divine hall had actually broken apart, their thoughts were immediately confirmed. Some people with a faster reaction time began to flee into the distance as quickly as they could, but the Saint Rulers fled the fastest out of all of them.

Jian Chen expanded his soul and enveloped a radius of several thousand kilometers. He used his soul to lock onto the Saint Rulers among all the fleeing people, and with a few twitches of his fingers, strands of finger-length sword Qi shot out. He had produced several dozen sword Qi in an extremely short amount of time, slaying all the fleeing Saint Rulers.

The Saint Rulers were unable to resist the sword Qi condensed by Jian Chen after he had reached Sword Origin. They were all slain by the single strand of sword Qi.

In the end, none of the Saint Rulers from the alliance managed to flee. All of their souls were destroyed. Jian Chen did not hunt

down the people below Saint Ruler. His status was different. He was not interested in killing them, and if he killed too many people, he would suffer the punishment of Celestial Decay.

However, the alliance was destined to decline now that it had lost all these Saint Rulers and Saint Kings because there were far more experts in the sea realm than the Tian Yuan Continent. Without Saint Rulers or even Saint Kings watching over them, it would be very difficult for an organization to develop.

With a wave of Jian Chen's hand, several dozen Space Rings flew over. These were all rings that the Saint Rulers wore. They contained everything the Saint Rulers had saved up over their lives. It was a very great sum of wealth to the Turtle clan.

After that, Jian Chen used his soul to sweep through the divine hall, checking every corner inside. However, he failed to find anything valuable.

"Jian Chen, the hall master has personally come," Tie Ta said with a muffled voice. He looked into the distance. His eyes were filled with a powerful killing intent.

Jian Chen had sensed the presence as well even without Tie Ta's warning. An extremely powerful presence was rapidly approaching the area.

"In the Xuanhuang Microcosm, I could kill Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts, and we even killed a Class 10 one. I wonder how much more powerful Saint Emperors are compared to Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts," Jian Chen thought to himself. He felt an urge to take on the hall master. He currently wanted to find a Saint Emperor to test out his own strength.

Although he could kill Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts in the Xuanghuang Microcosm, they lacked intelligence and special abilities. The experience he gained when fighting them was nowhere near as rich as when fighting experienced fighters. Being able to slay Xuanhuang beasts only meant that he possessed attacks

no weaker than a Saint Emperor. However, he still did not know his overall strength.

This was because Saint Emperors were far more difficult to handle than Class 9 Xuanguang beasts. A Saint Emperor's method of fighting was flexible, and they had also comprehended the mysteries of the world and knew various secret techniques. Their battle prowess could not be compared to Xuanguang beasts that only possessed brute strength.

A tremendous pressure surged in front of them, quickly spreading through the empty air. The space it passed by actually thickened like mud.

A figure quickly flew over from the distant horizon. He had already fused with the surrounding space and made no sound at all as he flew. He was extremely fast.

In less than a second, the figure traversed the several dozen kilometers at an unbelievable speed and arrived before Jian Chen. Immediately, a vast pressure filled the surroundings, causing the air to tremble as the ground below sank.

Jian Chen felt his body tighten. His clothes immediately began to stick to his body. At that moment, he felt like he was holding up a huge mountain. It was extremely heavy and breathing became much more difficult.

"Saint Emperors really are more powerful than Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts," Jian Chen shivered inside. This was not the first time he had faced a Saint Emperor, but he had now gained an even better understanding of the strength of Saint Emperors with this.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, how dare you!" The hall master of the Serpent God Hall was bathed in blue light, only revealing a blurry silhouette. His tone was icy and filled with an unsuppressable rage and killing intent. He had underestimated Jian Chen before and had sent out a clone to deal with Jian Chen. Not only did he fail,

but his clone was also slain, causing his soul to become extremely injured. This was a permanent stain to his name as the hall master who reigned supreme in a region of the sea realm. He was extremely furious over this matter.

Jian Chen's chaotic neidan spewed out strands of Chaotic Force, filling every corner of his body. He activated the supreme defenses of the Chaotic Body to resist the hall master's pressure. He said with composure, "Esteemed hall master of the Serpent God Hall, I never thought you would arrive so quickly. I was just unable to hold back just then, so I accidentally wiped out your clone. Even the fleeing fragment was dispersed by me. I shouldn't have caused any losses for the esteemed hall master, right?"

Sparks immediately seemed to flash around the hall master when he heard such an excuse. It was extremely frightening. He angrily replied, "Ruler of the Turtle clan, you still don't have the right to act boldly before me. Even if your strength has increased, it is still as significant as an ant before me. Since you've set foot in the territory of the Serpent God Hall today, I'll bury you here for all of eternity." With that, the hall master extended an arm toward Jian Chen. The moment he extended his arm, it immediately transformed into an elongated serpent dragon's claw and appeared before Jian Chen.

"Aren't you saying that a little too early? We still don't know whether or not you can make me stay today, but it'll be even more impossible to bury me here," Jian Chen sneered. Even with his rich experience of killing Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts, he still did not dare to be careless while fighting a Saint Emperor. He immediately pushed the Chaotic Body to its limits and clenched his right hand, condensing a strand of dazzling white sword Qi from nothing. He then stabbed at the claw.

Ding! The claw and sword Qi collided and produced a metallic sound. Jian Chen only left behind a shallow mark on the claw with sword Qi. It was not like the damage he had dealt to Tao

Zhengtian's divine hall, where he possessed absolute power.

Jian Chen was blown away by the strike. He retreated several kilometers before finally dispersing all the force that remained from the claw. He became very stern. From just the clash, he understood that the hall master's personal strength was many times more powerful than the clone from before.

"What tough claws. My attack barely managed to leave a mark on them," Jian Chen thought. Dealing with the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was going to be much more difficult than he had imagined.

What he did not know was that the hall master was flabbergasted. If his face had been visible, Jian Chen would have discovered it filled with disbelief. The hall master stared at the droplet of blue blood that oozed out of his palm in a rather stunned manner. He did not return to his senses for quite some time.

He was a serpent dragon, so his body was no weaker than magical beasts. His claws were the toughest parts of his body as well as his most powerful weapon. He had fought against people of the same cultivation level as him in the past before he had reached Saint Emperor and no one had managed to damage them. However, the ruler of the Turtle clan had actually managed to leave a mark, which really shocked him.

Chapter 1331: Facing Against the Hall Master (Two)

“Y-you’ve already become an emperor?” The hall master exclaims. He felt extremely shocked at that moment. He could still remember when Jian Chen had to flee in an awful condition after he had sent the four divine generals after Jian Chen when he had first appeared in the sea realm all those years ago. Yet now, Jian Chen had reached a level where he could stand on equal ground with the hall master and even harm the hall master. It was impossible for him to not be shocked.

The hall master even began to believe that Jian Chen was also an emperor and had intentionally hid his strength in the past or that his strength had fallen due to injury, because there was no one who could increase their strength at such a rate. At the very least, he had never heard of someone who could.

“No, you’re still not an emperor. The energy you used earlier was weird. What is that energy for it to be so powerful?” The hall master asked with a heavy voice. His eyes shone as he studied Jian Chen. He discovered what was off very quickly.

Jian Chen sneered, “What the energy is is not important. More importantly, the energy can harm you.” Jian Chen had reached Sword Origin and could now condense sword Qi from nothing. A two-meter-long sword Qi condensed from thin air. It glowed with a powerful white light as it shot toward the hall master with lightning-like speed.

The sword Qi was a condensation of laws, a way. Even though Jian Chen had only gained a basic understanding of it, it was still extremely powerful. When the sword Qi shot out, the powerful sword intent radiating from it seemed to influence the surroundings, turning everything around it into sword Qi. Standing near it would have felt like standing in a sea composed

from countless strands of sword Qi. An abnormally sharp feeling could be felt from every direction.

This time, the hall master clearly observed Jian Chen's process of condensing the powerful energy, which surprised him very much. He had initially thought that it would be extremely draining for Jian Chen to use the energy or that Jian Chen would even need to pay a certain price. Never did he think that Jian Chen would be able to use it without a twitch of his face, easily drawing it out.

The hall master became stern. He no longer dared to be as careless as before. A vast energy surged out of his body, making it seem like a ball of blue flames had coated his body. He then condensed the flames into a blue serpent dragon that was several hundred meters long.

The blue dragon roared at the sky and the sound shook up the surroundings, causing space to ripple. Even the energy of the world became violent, affecting almost the entire territory of the Serpent God Hall and alarming countless people. It then lunged toward Jian Chen with its huge, gaping mouth.

Jian Chen's sword Qi was swallowed by the dragon, but the next moment, there was a great boom. The dragon's head was blown into nothingness and even its body cracked apart. Terrifying ripples of energy wreaked havoc on the surroundings, causing this region of space to tremble violently and show signs of collapsing.

If this had not happened in the sea realm where space was extremely stable due to the barrier's protection, the clash probably would have reduced the surrounding several kilometers into darkness.

Even though the space held together, the barrier-buffed space had almost reached the limits that it could withstand.

With a movement, Jian Chen charged toward the hall master using the Illusory Flash, leaving behind a blur. He was emotionless while his gaze was sharp. A powerful, white light flickered in his

right hand, fusing with his Chaotic Force to form a sword that he used to stab at the hall master.

The hall master did not panic in the face of danger. He crossed his arms and created a shield with his powers as a Saint Emperor. He had gained an understanding of Jian Chen's power after testing it out before. Other than it possessing a certain sharpness, it was no different than a Saint Emperor's power.

Boom!

With a boom, Jian Chen's sword Qi struck the hall master's shield, immediately causing it to fill with web-like cracks. It slowly shattered, but it had successfully blocked Jian Chen's attack.

At this moment, space suddenly froze, trapping Jian Chen before immobilizing him.

This was a Saint Emperor freezing space. The frozen space was far more powerful than any Saint King at Great Perfection could achieve.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, you've expended that power that's on the level of an emperor. There's no time for you to condense anymore of it. I'd like to see how you withstand my attack," the hall master sneered as killing intent permeated the surroundings. His right hand turned into a serpent dragon's claw again as it reached for Jian Chen's heart.

This was the moment he had been waiting for. He had already noticed that Jian Chen needed to recondense the power every time he wanted to use it. As a result, he had decided to use a shield to block Jian Chen's sword Qi. Then he would attempt to heavily injure Jian Chen before the sword Qi could be condensed again.

Jian Chen's eyes exploded with a resplendent light. His entire body began to glow, becoming enshrouded by the light of the sword that protected him. Although he was trapped, there was no need for him to move to condense the sword Qi. All he needed was

a thought. As long as his soul remained intact, he could utilize the sword Qi at any moment.

The hall master struck Jian Chen's protective shield with a powerful claw. A clear screech was produced when the claw clashed with the light while the light immediately became riddled with marks.

However, it was clearly very difficult to block a claw from the hall master with just the light. The light was pierced and the claw continued toward Jian Chen's heart. However, the force behind the attack had been weakened after puncturing the protective light.

Spurt! The claw stabbed into Jian Chen's body and into his chest, digging out a bloody heart.

Jian Chen paled, but he did not grunt at all. Just as the hall master's claw stabbed into his chest, his right hand had reached only inches away from the hall master.

The hall master only felt scorn for this attack. What he truly feared was the sword Qi condensed by Jian Chen because only that could harm him. He did not need to treat Jian Chen with any importance if the sword Qi was not there to assist him. He assumed that Jian Chen's fist would be very powerful, but as a serpent dragon, his body was extremely tough, so he did not pay too much attention to it.

Bang! Jian Chen's fist was extremely powerful. It actually created a heavy sound when it landed on the hall master's body.

The hall master's face suddenly changed as he felt a piercing sensation. A powerful sword Qi suddenly erupted through his body when Jian Chen fist hit him, making him suffer.

Chapter 1332: Facing Against the Hall Master (Three)

The hall master of the Serpent God Hall produced a grunt. His body violently shook as a stream of blue blood rolled from the corner of his lips. Blue was the color of his blood.

The powerful sword Qi wreaked havoc within the hall master's body. Not only did it destroy his organs, blood, and flesh, it even caused the vitality of his body to quickly leak away.

Although he possessed an extremely powerful body, that toughness was only apart of the exterior of his body. His interior was still very fragile. His organs were as fragile as paper before the sword Qi that was no weaker than an emperor's power.

The hall master angrily roared at the sky. His roar seemed a little like a serpent dragon's roar, making tremors form within several hundred thousand kilometers. A supreme energy erupted from his body. He was using all the power within him to suppress the sword Qi in his body. His left hand turned into a claw that swung at Jian Chen's head. At the same time, he controlled space to restrict Jian Chen's movements in an attempt to wipe out Jian Chen's soul in a single stroke.

Although he had taken Jian Chen's heart in the clash, Jian Chen had managed to heavily injure him as well. The loss of a heart was nothing too severe to a Saint King. Another one would grow if they spent some time recovering and ingested some heavenly resources. However, Jian Chen had deposited a strand of sword Qi within him, forcing him to use everything he had to suppress it. As a result, the hall master was even more heavily injured from his carelessness, making him extremely furious.

A layer of dazzling light permeated Jian Chen's surroundings, making him seem like he was enveloped by the light. He seemed like a miniature son.

The protective light was something that Jian Chen had discovered on the way back from the Xuanghuang Microcosm. The light turned his body into something similar to a hedgehog. Not only was he covered with spikes that would injure his opponent as soon as they came in contact with him, but the light also possessed defensive abilities as well. Jian Chen no longer feared a Saint Emperor's ability to freeze space with the light's protection. Just when the space was frozen a second time, it was shattered by the light around Jian Chen. Afterward, he threw out a punch as hard as he could. It was tough and domineering and collided with the hall master's claw with a seemingly-unstoppable force.

Boom!

The fist and claw collided and produced a deafening sound. A violent storm of energy brewed in the surroundings, causing the space there to violently tremble. The energy possessed some scattered Chaotic Force and sword Qi.

Both the hall master and Jian Chen were thrown back. The hall master regained his footing several hundred meters away. The blue light around him grew brighter and brighter. He was currently taking advantage of this moment to wipe out the sword Qi within him.

Jian Chen, on the other hand, only managed to stabilize himself after being thrown back several thousand meters. The light around him had become rather dull, but it soon returned to how it was before. His left hand had become a bloody mess. He was clearly at a disadvantage during the earlier clash with the hall master.

The blood on Jian Chen's hand quickly vanished and returned to his body through his wounds. Even his injuries began to close up at a visible rate. Even his chest, which had been punctured by the hall master, was the same. The Chaotic Force displayed its terrifying regenerative abilities. It could be used in crucial moments of battle.

Suddenly, the energy in the surroundings began to gather from all directions, condensing in the hall master's surroundings. The hall master had already cleansed the sword Qi within him and now his hands were currently dancing around him. He was gathering the energy in the surroundings to use an absolutely secret technique. The commotion was just shocking.

Jian Chen was surprised inside. He could sense that the hall master was gathering all the energy in the surrounding radius of a hundred thousand kilometers. Even with the hall master's strength as a Saint Emperor, he needed to do something so tremendous as to use a secret technique. It was difficult to imagine just how powerful it would be.

Jian Chen no longer hesitated and attacked first. He used the Illusory Flash and rapidly approached the hall master, using all he had to stop the hall master from continuing what he was doing.

The hall master shot back, avoiding Jian Chen completely. However, Jian Chen relentlessly pursued him as a blur. He was no slower than the hall master.

The hall master was currently casting the secret technique, so he was unable to stop. He could not avoid Jian Chen, so he immediately turned into a half-serpent, half-man monstrosity. His lower half resembled a snake while his upper half remained human. His tail whipped toward Jian Chen at the speed of lightning.

Jian Chen did not dodge the attack. He used his sword Qi to strike the tail. With a crisp sound, several dozen hand-sized scales were cut off. A deep gash appeared on the hall master's tail and blood profusely poured out.

However, the hall master did not do anything in response to Jian Chen's attack. He continued to use his tail to attack Jian Chen while his hands continued to dance before him, alternating between different hand seals. He continued to cast his secret

technique.

The secret technique was extremely powerful. He needed to charge it up even when casting it with his strength. This was the first time he had used it as well, and he was actually using it on an opponent who was not even an emperor.

The battle prowess and unprecedented talent Jian Chen had exhibited had already caused the hall master to feel dread. Jian Chen was fighting a Saint Emperor without being a Saint Emperor. If he did end up becoming one, barely anyone in the world be his opponent, so the hall master had made up his mind. He would take Jian Chen's life today no matter how dire the consequences would be.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The hall master quickly swept his tail toward Jian Chen as a blur. Whenever it struck the ground, there would be a heavy sound. Every single attack was enough to create a bottomless hole in the earth. Dust and sand was kicked into the air, causing the battleground to become hazy.

Blood ran from the corner of Jian Chen's mouth since he had been struck several times. He was quite injured, but was still struggling to stop the hall master. On the other hand, the hall master's tail had become bloody as well. A large portion of the scales on it were gone, having been reduced to a mess by the sword Qi.

Tie Ta had watched the battle from afar with brimming interest as battle intent burned within his eyes. He mumbled, "This is also a Class 9 Magical Beast, but it's even more difficult to deal with than the Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. Fighting against magical beasts with intelligence really is much more difficult than fighting against those without it. I need to take part as well." A dazzling, golden light rose from Tie Ta's body as an axe appeared in his hand. He swung it at the hall master from afar.

The hall master was surprised inside. Although he had sensed Tie Ta existence long ago, he did not pay any attention to it because the presence Tie Ta gave off was only of the 16th Star. The hall master had never thought that Tie Ta would be a deviant as well, able to exhibit attacks no weaker than emperors with his strength at the 16th Star.

The hall master dodged Tie Ta's attack, which was followed by a flash. The hall master's tail was swung toward Tie Ta with lightning-like speed.

Boom! Tie Ta was struck in the back and his entire body was blown away. However, he was very tough since he was war god. After taking a blow from a Saint Emperor, his battle prowess was not influenced, so he quickly flew back to join the fight. He worked with Jian Chen to deal with the hall master.

Chapter 1333: The Serpent Ancestor

Tie Ta was injured from the first clash, but not only did the injury fail to disturb his morale, it even made the battle intent within him burn hotter. The resplendent light on him became even brighter and more dazzling, illuminating the entire area. The light dyed the sky gold.

At that moment, Tie Ta, Jian Chen, and the hall master seemed like three miniature suns of different colors. Each of them glowed bright while their radiance illuminated the sky. It was a grand view.

“Mysteries of War, Mortality-breaker!” Tie Ta yelled out as he radiated with a supreme battle intent that permeated the surroundings. He held his axe with two hands as it exploded with light. Terrifying energy pulsed from it as the surrounding space became very unstable.

Tie Ta swung his axe, which turned into a resplendent streak of light, toward the upper half of the hall master. He wanted to disrupt his process of casting the secret technique.

At the same time, Jian Chen dealt an extremely powerful attack. A three-meter-long sword Qi had appeared in his hand, shining with a powerful, white light before he toward the hall master across from him. The attack contained strands of Chaotic Force.

The hall master finally became stern. Even though neither one of them had reached Saint Emperor, the battle prowess that both Jian Chen and Tie Ta displayed was extraordinarily terrifying, no weaker than an emperor. It was equivalent to facing two experts of the same level as him right now.

At the same time, they were not two ordinary emperors either. Jian Chen’s sword Qi matched the power of emperors, but it possessed a sharpness that an emperor’s power did not possess, causing it to become even more powerful than an emperor’s power

in a certain sense. On the other hand, Tie Ta's battle intent could unknowingly influence the souls of people. The hall master could not help but waver when his soul was struck by the battle intent. He could feel his morale collapse bit by bit. Other than that, Tie Ta's Mysteries of War were abilities that completely surpassed Saint Tier Battle Skills. They were absolutely horrifying when it came to power. Some of Tie Ta's attacks, with his current strength, were even more terrifying than someone who had recently become a Saint Emperor.

The hall master's tail surged as it cracked through the air. He wanted to use his tail to stop Jian Chen and Tie Ta. He had already reached the final stages of casting his secret technique.

Tie Ta's axe landed on the tail and left behind a vicious gash. Blue blood shot into the air like fireworks.

Jian Chen went after the hall master's head from the other side. He was like a streak of light, having pushed his speed to the limits.

In the end, the hall master avoided Jian Chen's fatal attack. Although the sword Qi failed to hit his head, his body was still pierced. The sword Qi emerged from the hall master's back with a dazzling glow, piercing through his chest.

The hall master grunted as blood flowed from the corner of his lips. His face had become pale. Another strand of sword Qi was deposited in his body, beginning to wreak havoc the moment the sword Qi made contact with him.

"You're all dead today! None of you will escape here!" The hall master bellowed at the sky. The battle was shameful for him. With his status, he had actually been reduced to such a horrible position by two juniors who were not even Saint Emperors. This was not something he could endure.

A vast pressure radiated from the hall master in a bold manner, filling the surroundings. Even the experts several hundred thousand kilometers away could clearly sense it.

The hall master had finally completed casting the absolutely secret technique. A huge serpent dragon soared through the sky. It was over thirty thousand meters long and radiated a terrifying pressure. Not only did it alarm countless experts in the territory of the Serpent God Hall, even the experts in nearby regions of the Heaven's Spirit Hall and Sea Goddesss Hall sensed it as well.

All the experts paled in fright as they gazed over from afar. This was because they could actually feel fear forming in the depths of their souls from this pressure. Some of their legs had even begun to tremble, almost causing them to drop to their knees involuntarily.

The huge dragon traveled through the sky. Every single scale flickered with light. It roared at the sky and the sound was deafening. It then shifted its eyes onto Jian Chen and Tie Ta, becoming fixated on them.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta shivered inside. They both stopped their attacks as they uneasily stared at the dragon in the sky. They had faced against a Class 10 Xuanhuang beast before, so they possessed a certain level of understanding in regard to power at that level. They felt like they were facing a Class 10 Xuanhuang beast from the presence radiating from the serpent dragon.

Several streaks of light shot over from afar with lightning-like speed before stopping several dozen kilometers away. They were spectators watching the battle from afar.

They were the hall elders of the Serpent God Hall. Every single one of them was a Saint King at Great Perfection. They had tailed the hall master when he had left and only arrived here just now.

“This is the serpent ancestor. He was the strongest hall master in ancient times, having reached the peak of emperor within two thousand years of cultivation. He was only a step away from surpassing Saint Emperor, but unfortunately, he failed to break through within the next eight thousand years. He died with a

grudge. The hall master has actually summoned the serpent ancestor's deceased spirit using a secret technique so that he can display his former glory once again," a hall elder cried out. He was filled with disbelief. He struggled to imagine just how powerful the opponent of the hall master, a leader he respected very much, was for him to resort to something like this.

"Who are the two people fighting the hall master? How can they force the hall master to use something like that? Are they emperors as well? But that's impossible. There are no other emperors other than the hall masters of the Heaven's Spirit Hall and the Sea Goddess Hall besides him. The presence and ripples of energies from the two people confirm that it's impossible for them to be the other two hall masters."

"Oh no, the hall master's been injured. His tail has already been reduced to a bloody mess."

The esteemed hall elders of the Serpent God Hall all cried out as shock filled them. Since when did two great experts like that appear in the sea realm? How could they force the hall master into such an awful position? After all, the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was an emperor who had reached that level of cultivation many years ago. He had traveled a very long distance in that realm of cultivation.

The serpent ancestor suddenly opened its mouth and sucked at Jian Chen and Tie Ta. Immediately, a terrifying suction force appeared, pulling Jian Chen and Tie Ta off of the ground. They uncontrollably flew toward its mouth. They could not break free from it no matter what.

"Mysteries of War, Destruction!" Tie Ta bellowed as he began to shine with a dazzling, golden light. A supreme battle intent fused with his axe as an invisible energy. He then swung his axe at the serpent ancestor.

Jian Chen also struck out as hard as he could. Silver-white light

enveloped his entire body, and with a wave of his hand, he shot out a three-meter-long sword Qi, cooperating with Tie Ta's attack.

However, their two attacks failed to injure the serpent ancestor. He was a peak Saint Emperor in the past and had remained like that for eight thousand years. His strength had reached a shocking level. Even if he was already dead, the spirit summoned by the hall master was still extremely powerful.

"Quickly cut through the surrounding space so the suction will be dispersed through there. It can stop us from being sucked away," said Jian Chen. When he had attacked just before and shook up space, he could clearly feel the suction force weaken slightly. The strength of the serpent ancestor really surprised Jian Chen. He was unwilling to be sucked away no matter what. After all, this was not a mindless Xuanhuang beast. It was being controlled by the hall master.

Tie Ta did not hesitate to try Jian Chen's suggestion. He immediately struck the space in front of him with Jian Chen. Their attacks caused the space to violently tremble before a few slight cracks appeared. These cracks were effective. They allowed the two of them to break free from the suction force. They then made their way around the serpent ancestor's body on different sides and sent barrages at it with all they had.

The hall master had vanished. He had disappeared into the serpent ancestor's body. Although the serpent ancestor temporarily possessed its ancient might because its spirit had been summoned, the person truly in control of the whole thing was the hall master of the Serpent God Hall.

Chapter 1334: Yadriam Appears

Clang! Clang!

Jian Chen and Tie Ta's attacks landed on the body of the serpent ancestor, but a metallic sound was the only thing produced. Although the serpent ancestor's body was condensed from the surrounding energy of the world by the hall master, the body still possessed some of its former prowess since it contained a sliver of the serpent ancestor's deceased spirit. It was so tough that it had reached a shocking level. Both Jian Chen and Tie Ta were unable to harm it at all. It was like the serpent ancestor from the ancient times had returned, which was extremely terrifying.

However, it was still only a secret technique. It was only able to demonstrate a certain level of the serpent ancestor's strength, unable to display all of his might from the past. Although Jian Chen and Tie Ta failed to harm the serpent ancestor at all, they could clearly feel that a vast amount of energy within it was rapidly being consumed.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta remained silent as they continued to attack the serpent ancestor as fast as they could to waste its energy. Both of them understood that the secret technique the hall master had cast would break once the energy ran out, and thus, the serpent ancestor would vanish.

The hall master, who was currently in the serpent ancestor's head, knew Jian Chen and Tie Ta's intentions. He immediately sneered and said, "This secret technique was personally left behind by the serpent ancestor. It's the treasure of our Serpent God Hall. I've expended so much vitality to cast this secret technique, so how can I let you break through it so easily?" The serpent ancestor's body churned in the sky. As if it was just far too big, the entire sky seemed to be filled. When it moved, it immediately caused the air in the surrounding area to surge, causing wild gales and a series of crackles. The serpent ancestor moved far too quickly, so the air

crackled from static electricity.

The serpent ancestor arrived at an altitude of thirty thousand meters in the air within a single movement, not too far away from the barrier of the sea realm. Afterward, it struck out with a claw, enveloping a region several hundred meters wide. It locked down that region as it fell toward Jian Chen and Tie Ta with lightning-like speed.

When the claw fell, a mysterious energy surged out, causing the space to ripple. Jian Chen and Tie Ta's faces changed slightly. Although they had not become trapped, they felt like they had sunk into mud, where their movements became abnormally sluggish. Even with his protective glow, Jian Chen was affected.

The serpent ancestor's claw continued through the air with little resistance from anything. Jian Chen and Tie Ta were unable to dodge, so they had no other choice but to attack the claw as hard as they could since the claw was rapidly approaching them.

With a boom, Jian Chen and Tie Ta's attacks struck the claw, but they did not prevent it from falling down. In the end, the claw still moved through where they were and viciously smashed into the ground, creating a heavy rumble. The earth violently shook as the mountains became riddled with cracks. It was as if a great earthquake had occurred, spreading for several hundred thousand kilometers.

The huge imprint of a claw appeared on the ground. It was so deep that it seemed bottomless. Jian Chen and Tie Ta seemed to have disappeared, having been pushed into the ground. Only a huge serpent dragon hovered in the air.

A burning golden and white light twinkled from the bottomless pit as Jian Chen and Tie Ta flew out together, bathed in golden and white light. The light was clearly dimmer than before, and both their faces were rather pale. A streak of blood ran from the corner of their lips. They were in horrible conditions, having been heavily

injured.

A tremendous pressure fell from the sky. The serpent's tail whipped down from above like a bolt of lightning. Just the pressure of the air it had created was enough to cause the ground to sink.

Every single strike from the serpent ancestor was significant. Jian Chen and Tie Ta separated and dodged as fast as they could.

This was a tough battle. Jian Chen and Tie Ta could easily hunt Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts in the Xuanhuang Microcosm by themselves, even peak Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts didn't pose a problem to them, but the hall master was a Saint Emperor that possessed intelligence, many secret techniques, and rich battle experience. He was far more difficult to deal with than peak Class 9 Xuanhuang beasts.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta worked together as they fought against the hall master in an intense fashion in the sky. Their battle was extremely destructive. The ripples from the battle wreaked havoc in the surrounding hundred thousand kilometers. The ground was reduced to a mess, completely different from how it had looked before.

Jian Chen and Tie Ta received heavy injuries several times. If it was anyone else, they probably would have fallen long ago, but one of them was in possession of the Chaotic Body while the other was a war god. They were in no sense ordinary. They were extremely tough, which was why they could last so long and maintain their peak-condition prowess.

The three of them fought for half a day without stopping. Even the hall master had become rather exhausted. He rarely ever experienced battles after he had become an emperor, and it had been a long time since he had fought in such an intense fashion. This infuriated him, but also made him feel extremely helpless because Jian Chen and Tie Ta were just powerful enough. They

seemed like they were invincible where they possessed unending vitality. No matter how heavily injured they became, they could endure their wounds while their battle prowess did not decrease at all.

Quite a few people had gathered in the surroundings now. The battle between the three of them had alerted half of the sea realm. Not only had the experts in the territory of Serpent God Hall hurried over, there were even people from the Heaven's Spirit Hall and Sea Goddess Hall that had come over to watch as well. All the people who had come, without any exception, were Saint Kings. They all remained several dozen kilometers away and none of them dared to get any closer because they could not endure the ripples that were created in this battle.

The most eye-catching part of the crowd was a majestic divine hall. It was the Octoterra Divine Hall that Jian Chen had left in the Turtle clan. Because they were worried about Jian Chen's safety, Qing Yixuan and the others had hurried over from the Sea Goddess Hall's territory in the divine hall.

The Saint Kings gathered in the divine hall watched the three emperors fight their intense battle with great attention. Every single one of them was shocked because they had believed that the sea realm only possessed three emperors, the leaders of the three territories. However, two experts had suddenly appeared and could fight the hall master of the Serpent God Hall even-handedly. Not only did this shock Qing Yixuan and the others, all the Saint Kings who witnessed this felt the same.

Saint Kings at Great Perfection did not possess this strength. The only explanation was that the two experts were emperors as well.

At this moment, a similar thought crossed all their minds. Just where did these two unfamiliar emperors come from?

“Why do I feel like the emperor shining with a dazzling, golden light seems familiar, as if I've seen him before?” Tai Dou stared at

Tie Ta and asked a question out of curiosity.

“I sense that familiarity as well. He’s extremely similar to the golden-skinned friend that would stay Jian Chen’s side,” Qing Yixuan said in a heavy voice as her eyes shone with interest, as if she wanted to see through the two of them.

This was due to the fact that both Jian Chen and Tie Ta were enshrouded by a powerful layer of light, making it impossible to distinguish who they were. They only seemed like two streaks of light that moved about rapidly.

“I feel that as well. If that really is Jian Chen’s friend, then is the other emperor...” Lan Jing said before pausing. However, what he had said was enough to cause the hearts of the other Saint Kings in the divine hall to churn.

“Recurrence of the Serpent Ancestor! Spiritual Sacrifice!” The hall master roared at the sky. Seeing how he was unable to kill Jian Chen and Tie Ta after so long, he planned on using his final trump card. He would sacrifice the spirit of the serpent ancestor to make it even stronger and, hence, deal the killing blow to Jian Chen and Tie Ta in one stroke. He would not be able to remain at ease if Jian Chen and Tie Ta did not die today.

Immediately, an even more terrifying presence radiated from the serpent ancestor. At that moment, the deceased spirit seemed to have become a bundle of flames as it roared away. The spirit was currently being sacrificed and approached destruction.

“It’s time for you to stop!” At this moment, a long sigh rang through the surroundings. Several dozen kilometers away, a slender beauty shrouded in blue light appeared.

With a flash, she traversed the distance and stopped before Jian Chen and Tie Ta. She calmly stared at the hall master and said, “In the past, the serpent ancestor was supreme. No one among the four races was his opponent. He stood as the most powerful in the word. He was loved and admired by everyone. After he passed

away, his spirit remained, always secretly protecting the Serpent God Hall, which has earned him all our admiration. Are you trying to destroy the serpent ancestor's spirit over your personal grievances today?"

"You little bi-Yadriam, you have no right to stick your nose in the matters of my Serpent God Hall as a part of the Sea Goddess Hall," the hall master of the Serpent God Hall coldly responded, but he showed no intention of stopping. He continued on the path of sacrificing the serpent ancestor's spirit.

Chapter 1335: Emperor of the Turtle Clan

“Kang Tai, do not be stubborn. Out of all the past emperors in our sea realm, the serpent ancestor was the one most worthy of our respect and admiration. He did many things for our Sea race in his lifetime and possesses great merit. How can I watch you destroy his spirit?” Yadriam gently replied. Her voice was calm and without emotion. With that, a vast presence no weaker than the hall master of the Serpent God Hall radiated from her body. Terrifying pulses of energy erupted like flash floods and surged through the surroundings.

The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall personally struck out. She formed a seal with a jade-white hand of hers and gathered energy from the surroundings. She was casting a powerful secret technique.

At that moment, all the spectators focused their attention and became fixated on the sights of the battle. Every single one of them had gazes filled with excitement and anticipation. The two hall masters were about to clash. It had already been several years since the last battle between emperors, so it obviously roused everyone’s interest. They wanted to see who was weaker.

“Let’s retreat some more just in case we are injured by the ripples of battle,” a Saint King suggested while watching the spectacle from afar. He then immediately retreated over ten kilometers. He arrived at a location he believed to be safe.

The other people felt the same. They were already far away enough from the battlefield, but they all retreated a certain amount of distance once again. Even the hall elders of the Serpent God Hall did the same.

“Yadriam, are you really going to fight me?” The hall master of the Serpent God Hall’s eyes brightly burned with rage. He stared fixedly at the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall while his eyes

burned with heavy hatred. He knew that it would be impossible for him to kill Jian Chen and Tie Ta if she wanted to protect the two of them, which was something he was very unwilling to let happen. If he did not eliminate the two of them today, they would become a great problem in the future.

The energy in the surroundings gathered in Yadriam's hand before condensing into a silver-white trident. Yadriam wielded it with a single hand and said, "I have to stop you to protect the spirit of the serpent ancestor from being ended by your hands." Yadriam acted in an extremely decisive manner as she stabbed her trident at the huge serpent dragon as soon as she finished speaking.

The trident turned into a resplendent streak of silver-white light as it crossed the space at an unbelievable speed. It shot toward the head of the serpent ancestor.

Boom!

With a loud sound, the serpent ancestor's head suddenly exploded, expanding in all directions as ripples of energy. It caused a violent storm to occur in the surroundings.

Yadriam's strike was a significant blow, destroying the hall master of the Serpent God Hall's secret technique in a single stroke. As soon as the head exploded, the serpent ancestor's body quickly began to collapse into energy before dispersing into the surroundings.

The tremendous body of the serpent ancestor was condensed by the hall master of the Serpent God Hall through a secret technique. Now that Yadriam had dispersed its energy, she had saved the serpent ancestor's spirit, preventing the hall master from using his trump card.

The hall master's body was forced out as well. He appeared high in the sky. He was in a horrible shape, having lost his former awe long ago. However, his eyes shone with a vicious and penetrating light and were filled with an endless fury and hatred.

Yadriam no longer paid any attention to the hall master. She turned to Jian Chen and Tie Ta and only produced an emotional sigh after quite some time, “Jian Chen, you’ve really taken me aback today. I never thought that your strength would have reached such a level in such a short amount of time. Her majesty really has not chosen the wrong person.”

“I thank the hall master for your praise,” Jian Chen replied with clasped hands. Although he was in horrible shape, he was brimming with energy.

“Return soon. There are even more important matters to deal with,” Yadriam softly warned him before leaving as a blur with a single movement. She disappeared into the horizon in the blink of an eye.

Jian Chen stared at the hall master of the Serpent God Hall, who was also in a horrible shape, and could not help but sneer, “Esteemed hall master, you probably never expected an outcome like this, right? You got Tao Zhengtian to lead me into your territory so you could personally deal with me. However, not only have you failed to kill me, you’ve been reduced to such a horrible shape as well.”

The hall master’s face immediately darkened because of Jian Chen mocking tone. His chest rose and fell violently. To think that he, a ruler of an entire region, would be mocked in such a fashion today with his supreme status. He felt like his chest was about to explode from anger.

However, he also knew that it was impossible for him to slay the two of them in his current shape. Although the two of them seemed heavily injured, their battle prowess was not affected at all. There were no benefits in continuing the battle because he had become even more injured after taking a blow from Yadriam.

“Tie Ta, let’s go!” Jian Chen did not stick around. He signaled to Tie Ta before they both flew toward the Octoterra Divine Hall.

When the Saint Kings and elders in the divine hall saw that the two mysterious emperors were actually Jian Chen and Tie Ta, all of them became stunned, remaining dazed for quite a long time.

Although the Saint Kings had already gained a vague idea of the identity of the two emperors, they still felt disbelief after their guesses were confirmed.

“The ruler, it’s actually the ruler. The emperor who fought against the hall master of the Serpent God Hall is actually our ruler,” an elder said in excitement as his body violently trembled. He began to cry from joy.

The spectating Saint Kings were all shocked when they heard what he said. The Turtle clan had actually given birth to an emperor. That was a matter that could shake up the entire sea realm, and from the situation earlier, the other emperor seemed to be on very good terms with the emperor of the Turtle clan. This was a significant matter.

“Let’s talk after we return. You all return to the divine hall first. We’ll leave this place right now,” Jian Chen said to the group of people.

Jian Chen was now like a god to the clansmen of the Turtle clan. All of them were extremely obedient and followed his orders, all returning to the divine hall.

With a wave of his hand, the divine hall shrank before flying into his hand, no larger than the size of a fist. Afterward, he left with Tie Ta, returning to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall.

He did this because he could already sense that the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall had already come and had secretly remained hidden. This was not a good situation for Jian Chen.

He had wiped out a clone of the hall master and caused him an extremely severe loss. The two of them had already fallen out, so he worried that he would end up working with the hall master of

the Serpent God Hall to deal with him and Tie Ta.

“If I forge the Azulet swords, I’ll be able to deal with them easily even if the two hall masters work together,” Jian Chen thought. He needed an Immortal Tier sword to use the Sword Origin realm to its greatest potential. Without the Azulet swords, it was like he was fighting people with his bare hands. He would always be at a disadvantage.

“I’ve already gathered all the materials. I just need to forge the swords next, but forging them will not be easy. I need to make a lot of preparations and enough time.” Jian Chen looked forward to the moment when he forged the two swords, but he needed to go to the Sea of Despair with the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall in three days. He did not have the time at the moment.

Chapter 1336: Renowned Throughout the Sea Realm

Jian Chen returned to the Turtle clan with Tie Ta and the Octoterra Divine Hall, but the spectating Saint Kings did not disperse for a very long time. Every single of them remained there and secretly communicated with one another, discussing the emperor of the Turtle clan and how he worked with another unknown emperor to fight the hall master of the Serpent God Hall. They discussed these matters in an extremely secretive manner, afraid that the furious hall master would hear what they were talking about.

All of them, experts who had stayed in the sea realm for many years, knew extremely well that the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was someone who had become an emperor long ago. He had already made it a considerable distance within the realm, so they all felt extremely shocked when the emperor of the Turtle clan, who had just broken through, was able to fight him even-handedly and even injure him.

Although the emperor of the Turtle clan had worked with someone else, they were still able to distinguish the strong and the weak even at the same level of cultivation.

“I never thought that the ruler of the Turtle clan would have become an emperor. This really is unbelievable. In the history of the Turtle clan, we only had a few experts at the level of hall elders even in our most glorious times. The only emperor of our clan in all of history has been born...”

“I wonder who the other emperor is and how he is connected to the emperor of the Turtle clan...”

“I never thought that the number of emperors in the sea realm would increase by two in a single stroke. And now that both of these emperors have gone off to the territory of the Sea Goddess

Hall, I wonder if the balance of the sea realm will change with the birth of these two emperors...”

The various experts discussed the situation. Before now, there had only been three emperors, and they had all ruled in their own region. Now that another two emperors had appeared together, the balance of the sea realm would definitely shift dramatically.

The hall master of the Serpent God Hall clearly thought of this matter as well. His face darkened in a terrifying manner. Even when ignoring the threat Jian Chen posed to him, just the appearance of two emperors would cause severe threats to the Serpent God Hall. At the same time, they had fallen out with Jian Chen, so he really did worry a little whether Jian Chen and Tie Ta would deal heavy blows to his authority over the land of the Serpent God Hall.

The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall was secretly hiding in the surroundings by erasing his presence. He stared at the hall master of the Serpent God Hall silently before shifting his eyes in the direction that Jian Chen had traveled. His eyes were extremely profound.

“I never thought that Jian Chen’s strength would increase so quickly. He really is worthy of being call an unprecedented genius,” the hall master only produced a long sigh inside after quite some time. Jian Chen’s speed of growth had exceeded what he could imagine. He knew that it was very difficult for him to threaten Jian Chen now. Since Jian Chen was able to reduce the hall master of the Serpent God Hall to such a horrible condition, it meant that Jian Chen also possessed the strength to take him on. Jian Chen was no longer the ant of the past.

“Jian Chen is too close to the Sea Goddess hall. T-this is not good,” the hall master thought. His eyes twinkled a few times before he silently left.

The Turtle clan became lively once again after a few days of calm

in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. All the clansmen had hid in the Octoterra Divine Hall due to the threat of the Tao family, but now that the threat had been dealt with, all the clansmen could return to their homes.

The Turtle clan was in jubilation today. They were brimming with joy. Every single member of the clan wore a smile. They were extremely happy and joyful while many of them had begun to sing from the joy they felt.

This was because the entire clan knew that their esteemed ruler had become an emperor now, an expert who could stand on the same level as the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, Serpent God Hall, and Heaven's Spirit Hall. Not only was this a great honor for the Turtle clan, it was also a demonstration of their strength and an increase in their status.

And other than their ruler, their ruler possessed a very close friend who was also an emperor. Currently, the clan possessed two emperors while even the three halls that ruled the lands only possessed a single emperor each.

Soon after Jian Chen had returned to the clan, the news of the ruler of the Turtle clan's breakthrough to emperor took the entire sea realm by storm. The news immediately shook up the whole place. Many people sighed in surprise while voicing their doubts. At that moment, all the people and organizations in the sea realm discussed this news. There were many important figures of peak organizations who headed to the Turtle clan with expensive gifts to confirm this matter.

In recent years, the sea realm had always stood balanced between three organizations. Now that two emperors had suddenly appeared, it was an extremely significant matter and caused shock to ripple through the entire realm. Many people wondered if the balance would be broken or not.

Jian Chen had no idea that his breakthrough to emperor had

already spread through the sea realm like wildfire and taken them by storm. He was currently in a meeting in the conference hall of the Turtle clan. Qing Yixuan, Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas had all come while the Saint Ruler elders of the clan gathered below. All of the elders were flushed in the face due to becoming overexcited.

“I’ve gathered everyone here today to announce a few matters. The first matter is that from today on, the Turtle clan is able to stand properly in the sea realm. There is no need to fear any organizations,” Jian Chen said in high spirits as he gave off a powerful confidence. He possessed enough strength to utter those words now.

A cheer of joy immediately rang out from below. A few elders cried from their joy and excitement. They had never been so glorious in the history of the entire clan.

Seeing the moved elders below, Jian Chen could not help but think of the grand elder of the Turtle clan’s face. He sighed inside and thought, “Grand elder, I’ve already completed most of your final wish. Without long, even without me, the Turtle clan will be able to stand supreme within the sea realm.”

Jian Chen continued a while later after everyone had calmed down, “The second matter is that I’ve captured all the important members of the Tao family alliance. They had threatened to destroy the Turtle clan, so I will hand these people over to you to be dealt with.” Jian Chen released Tao Zhengtian and the other four Saint Kings from the artifact space. All of them were heavily injured and basically incapacitated. They did not even have the energy to run.

“We have to kill these people, so we can pacify all our deceased clansmen with their blood. That’s the only way we can give an explanation to our fallen clansment,” the elders righteously demanded. Their hatred for the five Saint Kings had reached the limits.

In the end, the five Saint Kings were taken away. They were destined to suffer a very miserable fate, but Jian Chen did not pay any more attention to the matter.

Chapter 1337: Treasury of the Tao Family

(One)

Jian Chen glanced over Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas. After a moment of silence, he said, “Tai Dou, Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas, you were initially forced to join this big family with no other choice. I will give you a chance. If you want to leave, I will not stop you. I will gift you some heavenly resources so your strength can increase. After all, you have worked hard for the Turtle clan in recent times and have committed a meritorious service.”

Tai Dou dropped to his knees without second thought with that. He politely said, “Ruler, I will not be leaving. I am willing to stay at the Turtle clan forever. I may not be a clansmen of the Turtle clan, but if I can become one of the senior members and follow the ruler, I will work until the day my heart stops beating.”

Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas on the other hand did not hurry to speak their thoughts. They looked at one another and were rather hesitant. They were originally the disciplinary elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall and had once participated in the pursuit of Jian Chen with the divine generals of the Serpent God Hall, so they had been forced to follow Jian Chen with no other choice, similar to Tai Dou.

The three of them hesitated for a very long time before finally making up their minds. Lan Jing said, “Ruler, we want to return to the Heaven’s Spirit Hall because that was where we grew up. We have deep ties with the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. It’s like our home.”

Jian Chen sighed inside and a sliver of disappointment flashed through his eyes. He said, “I respect your choice. You may return whenever you choose to. However, I will give you all a gift before you leave for your great services to the Turtle clan in the past.”

“I thank the ruler for your intentions. We are already extremely

grateful that the ruler is willing to allow us to return to the Heaven's Spirit Hall, so how can we accept a gift from you? We are not worthy of accepting it..." Xin Pian replied. He felt ashamed because, from a certain perspective, their lives already belonged to Jian Chen. They already felt so shameful that they could not look back at Jian Chen when they actually wanted to leave right now. However, the Heaven's Spirit Hall just held an extraordinary position in their hearts. They really did want to return if they could.

Jian Chen raised his hand to stop Xin Pian. He said, "Before you decline me, do know that my gift can allow your strength to skyrocket such that you can reach the level of hall elders in the shortest amount of time possible."

Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas all raised their heads to look at Jian Chen as shock filled their faces. They did not doubt what Jian Chen had said. After all, he was already an emperor now, so why would he lie? What they found unbelievable was that Jian Chen would actually give them something so valuable.

The three of them felt utterly ashamed when they thought about how Jian Chen had given them their freedom and was even giving them such a great gift.

Jian Chen waved his hand at the three of them and said, "You can go first. I'll send people over to you with the gifts later, and you'll be free after that. I will no longer be interfering with any of your matters. You can leave whenever you wish."

Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas all bowed at Jian Chen before leaving the hall.

With a wave of his hand, Jian Chen threw a ring at Qing Yixuan who was currently staring at him in a daze. He said, "Qing Yixuan, the Tao family no longer exists in the sea realm from today on. That's the Space Ring on Tao Zhengtian. Have a look and see if what you need is in there." The Space Ring hovered before Qing

Yixuan as an invisible force kept it in the air.

Qing Yixuan only seemed to return to her senses then. She grabbed the Space Ring absent-mindedly and began to search through it. A while later, she became slightly disappointed and said, “There isn’t what I need in it. However, the Tao family has a treasury that not many people know about. Most of their valuable treasures and important items are stored there. I think the item I’m looking for is in there.” With a flick of her finger, she immediately sent the Space Ring back to Jian Chen.

“Do you know the location of the treasury?” Jian Chen calmly asked. Even though it was the treasury of an ancient peak-level clan, there was rarely anything that could interest Jian Chen now. He had reached a new level of understanding, so ordinary treasures were like nothing to him now. However, the Turtle clan lacked resources right now, so the accumulated resources of the Tao family just happened to be able to make up for that fact.

“I know where it is, but before we go, I want to confirm something with you. Are you a Saint Emperor or not?” Qing Yixuan asked as she stared fixedly at Jian Chen.

Although she had personally witnessed Jian Chen’s great fight against the hall master, she still refused to believe that someone, who was not even as strong as her when they first met, could actually become a Saint Emperor in such a short amount of time. After all, Jian Chen was not even a Saint King when he had first stolen the Octoterra Map fragment from her.

“I’m still not a Saint Emperor, but if I really end up fighting, I am no weaker than a Saint Emperor,” Jian Chen faintly smiled.

Qing Yixuan gasped and began to look at Jian Chen as if she were looking at a monster. She said, “The rate your strength increases really is stunning. You should be able to enter the Tao family’s secret treasury since you have that much strength. We should not delay this matter, so let’s head off right now.”

“Ruler, the ancestor of the Enlan clan has come to visit. He wishes to see the ruler.” At this moment, a guard ran in from outside and politely reported the arrival of an envoy.

“The Enlan clan?” Jian Chen softly repeated the name. He was not unfamiliar with the name. It was one of the powerful clans in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, no weaker than the Tao family.

“The ancestor of the Signtaur clan had come...”

“The former patriarch of the Lancen clan has come...”

“The former patriarch of the Xiao tribe has come...”

“The...”

Many other important figures from various organizations and clans had come to visit the Turtle clan after the Enlan clan. They were all large organizations that reigned supreme in certain regions of the Sea Goddess Hall. Some of them were even more powerful than the Tao family.

Jian Chen frowned. He had expected this, but it had happened a little too soon. After all, he had only just returned to the Turtle clan.

However, Jian Chen did not plan on receiving the people personally. He knew that the true intention of the people who had come was only to confirm whether the Turtle clan possessed an emperor or not. He just got Tie Ta to stay behind, so he could receive the guests instead of himself. Jian Chen instead hurried off with Qing Yixuan, headed to the treasury of the Tao family.

The location of the treasury was over a hundred thousand kilometers away from the Turtle clan in a swamp. The environment of the swamp was horrendous, teeming with danger and covered in a layer of potent poisonous gas all year round.

Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan ignored the gas and made their way to the depths. There they came across a valley that seemed to open

up the further in they headed.

Suddenly, a dark shadow attacked. It struck like lightning, charging at Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan. It was coated in an extremely potent poisonous gas. Even Saint Kings could not treat it carelessly.

Jian Chen did not even glance at it. Extending his finger, he shot out a finger-sized sword Qi, which pierced the shadow.

Chapter 1338: Treasury of the Tao Family

(Two)

Bang! The black shadow landed beside Jian Chen's foot and lay there without moving. Only then could they see the shadow's true appearance. It was a ten-meter-long, mutated lizard. Its skin was pitch-black and was covered in an oozing substance. It gave off an extremely offensive smell.

The lizard possessed an extremely powerful poison. Blood poured from the wound in its head, which had been caused by Jian Chen, and hit the ground, which actually dissolved the soil. A hole appeared and rapidly grew deeper.

Jian Chen extended his finger a few more times and shot a few more sword Qi at the corpse. Every single strand of sword Qi was extremely powerful, easily penetrating the lizard's body. In the end, he removed a fist-sized monster core from the corpse and held it in his hand. Even without any protection, the acidic poison on it could not harm him at all.

Jian Chen used a clump of soil to wipe off the poison before storing it in his Space Ring. The mutated lizard was a Class 8 Magical Beast. The monster core it possessed was extremely valuable. Even if he had no use for it, he could give it to the experts of the Changyang clan.

Qing Yixuan stared at the dead lizard as she stood beside Jian Chen. She was secretly taken aback. The lizard was no weaker than her, so if she had to fight it, it would have taken her a tremendous amount of effort before she would have been able to slay it. She had never expected it to be killed off by Jian Chen in such an easy fashion, where it was no different from an ant. This was extremely shocking to her.

“Is this the strength of Saint Emperors? It's actually so terrifying. If Jian Chen used that attack on me, I wonder if I would end up

like the lizard or not,” Qing Yixuan was extremely astounded inside. She already understood everything now. The bastard who had not been anywhere near her strength before had already become an existence that she could only look up to.

Qing Yixuan was immediately taken by an odd feeling when she thought of how she had pursued Jian Chen for so long even after reducing him to such a horrible shape in the past. She had even begun to gently smile to herself because she had hunted down a Saint Emperor in the past.

“Is this where the treasury of the Tao family is?” Jian Chen no longer paid any attention to the lizard’s corpse. He let it lie there. Even though it was the corpse of a Class 8 Magical Beast, he had no intentions of taking it with him. He only looked around the valley carefully.

Qing Yixuan dismissed her thoughts and stared at the valley. She said, “Correct, this is the place. When I secretly followed Tao Zhengtian before, I saw him enter this valley. However, there are many hidden killing formations that are extremely powerful, which was why I did not follow him in. I do not know the exact location of the treasury in the valley.”

“There really are a lot of formations in this valley. Even if a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King enters, he will die if he is careless. These formations should have been personally cast down long ago by a Saint Emperor. It’s impossible for Saint Kings to cast down such powerful formations,” Jian Chen said. He had already expanded the senses of his soul to envelope the entire valley. He had found many formations hidden in it.

“The Tao family is a great clan that once gave birth to a Saint Emperor, but there were extremely many Saint Emperors in that era, nowhere near as scarce as nowadays. As a result, the Saint Emperor of the Tao family was not enough to lead the Tao family to extreme glory. These formations were probably cast down by him, so breaking through them will probably need an expert of the

same strength,” said Qing Yixuan as she looked at Jian Chen. It would all depend on Jian Chen if they could reach the treasures of the Tao family today. There was something she needed in there.

“Has no one ever discovered the treasury of the Tao family after so many years?” Jian Chen asked.

Qing Yixuan silently pondered before saying, “If I recall correctly, the past Saint Emperor of the Tao family had once used his abilities to engulf this valley and lock it up, causing it to be difficult to discover even by other Saint Emperors, which is why this place has never been discovered by others. However, with the passage of time, the abilities he had used lost their effects, which is why this place is now exposed. However, this place is extremely well-hidden and no one comes here often. I had only accidentally learned of the treasury in the past and found it by secretly following Tao Zhengtian here.”

Jian Chen nodded. He believed most of what Qing Yixuan had said because the valley really was prepared by a Saint Emperor.

“Let’s go in. Follow me carefully. I think I’ve found the exact location of the treasury,” Jian Chen calmly informed her as he stepped into the valley. Immediately, the landscape around him underwent a sudden shift. The valley had vanished and he now stood atop a vast body of water. The waves surged into the sky as a huge beast charged over. Its presence was like a mountain while its pressure flooded the surroundings.

It was a beast with the power of Saint Emperors. It was extraordinarily powerful.

Jian Chen’s face remained the same as he sighed, “This formation really is extraordinary. Even if Saint Emperors want to destroy it, it’ll take them quite the effort, unfortunately the formation’s decayed with the passage of time. It’s strength has drastically been reduced and can no longer stand a blow from a Saint Emperor.” Jian Chen swung his sleeve and shot out countless

strands of sword Qi. The sword Qi split into two streams, one stream shot into the body of water while the other headed toward the air, shattering the air.

Boom! With a great rumble, the space violently shook. Before the beast could reach Jian Chen, it had dissolved and the landscape around Jian Chen changed once again. The water disappeared as he returned to the valley.

Afterward, Jian Chen continued into the depths with Qing Yixuan. They traveled like a hot knife through butter, sweeping through all the formations hidden on their path. The formations really were very powerful. They could stop Saint Emperors if they were in perfect condition, but they could only be used to deal with Saint Kings now. They were obviously not enough to stop Jian Chen.

Soon afterward, the two of them arrived at the very depths of the valley. A bumpy cliff face stood before them.

“We’ve reached the end of the valley,” said Qing Yixuan. She looked around for any possible places.

“It should be here,” Jian Chen stared at the cliff face before him. The senses of his soul had already found that a formation was hiding something here.

Boom!

With a loud sound, Jian Chen shot a sword Qi at the cliff face, causing the ground to violently shake while dust was kicked into the air.

A huge cave appeared before the two of them. It was pitch-black inside while a cold, moist wind blew out.

Qing Yixuan’s eyes narrowed. She had failed to find any signs of this place even from such a close distance. This made her sigh, praising the greatness of the formations here.

The cave was very deep and sloped down into the ground. The

two of them followed the slope and traveled for several kilometers before arriving in front of a huge stone gate. The gate was filled with pulses of powerful energy, causing it to become extremely tough.

Jian Chen did not destroy it forcefully in order to prevent the cave from collapsing. Instead, he used a strand of sword Qi to cut out a hole two meters tall and wide so that they could enter.

A huge space was hidden behind the door and countless luminous pearls of various colors were wedged in the ceiling. Most of them were fist-sized, but some were even the size of a human head.

A mountainous pile of crystal coins was stacked neatly in a corner. They gave off an extremely dense water-attributed energy. These crystal coins had all surpassed grand quality and had reached the level of divine quality.

A bookshelf made from rare metal held several dozen books in a neat fashion. Every single one of them was extremely crude and riddled with the marks of time, having existed for countless years without being destroyed.

Chapter 1339: A Damaged Piece of Divine Armor

In the center of the room stood two large, square tablets. They were covered in beautiful and exquisite inscriptions depicting a human using an extremely powerful attack. Even though they were just carvings, they gave off an extraordinary feeling as if they vaguely contained the pressure of the world.

Jian Chen became fixated on the two tablets as joy appeared in his eyes. He had already realized that they were Saint Tier Battle Skills suitable for humans and that they were complete.

The Flame Mercenaries had only been founded recently. They seemed powerful on the surface, but they lacked in certain areas far too much. High tier battle skills like these just happened to be what the mercenaries were in urgent need of because it was impossible for the Flame Mercenaries to become truly independent and powerful without Saint Tier Battle Skills.

And other than the Flame Mercenaries, the Changyang clan needed these items as well.

It was a great harvest for Jian Chen, finding two complete Saint Tier Battle Skills in the treasury of the Tao family.

Jian Chen swept his gaze around and discovered two weapons stabbed in a huge rock near the Saint Tier Battle Skills. One of them was a blade while the other was a sword. They were both enshrouded by an obscuring glow as they pulsed with powerful energy.

“Emperor Armaments!” Jian Chen felt shocked once more. The treasury of the Tao family was far wealthier than he had ever imagined. Not only were there two complete Saint Tier Battle Skills; there were even Emperor Armaments. If these items were placed on the Tian Yuan Continent, Saint Kings would engage in

bloody fights to obtain them.

However, only humans could use the Saint Tier Battle Skills or the Emperor Armaments. Their power was limited when used by the Sea race.

As soon as Qing Yixuan entered the cave, her gaze became locked onto the Emperor Armaments and the Saint Tier Battle Skills. Her eyes burned with desire as she mumbled, “I once heard by accident that the ancestor of the Tao family had visited the Tian Yuan Continent and had a fortuitous encounter there. He came across a dwelling where a very powerful expert had passed away in meditation and really benefited from the encounter. Not only were there Saint Tier Battle Skills; there were even Emperor Armaments. Looks like it’s true. Unfortunately, the Emperor Armaments can only be used by humans while the Saint Tier Battle Skills can only be practiced by humans. They’re not suitable for the Sea race, or the Tao family would have been able to become even more powerful with just the Saint Tier Battle Skills.”

Jian Chen agreed with what Qing Yixuan had said. If Tao Zhengtian had grasped a Saint Tier Battle Skill with his strength, he would have been able to take on Saint Kings at Great Perfection. And once he possessed a battle prowess like that, the Tao family’s fate would not have ended as miserably as it did. Unfortunately, the Saint Emperor that had appeared in their clan did not create any Saint Tier Battle Skills himself.

Saint Tier Battle Skills were a heavenly might. Not only did a person require supreme talent and remarkable abilities of comprehensions to come up with a Saint Tier Battle Skill but they also needed to conform with the world on a certain level. Only with these special circumstances would they be able to come up with a Saint Tier Battle Skill.

In the history of the Tian Yuan Continent, there were a few experts who had only just reached Saint King and had managed to come up with shockingly powerful Saint Tier Battle Skills under

special circumstances. At the same time, there were some people with almost-unprecedented talent who never came up with a single one even after becoming a peak Saint Emperor.

Qing Yixuan turned to Jian Chen and said, “Jian Chen, do you still remember how the Tao family just happened to be in possession of what I needed? The items are right in front of me, so I hope you will not get in my way.” Qing Yixuan’s eyes were filled with desire and urgency. If Jian Chen was only as powerful as before, Qing Yixuan never would have said those words, but she required Jian Chen’s agreement now.

“You need an Emperor Armament?” Jian Chen looked at Qing Yixuan. If he had known earlier than the item Qing Yixuan needed was an Emperor Armament, he would have given her the Emperor Armament he owned back at the Turtle clan. It was completely useless to him now that he had reached the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body and comprehended the first realm of Sword Origin. The weapon was unable to withstand his power now.

Qing Yixuan nodded before staring at one of the Saint Tier Battle Skills for a while. She said, “I also want a Saint Tier Battle Skill. You can have everything other than those two items.”

Jian Chen thought about it a little and replied, “You can have the Emperor Armament, but the Saint Tier Battle Skill is very important to me as well. I can only lend it to you, so return it to me after you’ve comprehended it.”

“Alright, deal!” Qing Yixuan agreed in an extremely straightforward fashion before taking the sword-shaped Emperor Armament and one of the Saint Tier Battle Skill tablets.

Jian Chen continued to look through the treasury. There were a lot of items that had been accumulated over the years, and they were invaluable, but they were no different than soil in Jian Chen’s eyes. He could not be bothered to look through them. In reality, even the pile of divine quality crystal coins did not catch

Jian Chen's attention either.

In the end, Jian Chen arrived before the bookshelf made of rare metal. He found that a third of the books there were cultivation methods and the experiences and comprehensions of Saint Emperors. Not only were there ones that belonged to the Sea race, but there were also ones that belonged to humans and magical beasts as well. A small portion of the remaining books were Heaven Tier Battle Skills created by humans while the remaining books detailed various wondrous items in the world as well as ancient records regarding the history of the Sea race.

Jian Chen pulled out an ancient piece of beast leather from an inconspicuous part of the bookshelf. He unrolled it and found that the leather was a meter long and wide and was covered with extremely complicated and detailed inscribings of a formation, which seemed to contain another world. Jian Chen had almost been drawn away by it even with his powerful soul.

"What's this?" Jian Chen was surprised and immediately became stern. He could already tell that the beast leather was not as simple as it seemed.

"This is a teleportation formation, and a high level teleportation formation. It can be used to move between worlds. That's weird. Such a high level teleportation formation only appears in higher worlds, so how has it ended up here?" Zi Ying's voice rang through Jian Chen's head filled with surprise.

"This piece of beast leather originates from a higher world as well. It's extremely tough and should have come from a beast that's reached Godhood at the very least. Even Saint Emperors cannot destroy it. Master, this teleportation formation will be of great use to you, so you must store it away well," said Qing Suo.

With that, Jian Chen immediately pulled out an embroidered box and properly stored the teleportation formation in the box.

"Hmm?" Suddenly, Zi Ying produced an interjection of surprise.

He stared at a corner of the treasury in interest and said, “Master, go over there. There’s something very impressive there.”

Jian Chen was surprised as disbelief slightly filled his face. The Azulet sword spirits possessed an extremely incredible insight, so barely anything would catch their eye, but they had actually described something as very impressive, which shocked him very much.

Jian Chen immediately hurried over to the location Zi Ying specified without any hesitation. He then dug out a piece of armor from a large pile of valuable treasures by following Zi Ying’s instructions.

The piece of armor was pitch-black and made from an unknown material. It was as light as a feather, as if it did not possess any weight at all. However, it was extremely damaged and not in perfect condition.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, what’s so fantastic about this piece of armor?” Jian Chen asked out a curiosity. He examined the piece of armor in his hands and failed to discover anything out of the ordinary other than the special material it was made of.

“Master, this is a piece of divine armor. It’s a god artifact even greater than immortal artifacts. At the same time, the grade of the armor is impressive as well. I estimate that the owner of the armor was a Chaotic Prime at the very least, possibly even a Grand Prime. It’s just that the armor is far too heavily damaged where it’s almost completely ruined,” Zi Ying said in pity.

Jian Chen was shocked and the hand he was using to hold the piece of armor began to tremble slightly. He stared at the armor in disbelief as his heart churned.

This was actually a piece of armor that had very likely been worn by a Grand Prime. Grand Primes were peak existences in higher worlds, so the armor they wore would definitely be a great treasure. Right now, he had actually come across such a treasure

here. Even though it was damaged, it still left Jian Chen flabbergasted.

“In my opinion, the expert from the higher world was probably embroiled in a great battle and became heavily injured. In the end, he fell into a spatial crack and descended here by luck, which was how this armor was obtained by the people of the Tao family in the end,” Qing Suo analyzed the likelihood.

Chapter 1340: The Sea of Despair

“This piece of divine armor has already been reduced to something like this. Can it still be used?” Jian Chen asked. He found the situation rather regretful since the power of the armor was evident, but it was just far too damaged.

“From the looks of it, the divine armor isn’t really useful anymore. It’s inscriptions are damaged and the artifact spirit has dispersed. Other than the fact that the material its made of is very tough, it cannot protect the wearer from anything. However, keep it with you, master. Once your strength increases in the future, you can look for some materials to repair it. It may not be able to recover its perfect shape, but it’ll be useful for master,” said Zi Ying.

“Don’t be too disappointed, master. With your current strength, obtaining this damaged piece of armor is better than obtaining it in perfect condition because every god artifact has extremely high requirements before it can be used. Only those who have become Immortal Monarchs can begin to forge, and they cannot exceed an ordinary tier at most. Anything beyond that will require Immortal Emperors or even Immortal Exalts,” said Zi Ying. Afterward, he looked at the damaged piece of armor in Jian Chen’s hand and continued, “This should be a high quality god artifact or even a supreme quality god artifact, which is why it would be useless to you if it was in perfect condition. Having it damaged is more useful to you.”

Zi Ying nodded in agreement, “Qing Suo is right. If this armor was in perfect condition, master would not be able to use it even if it was just a low quality god artifact. However, once it is repaired, its quality will fall and possibly descend to the level of immortal artifacts. Once master breaks through another layer of the Chaotic Body, then master will be able to use it.”

Jian Chen beamed with joy with that. He said, “Zi Ying, Qing

Suo, don't you have a method to repair this god artifact, even if it makes its quality fall?"

"We do have an idea, but we need a few materials. Fortunately, we don't need to repair the armor completely, so the materials we need aren't too high of a grade. We should be able to find them on the Tian Yuan Continent," responded Zi Ying.

Jian Chen immediately became excited. He was rather eager to get the armor fixed because he would have a great trump card when he moved onto the Saints' World.

Although the defenses of his Chaotic Body were impressive, he did not mind wearing some powerful armor as well.

The treasury of the Tao family had brought Jian Chen unexpected joy. Not only had he found a large amount of cultivation resources and two Saint Tier Battle Skills, but he had also come across two treasures that were useful to him, which definitely caught him by surprise.

Jian Chen cleaned out the treasury of the Tao family. He split all the items into two portions, one for the Turtle clan and the other for the Flame Mercenaries.

When Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan left the treasury, only half a day had passed since they had entered.

Qing Yixuan looked at Jian Chen outside the treasury with somewhat mixed emotions and said, "Jian Chen, I will be bidding farewell to you here. I will be leaving the sea realm soon. I will return the Saint Tier Battle Skill to a place you suggest after I comprehend it."

Jian Chen stared at her calmly and asked, "Do you have some powerful enemies on the Tian Yuan Continent? I feel like you came to the sea realm for refuge."

Qing Yixuan nodded rather forcefully and said, "To be honest, I offended a powerful organization on the Tian Yuan Continent and

was pursued by them when I was just a Saint Ruler. With no other choice, I hid in the sea realm.”

“Since you’re still not bold enough to return to the Tian Yuan Continent with your strength right now, the organization you’ve probably offended is either an ancient clan or a protector clan. Seeing how much you have helped the Turtle clan, I’ll help you out.” Jian Chen pulled out a jade box from his Space Ring and said, “There’s an immortal peach in there. It’s far more valuable than any heavenly resource you know of. Once you ingest it, your strength will reach Great Perfection in an extremely short amount of time, or you might even become a Saint Emperor.”

The box carried a Violet Cloud Peach of the first grade. It could increase the eater’s cultivation by five hundred years.

The five hundred years were calculated from the perspective of the Immortal’s World, so in a lower world, it was enough to overcome a thousand years of cultivation or even more.

Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan went their separate ways. She left by herself after accepting the peach from Jian Chen, but she was suspicious of what Jian Chen had said how a single peach could elevate her to Great Perfection in such a short amount of time. She did not believe it, because it sounded far too preposterous.

Jian Chen did not stick around for long either. He made his way back to the Turtle clan. There were more and more people visiting the Turtle clan now. All of them were people who held authority in large clans and almost all of them were Saint Kings. Almost all the large clans in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall had sent people, and some people from the large clans even came from the territory of the other two halls.

Without a single exception, they had come to see the ruler of the Turtle clan. Of course, that obviously did not happen. They only saw the elders of the clan. Although some of them felt extremely dissatisfied over the fact that they had to speak with a group of

Saint Rulers with their status as Saint Kings, none of them dared to express their dissatisfaction because a tremendous presence warned them at all times that a Saint Emperor was paying attention to the whole interaction.

Jian Chen did not show himself. He returned silently to his own room and, other than Tie Ta, no one discovered him.

Three days later, Jian Chen and Yadriam appeared in a desolate region in the sea realm. The energy of the world in the region around them was extremely thin, thin to the point where it was impossible for people to cultivate here. Before them was a parched land that extended into thick mist. The mist was very odd. Jian Chen was not able to see through it even with his strength, and even his soul was obstructed, unable reach into the mist.

“Up ahead is the Sea of Despair, one of the most well-known zones of danger in the sea realm. Its dangers are even greater than the divine realm because even emperors have the chance of dying once they step into it. In ancient times, many emperors fell here and some of their corpses even disappeared,” Yadriam said heavyheartedly. She bathed in blue light so her face was obscured, but it could be imagined just how stern she was.

Even with her great strength, where she barely had any opponents among all the Saint Emperors currently present, she was not completely confident she could return safely once she set foot in there.

“Are there emperor-level beasts in the Sea of Despair?” Jian Chen asked in surprise.

“No, there are no beasts in the Sea of Despair.” Before Yadriam could reply, a familiar voice rang out. The sea goddess’ blurry figure hovered before the two of them.

Chapter 1341: Vicious Spirits of the Mist

(One)

“I greet your majesty!” Yadriam dismissed her prideful attitude once the sea goddess arrived and politely bowed to her. Her voice carried respect from the bottom of her heart.

“I greet your majesty,” Jian Chen clasped his hands at the sea goddess as well.

“There may not be any beasts in the Sea of Despair, but the dangers in there are, without a doubt, the most dangerous in the sea realm. Let alone Saint Emperors, even I had to be careful when I stepped in there back when I was at my peak. The dangers of the Sea of Despair greatly exceed your imaginations...” The sea goddess did not bother too much with courtesies. She explained the details of the Sea of Despair to the two of them. Probably no one in the sea realm even possessed a tenth of the sea goddess’ knowledge with regards to the Sea of Despair.

Both Jian Chen and Yadriam were shocked by what they heard. Just what type of place was the Sea of Despair if even the sea goddess needed to be careful when she set foot in there when she was at her peak? The dangers there were actually terrifying enough to endanger Origin realm experts.

The sea goddess continued, “The mist of the Sea of Despair is thick and never disperses. It remains like this all year round. The mist is no ordinary mist either but an extremely weird energy. It can silently invade your body and eat away at your life force, so you will be under the constant invasion of the mist once you set foot in there. Other than that, there are many vicious spirits that have been born in the mist. They are very difficult to deal with, and some powerful vicious spirits can even slay Saint Emperors. Fortunately, there are not a lot of spirits that are that powerful, so the chances of coming across one that strong is very small.

However, you need to take every single step with care and remain vigilant once you enter.

“Other than that, there are two things you should keep in mind. The space in the Sea of Despair is very unstable, so spatial distortions happen often, making it very easy to become disorientated. You just need to follow the Abyssal Crystal to find the right path. The second thing is that once you enter regions where the mist thins, retreat as quickly as possible. Do not stay there any longer than you need because they are forbidden regions.” The sea goddess became extremely stern when she reached the second point. She was extremely fearful of places like that.

Jian Chen shivered. He found it rather unbelievable that even the sea goddess, who was an Origin realm expert, found it so terrifying. After all, she had surpassed Saint Emperor and, according to the sword spirits, was an immortal.

“I’ve said all I need to say. Once you enter the Sea of Despair, I won’t be able to provide any support to you at all. It will all depend on the two of you inside. Do remember that as soon as you come across any spatial distortions, move together and do not separate from each other. There is only one Abyssal Crystal,” the sea goddess warned at the very end before watching Jian Chen and Yadriam enter the Sea of Despair. They soon disappeared in the rolling mists.

Only when the two of them had completely disappeared did the sea goddess sigh. “For my return, I have to get the two of them to risk their lives to search for my divine hall. Aren’t I a little too selfish? I hope they return safely.”

Jian Chen felt like he had been engulfed by an extremely thick mist as soon as he entered the Sea of Despair. It became hazy white all around him, and even with his vision, he was only able to see a hundred meters away. The senses of his soul had become completely useless in the mist as well.

The mist there was very abnormal. It was formed from an odd energy and maintained a certain density. Jian Chen was surrounded by the mist but felt like he was in soft cotton instead. The cotton constantly pressed against his body before turning into thin strands of energy in an attempt to seep into his body.

Jian Chen had learned from the sea goddess that the weird mist could devour his life force, so he dared not to be careless at all. Chaotic Force immediately flowed through his body and filled every inch of him to stop the invading mist.

By his side, Yadriam was enveloped by a layer of powerful water-attributed energy that stopped the invasion of the mist as well. She then removed the abyssal crystal from her Space Ring with a flip of her hand. The palm-sized crystal let out a gentle glow as it hovered in the air, changing with Yadriam's hand seals. The energy inside immediately began to leak out, gradually condensing into a small, blue bird.

The Abyssal Bird was only the size of a fist. It flapped its wings and flew off into the distance as a blue streak of light. It moved very quickly, disappearing from Jian Chen and Yadriam's line of sight in the blink of an eye.

"The Abyssal Bird will take us to find the sea goddess' divine hall. Let's go," the sea goddess called at Jian Chen before running off in the direction of the Abyssal Bird.

Yadriam possessed a mental connection with the bird, so even after it had vanished from her vision, she could still discern where the bird was.

Not only was the space of the Sea of Despair very unstable, it was weird as well. Jian Chen and Yadriam came across many weird regions of space that pulsed rhythmically like a person's heart, as if they possessed life. They were filled with a malevolent feeling.

Jian Chen and Yadriam advanced along the route of the bird. They constantly changed directions along the way and even had to

backtrack along the path they had come from a few times.

The space in the Sea of Despair was distorted, making it seem like they had to backtrack many times, but they had actually maintained a straight path without any deviations.

Suddenly, the space beside Jian Chen shook. A ripple of space expanded toward Jian Chen with lightning-like speed before striking his left arm.

Silently, the clothes on Jian Chen left arm ripped open and a crack appeared. His arm was injured and bright red blood seeped out.

Jian Chen glanced at the wound on his arm and secretly felt shocked. His fourth layer Chaotic Body had actually been injured so easily. If any other Saint King tried to withstand the strike, they probably would have been ripped into two by the spatial ripple.

“This place really is dangerous. The dangers here are incomparable to the divine realm,” Jian Chen thought and became even more vigilant.

Jian Chen and Yadriam continued on. They had no sense of time in the Sea of Despair, so they had no idea how long they had traveled for either. In the end, the Abyssal Bird had disappeared twice because it had ran out of energy. It was already the third time that Yadriam had used her secret technique to summon it.

They were getting closer and closer to the depths of the Sea of Despair now, but Jian Chen seemed to be in a rather horrible shape. His clothes were ripped all over and covered with bloody marks, clearly having been injured multiple times. These had all been caused by the ripples of space that would randomly appeared.

Yadriam was no exception either. She had sustained some light injuries as well, but her body was surrounded by a layer of energy to fend off the invasion of the mist. As a result, it was impossible to see her face.

A few specks of light silently made their way toward Jian Chen and Yadriam from behind. The faint lights pulsed, dim and bright, fusing perfectly with the mist in the surroundings. They seemed like sets of ghost's eyes.

Even though the two of them moved very quickly, the specks of light remained behind them. They were not shaken off and did not seem much different from the mist in the surroundings. They were obscured and gave off no presence at all, so they did not catch Jian Chen or Yadriam's attention at all.

Chapter 1342: Vicious Spirits of the Mist

(Two)

There were only a few pairs of eyes in the beginning before increasing to over ten. They followed close behind Jian Chen and Yadriam and very quickly, remaining silent throughout their journey.

When the pairs of eyes reached over twenty in number, they could no longer resist and attacked Jian Chen and Yadriam. Over twenty thick, hazy tendrils quickly stabbed toward Jian Chen and Yadriam's heads. They seemed to be completely condensed from mist and seemed to be a part of the surroundings, making it impossible to discover their existence without a close observation of one's surroundings.

Jian Chen and Yadriam were alerted the moment the pairs of eyes began to attack the two of them. Without even looking back, Jian Chen condensed a silver-white sword Qi on his arm and swung it back, sending a scattering of powerful sword Qi. The tendrils immediately dispersed when they clashed with the sword Qi while the sword Qi continued on toward the eyes without weakening at all.

A sharp cry immediately rang out from behind. The sword Qi had landed on the mist, and a few blurry figures began to flicker inside before dispersing. The figures varied from each other. There were human-shaped ones, beast-shaped ones, and even oddly-shaped ones. Every single one of the figures represented a pair of eyes.

Several of the eyes immediately dispersed.

At the same time, a pulse of surging energy appeared. Yadriam struck out as well. A trident of energy had already condensed in her hand, and she threw it like a javelin. The trident split into two, then four, and then eight, quickly shooting toward the eyes behind them.

The eight tridents seemed to weave together as the powerful energy pulses they gave off caused the mist in the surroundings to violently churn. They easily tore through the tendrils before viciously striking the eyes.

Every single trident possessed deadly precision, each striking a blurry figure in the mist, which was then followed by an ear-piercing howl. The figures that had been struck immediately dispersed.

The eyes seemed to possess a certain level of intelligence. After losing around a dozen companions, they seemed to have understood Jian Chen and Yadriam's strength. Without any hesitation, they quickly retreated and vanished into the endless mist.

Jian Chen and Yadriam glared in the direction the eyes had disappeared. They frowned, and after a while of thought, Jian Chen said, "What weird things. Not only can they move silently, but they also don't give off any presence either. I actually failed to sense that there was anything following us. If I hadn't sensed their sudden attacks, we probably would have been in trouble before we even knew about it.

"Those must be the vicious spirits mentioned by her majesty. They came into existence from the mist. They're quite hard to deal with, but fortunately they aren't powerful, which was why we managed to repel them so easily. We have to be careful with our every step in the future. If we come across any emperor level spirits, they'll be hard to deal with even if we work together," said Yadriam. She was rather stern.

Jian Chen nodded quietly. Although he possessed the battle prowess of a Saint Emperor right now, he was still not the real deal. Saint Emperors could fall here, and even Origin realm experts needed to move carefully, so he needed to be prepared and remain vigilant at all times.

Yadriam had lost the connection with the Abyssal Bird again. She pulled out the Abyssal Crystal and used a secret technique to summon the Abyssal Bird using the energy within the crystal so that they could continue on their way.

As they moved, Jian Chen and Yadriam constantly encountered sneak attacks from the spirits in the mist, but under their vigilance, they were discovered beforehand and wiped out with lightning-like speed.

However, as they rapidly traveled further into the Sea of Despair, the vicious spirits they came across constantly grew stronger. They now faced Saint King level spirits and would even encounter some at Great Perfection.

They had no idea how many spirits there were in the mist. Jian Chen and Yadriam had already wiped out several thousand, but the number of them did not seem to decrease at all. They also had to adjust their paths constantly due to the distortions of space.

Along the way, they were ambushed by over ten vicious spirits at Great Perfection. The spirits were unable to harm the body. Their attacks only affected the soul, so they suffered. However, Jian Chen was no ordinary person while Yadriam possessed supreme strength, so the soul attacks did not affect them too much.

Suddenly, an ear-piercing scream rang out from ahead. It was extraordinarily unpleasant, containing an attack on the soul.

Jian Chen and Yadriam stopped simultaneously. They sternly stared ahead and remained on guard. Their souls actually wavered slightly because of the scream.

“Be careful. There should be an extremely powerful vicious spirit up ahead, at the level of emperors,” Yadriam said in heavy voice, as if she was about to face a great enemy. Even the sea goddess had said that they were difficult to deal with, so they could not afford to be careless.

Jian Chen became stern as well. He looked around his surroundings and said, "Should we take a detour?"

As soon as Jian Chen finished speaking, the mist up ahead began to churn violently. A white figure gradually appeared before the two of them. It seemed to be completely composed of mist. It was a human-shaped vicious spirit with a long tail. It did not possess facial features, only a pair of extremely bright but foul eyes,

With the appearance of the vicious spirit, many more eyes appeared one after another in the surroundings. There were several dozen pairs of them.

The two of them had been completely surrounded by a group of spirits. Every single one of them was very powerful, the weakest being a Saint King.

"Looks like we can't make it away anymore," Jian Chen said rather regretfully. He knew that this battle was now unavoidable.

"I'll go keep the emperor-level vicious spirit busy. You deal with the others," Yadriam said heavily before decisively moving out. She charged at the emperor-level spirit and began to engage in a great battle with her trident.

The vicious spirit seemed to possess a tangible body. When it clashed with Yadriam the first time, it actually produced a powerful pulse of energy that caused the surrounding mist to churn violently.

Yadriam shivered inside. She did not gain the upperhand at all from the first clash. She was only on equal ground. However, the vicious spirits did not specialize in open battle but in targeting the souls of people. Open battles were their weaknesses. Yadriam was filled with an unpleasant feeling since their strength was equal in an open clash. She dared not hold back any longer, attacking the vengeful spirit with all she had.

On the other side, Jian Chen began to fight with the surrounding

spirits as well. A powerful sword Qi was condensed in his right hand as he flickered through the mist with the Illusory Flash, dispersing the spirits one by one. Since the disparity of strength was just far too great, coupled with the fact that Jian Chen's sword Qi was condensed from laws, the spirits were helpless against him. They immediately vanished once they were stabbed by the sword Qi.

Seeing how its subordinates were being culled by Jian Chen, the emperor-level spirit seemed to have become furious. It produced an ear-piercing screech and the surrounding spirits all began to charge at Jian Chen as if they had just received some order.

Jian Chen dispersed the spirits in a single stroke before dodging by using the Illusory Flash. However, the spirits were born from the mist, so they were in their natural environment. Thus, they were no slower than Jian Chen, surrounding him once again in the blink of an eye before boldly charging at him.

Jian Chen pushed the defense of his Chaotic Body to its limit and a white glow covered him as well. He was protecting himself with laws.

Chapter 1343: Weapon of the Sea Goddess

The vicious spirits charged at Jian Chen's light barrier, but when they came in contact with the glow, they all produced hissing sizzles, like grease in a fire pit.

Although Jian Chen's glow was similar to the barriers condensed from energy by other fighters, it possessed quite a powerful offensive ability as well. When the vengeful spirits collided with the light, their figures rapidly dimmed before dispersing soon after.

Jian Chen's layer of protection dimmed slightly after successfully blocking the spirits since their attacks were on the level of Saint Kings.

The spirits in the surroundings charged endlessly toward Jian Chen. They had no regard for life or death at all. In that moment, they seemed to have become fearless, cold-blooded warriors.

Finally, Jian Chen's layer of protection shattered after dispersing over ten vengeful spirits. The remaining spirits turned into something akin to a flood as they surged toward Jian Chen's head.

Jian Chen seemed to understand their intentions as his lips curled into an odd smile. He did not resist at all, allowing the spirits to enter his sea of consciousness.

Although Yadriam was engaged in an intense battle with the emperor-level spirit, she always paid attention to Jian Chen's situation. Seeing all the spirits enter Jian Chen head, she could not help but panic. The spirits were most skilled at attacking the souls of people, which was one of the hardest things to guard against. Injuries of the soul were far more severe than injuries of the body. Even Saint Emperors would not be able to ward off so many attacks from Saint King vicious spirits, let alone Jian Chen who only possessed the battle prowess of a Saint Emperor. There was even a chance that they would die.

Unfortunately, she needed to keep her opponent busy and was unable to break free. At the same time, the spirits had already entered Jian Chen's head. It was too late even if she wanted to assist him.

Yadriam paid close attention to Jian Chen's situation as she fought against the emperor-level spirit. Some worry and anxiety appeared in her eyes. She did not wish to see Jian Chen die here.

Spurt! Yadriam was injured by the spirit under her carelessness. She vomited a mouthful of blood and was blown away.

Her opponent immediately pursued her. The spirit's body became intangible again, dissolving into a ball of mist as it hovered over. It formed a cage around Yadriam.

Blue light shone bright within the white cage as terrifying ripples of energy pulsed in the surroundings. Yadriam had dismissed her thoughts and struck out with all her strength, engaging in an intense battle with the spirit cage. Behind her, an avatar that seemed like a fishman condensed. It possessed a surging presence. Every single strike from her seemed destructive.

Yadriam was injured, but she was still very powerful. The cage shook violently. A part of the spirit engaged in a devastating battle with her inside the cage.

Jian Chen remained in the same spot without moving at all as several dozen spirits entered his head. He seemed like a statue. However, this did not last too long; Jian Chen opened his eyes a few seconds later. The light in his eyes shone with interest as he glared at the emperor-level spirit's cage. He then sent a powerful sword Qi in that direction.

Boom!

The cage of mist around Yadriam was already showing signs of collapsing from her attacks, so it immediately erupted in a violent fashion with Jian Chen's attack.

Discovering that Jian Chen was fine, Yadriam immediately let out a sigh of relief before focusing on her battle against the spirit.

Yadriam's opponent possessed a certain level of intelligence. Seeing how Jian Chen was perfectly fine, it was clearly dumbstruck and in some disbelief.

Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash and charged toward the spirit as a blur. A two-meter-long sword Qi had already condensed in his hand, which he used to stab at the spirit along with a dazzling, white light.

The sword Qi pierced the spirit and produced hissing sounds. A fist-sized hole was rapidly dissolved away by the sword Qi.

Yadriam's eyes narrowed at the sight of this. She was secretly shocked. Jian Chen's threat against the spirits was actually even greater than her own.

"Just what is the energy that Jian Chen uses? It seems to be at the same level as the power of emperors, but it also seems to be at a far greater level," Yadriam thought.

The emperor-level spirit gradually fell to a disadvantage against Jian Chen and Yadriam's teamwork. It became even more illusory, mostly due to the attacks from Jian Chen. After all, Jian Chen's sword Qi was a condensation of laws. It was far more harmful to the spirit than Yadriam.

Suddenly, the spirit turned into mist and split into two. Those two pieces pierced toward Jian Chen and Yadriam's foreheads at the same time, like swords.

Jian Chen's protective glow was unable to stop the spirit at the level of emperors. It entered his head in the end.

Yadriam was not fortunate enough to avoid it either. The spirit managed to attack her soul.

The emperor-level spirit materialized into a terrifying white devil in Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. However, before it could

devour his soul, an azure and violet light enveloped the demon.

The landscape of the sea of consciousness underwent a drastic change. A vast starry sky appeared where countless corpses of immortals littered the space. Golden blood hovered among the stars, radiating with a terrifying pressure and energy pulses.

The white devil began to violently tremble as fear filled its eyes. Afterward, it screamed and immediately fled. It hurried away at a speed many times faster than when it had come in, leaving Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

At the same time, the center of Yadriam's eyebrows erupted with a dazzling blue light. A blue imprint of a trident suddenly appeared, and it left her face and rapidly expanded, turning into a three-meter-long trident that hovered over her. It gave off a layer of blue light, which enveloped her.

This was a weapon of true power. It pulsed in a terrifying fashion. The presence was actually countless times more powerful than Emperor Armaments.

The spirit was forced out by the weapon and rapidly fused with its other half before glancing at Jian Chen with lingering fear. Afterward, it turned and fled without staying any longer.

Yadriam just happened to catch the fear the spirit had looked at Jian Chen with. She was clearly stunned, as if she did not believe what she had just seen. She then glanced at Jian Chen and sank into her thoughts.

Jian Chen stared in the direction the spirit had fled in for a while before looking at Yadriam. He became fixated on the trident above her head while his face was filled with surprise. He said, "Hall master, is that an Emperor Armament? Why do I feel that it's even more powerful than the ancestral weapons of the ten protector clans?"

The trident rapidly shrank with a blurry glow, returning to its

original imprint-like shape and embedding itself in Yadriam's forehead again where it rapidly vanished. Yadriam thought about how to respond silently before saying, "This isn't an Emperor Armament. It's the weapon that her majesty once used in the past."

"Is that so? No wonder the weapon's so powerful." Jian Chen understood. Obviously, the weapon of an Origin realm expert could not be compared to Emperor Armaments in terms of power.

Chapter 1344: The Anatta Tower

“Although I am in possession of her majesty’s weapon, I cannot use it whenever I want. I can only use it if I am in a situation where my life is threatened,” Yadriam added. Her gaze toward Jian Chen was filled with curiosity. She had to use the sea goddess’ weapon to drive off the vicious spirit, so she was very curious what Jian Chen had used to do the same thing.

“No wonder he can emerge unscathed after so many spirits had attacked his soul. Even emperor-level spirits are unable to do anything to him and end up reacting with fear. Jian Chen must be in possession of something impressive.” Yadriam thought, but she did not ask Jian Chen about it. Every single person possessed their secrets.

The next part of the journey was relatively peaceful. Although they came across a few dangers from time to time, the number of vicious spirits that attacked them drastically decreased.

Suddenly, the surrounding mist began to grow thin. Their range of visibility extended to over ten thousand meters from just a hundred meters before. The region of space there was very stable, where even a battle between Saint Emperors would fail to cause it to ripple.

“Stop!” Yadriam cried out and immediately stopped with Jian Chen. Both of them became very stern because they had remembered a warning the sea goddess had gave them. They had to avoid regions where the mist thinned because they were forbidden.

“We’ve entered a forbidden zone. Retreat!” Yadriam said heavily, but before she could finish what she was saying, a terrifying killing intent filled the surroundings and enveloped the two of them. They immediately felt like they had plunged into the waters of the arctic, where it was bone-chillingly cold.

The killing intent was just far too powerful, at a level where it was just shocking. Even with their strength, Yadriam and Jian Chen felt like they had been immobilized by the killing intent, as if they had been frozen there.

Both of them were stupefied. The forbidden zone was even more terrifying than they had imagined. Just the killing intent had reached such horrendously powerful levels.

Jian Chen and Yadriam looked to a spot over ten kilometers away. At that spot, there was an abnormal ball of flickering red light. There were marks of bright-red blood on the ground that had still not dried. The terrifying killing intent in the surroundings originated from the red light.

“What is that?” Jian Chen and Yadriam became fixated on the ball of red light. They were shocked by it. Was it a treasure or was it something dangerous?

“Master, that’s the organs of an expert,” suddenly the sword spirits’ voices rang out in Jian Chen’s head.

“What!” Jian Chen was stunned. He stared at the ball of red light in disbelief. He was shocked by how powerful the presence of the organs were, enough to directly kill a Saint Emperor.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, what level of strength did this expert possess?” Jian Chen asked.

“This expert should have been an Immortal Emperor, but they’re not from the Immortals’ World. They’re an expert of the Saints’ World. The mist here is far more complicated than it seems as well. It’s filled with a presence of death. Once it invades the bodies of people, there is a chance that they will die. This is no simple place,” Zi Ying said.

Jian Chen stared at the abnormal red ball of light from ten kilometers away. He then used all he had to retreat step by step with Yadriam against the invasion of the killing intent and under

the great pressure.

Fortunately, the killing intent only originated from the organs of a supreme expert and did not possess any active offensive capabilities. At the same time, Jian Chen and Yadriam were very far away, which was why they were able to endure the pressure it, despite the difficulty, and retreat safely.

The killing intent disappeared when the surrounding mist thickened. However, what they had just witnessed before became permanently imprinted in their heads.

“What was that? I had a very powerful feeling that if I got too close, I would not have been able to leave,” Yadriam said with lingering fear. The red light from before was even more terrifying than the emperor-level vicious spirit.

Jian Chen shook his head and pretended he had no idea.

Yadriam and Jian Chen continued on their way, but they slowed down a lot. Even though they slowed down, they still ended up trespassing in a few forbidden zones even. It was the same with all of them; every forbidden region possessed the remains of a supreme expert that radiated with killing intent. The blood never dried, seeming to be demonic.

Jian Chen had learned from the sword spirits that the remains all originated from the same expert and had been there for countless years. The essence within them would never disperse and could easily kill Saint Emperors.

Fortunately, Jian Chen and Yadriam managed to stop in time whenever they trespassed in one of those regions. They then managed to retreat as quickly as possible everytime. This was the only reason why they were perfectly fine right now.

Suddenly, the surrounding space began to violently pulse. The surrounding landscape became blurry and Jian Chen discovered that Yadriam was rapidly fading away.

“Oh no, space has fallen into disorder again,” Jian Chen shivered inside. He had encountered similar situations many times already. The space within the Sea of Despair was very unstable and every time it fell into disorder, it would randomly transport them to another point in the Sea of Despair.

However, this time was different than all the times before. He had always been with Yadriam before and had been sent to the same place every time. He saw Yadriam grow blurry this time. This was a sign that they were about to be transported to different places.

Jian Chen did not have enough time to think through everything. He immediately grabbed Yadriam by the hand and yanked her over. They relied on the Abyssal Crystal to guide them through the Sea of Despair and the crystal was with Yadriam. If he ended up separating with her, he would become completely lost since visibility was limited to a hundred meters away. He might even end up trapped here forever.

Yadriam’s hand was slender and gentle. It was as smooth as jade and carried a certain coolness. However, Jian Chen was in no mood to consider her features. As soon as he pulled Yadriam over, the surrounding space descended into chaos as it pulsed in an extremely unstable manner.

The light around Yadriam rippled slightly, but it stabilized very soon. She drew her hand back from Jian Chen without raising a scene. Her heart, which was usually impervious to any desires, wavered slightly. It was no longer as calm as before.

There had not been a man who had touched her in her life.

The space stabilized and the two of them recovered their visibility as well. However, their faces became extremely ugly because they had appeared in a region without any mist.

The area around them was completely clear. The surroundings were desolate as far as the eye could see, and only the sky remained

a hazy white, having been enshrouded by the deadly mist.

“Oh no, we’ve probably arrived in the most dangerous region of them all,” Jian Chen said under his breath. The two of them had come across multiple regions like this along the way and had gained a rough understanding of them. The greater the danger, the thinner the mist would be. There was not any mist at all in this region.

Yadriam also became heavy-hearted. She looked around and found that everything looked the same. Even if she wanted to back out of this place, she would not know where to go.

Jian Chen looked around as well, but to his surprise, he failed to find the flesh or blood of the supreme expert.

After a moment of silence, Yadriam pulled out the Abyssal Crystal in a straightforward manner and summoned the Abyssal Bird to lead the way. The two of them set off by following the bird, but this time, they moved extremely slowly and carefully.

After traveling several dozen kilometers, a gigantic, ancient tower appeared before the two of them. The tower was several hundred meters tall and in horrible condition. It was covered with slashes from a sword and every single slash seemed to be hiding an extremely powerful sword that radiated a terrifying sword Qi.

Chapter 1345: The Anatta Grand Prime

Jian Chen's eyes immediately narrowed the moment he caught sight of the slashes on the ancient tower. He could sense a very powerful comprehension of the Way of the Sword from them. It was extremely profound, greatly exceeding anything he knew. Jian Chen sensed a whole different, boundless world from them. The slashes were unbelievably powerful.

Jian Chen became fixated on the densely-packed slashes on the tower. He slowly closed his eyes and attempted to comprehend the Way of the Sword left behind on the tower. He also walked the Way of the Sword, except he had only touched the very basics. The comprehension of the Way of the Sword within the slashes was very intense. If Jian Chen could comprehend even just a little, he felt like his understanding of the Way of the Sword would skyrocket and his strength would increase.

Jian Chen gradually focused his attention on the slashes, but as soon as his mind came in contact with them, his body violently jolted. He immediately paled while blood spurted into the air from his mouth as if he had become heavily injured. He staggered back.

The comprehension of the Way of the Sword hidden within the slashes was just too powerful, far beyond anything that Jian Chen could even touch upon. Not only did Jian Chen fail to comprehend anything as he had wished, but he had also been injured by the slashes.

"This is the Anatta Tower. Master, you must never try to comprehend the slashes on the tower. These slashes were left behind by the most powerful expert of the Immortals' World, the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. They're filled with a sharp killing intent, and even Sword Immortals can be heavily injured by them," Zi Ying's voice rang out in his head.

"What? The slashes were left behind by the Nirvanic Immortal

Exalt?” Jian Chen was completely stunned when he heard that. He knew exactly who the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt was. He was the strongest expert of the Immortals’ World both in name and reality. Although he remained as an Immortal Exalt, his strength had already surpassed Immortal Exalt in a certain sense. He was even more powerful than the former master of the sword spirits. Jian Chen felt extremely astounded when he learned that slashes from the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt were in the Sea of Despair.

Zi Ying sank into his memories and mumbled, “This ancient tower is known as the Anatta Tower. It’s the fated god artifact of the Anatta Grand Prime who stood at the peak of the Saints’ World. The Anatta Grand Prime was powerful enough to be ranked within the top three in terms of strength in the Saints’ World, where only the Grand Prime of the warring gods possessed the downright ability to defeat her. In the war back then, the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt of our Immortal’s World was embroiled in a devastating battle against the Anatta Grand Prime in the void of space. In the end, the Anatta Grand Prime fled with heavy injuries and her whereabouts became unknown. I never thought that the Anatta Grand Prime had fallen in the end, and his fated artifact would end up here.”

Jian Chen asked again after his thoughts clicked, “Does that mean that the damaged piece of armor I obtained from the treasury of the Tao family belongs to the Anatta Grand Prime?”

“Master, I am uncertain about that. The Anatta Grand Prime’s most famed artifact was the Anatta Tower. The tower is extremely powerful. It can devastate a whole region of the cosmos, refine almost everything in the world, or store away a whole section of the world. Even in our Immortals’ World, the artifact was renowned. We never paid attention to what armor the Anatta Grand Prime wore,” answered Zi Ying.

“Master, do you still remember the remains of the supreme expert you came cross earlier? The remains should belong to an

expert at the level of Immortal Emperor. The damaged armor might have come from him. However, the Anatta Grand Prime has fallen and the Anatta Tower has been heavily damaged by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt. The tower should possess all the wealth the Grand Prime managed to accumulate throughout his life. Master, we can try and enter the tower,” Qing Suo said with a clear voice.

Jian Chen’s heart immediately began to beat with excitement. He did not doubt that any item from the collection of a Grand Prime was enough to overshadow everything he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm.

Jian Chen immediately began to walk toward the Anatta Tower. He did not move quickly, taking every step cautiously, fearing that something might happen.

“What are you doing? You can tell with a single glance that the tower’s not simple. It might even be more dangerous than anything we’ve come across,” Yadriam could not help but warn him when she saw Jian Chen start walking toward the tower. This was because it was a very large region without any mist, which meant that the dangers here were far greater than any of the times before.

“Hall master, have a break here. I’ll go over there and have a look,” Jian Chen said to Yadriam, because he believed the sword spirits.

Yadriam watched Jian Chen grow further away. She gritted her teeth and followed along, but she was also very careful. She had already made up her mind to use the weapon of the sea goddess at any moment.

Suddenly, the Anatta Tower shone with a hazy, azure light when Jian Chen was over a dozen kilometers away. A terrifying pulse immediately expanded from the tower, causing the surroundings to tremble.

Jian Chen and Yadriam revealed different expressions. They felt fear from the pulse as the very depths of their souls trembled.

“Oh no, the artifact spirit of the Anatta Tower has not dispersed yet. Master, retreat,” the sword spirits’ voice rang through Jian Chen’s head in a panic. Afterward, the sword spirits fell silent, hiding themselves well. They were heavily injured right now and did not possess their might from before. They were not the opponents of the artifact spirit in the tower.

“Retreat!” Jian Chen cried out before falling back with Yadriam as quickly as they could.

The Anatta Tower gently trembled as the azure light grew brighter and brighter. The terrifying pulse affected the surroundings, causing the space around it to violently distort and the mist in the air to churn wildly.

At the same time, the slashes on the tower began to shine with dazzling light. At that moment, all the slashes seemed to have roused. Every single slash seemed to transform, projecting a powerful, transparent sword that revolved around the tower. It began to suppress the structure.

The Anatta Tower was unable to overpower the slashes, so its glow gradually dimmed. In the end, it fell silent again. It stood there quietly just like any other dilapidated tower.

“The Nirvanic Immortal Exalt and former master were the two great Sword Gods of the Immortals’ World, but the Nirvanic Sword Immortal’s accomplishments in the Way of the Sword surpassed former master. The slashes he’s left on the Anatta Tower are actually seals and every single slash has given birth to its own spirit,” Zi Ying said emotionally as he observed the slashes on the tower from afar.

“The artifact spirit in the Anatta Tower has not dispersed yet, but it’s heavily injured just like us. At the same time, it’s been suppressed by the Nirvanic Immortal Exalt’s seal, preventing it

from recovering. Master, once you reach the seventh layer of the Chaotic Body, you should be able to approach the Anatta Tower,” said Qing Suo.

“The seventh layer?” Jian Chen became bitter inside. He had only just reached the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body and breaking through would only become more difficult. It was not an easy feat to reach the seventh layer.

Jian Chen and Yadriam began to travel in a direction opposite of the Anatta Tower. They traversed several hundred kilometers by foot before finally leaving the forbidden region. Afterward, Yadriam summoned the Abyssal Bird and continued on their way after detouring around the region where the Anatta Tower was.

This part of the journey was much more peaceful. Jian Chen and Yadriam came across fewer and fewer forbidden regions, and the vicious spirits that attacked them gradually vanished. The only problem was the distortions of space they came across several times, which sent them to random locations in the Sea of Despair and forced them to travel much more than needed.

A blue light finally appeared before them, less than a hundred meters in the mist after walking for so long.

A huge, majestic divine hall appeared before them. The entire structure shone with a resplendent blue light, which glimmered like crystal. The hall slowly drifted through the Sea of Despair.

The divine hall was entirely constructed from Abyssal Crystal. Abyssal Crystal was something that originated from the Sea of Despair, so the divine hall, which was completely constructed from it, could avoid a lot of the dangers present in the Sea of Despair.

“This is her majesty’s divine hall. We’ve finally found it!” Yadriam said with a trembling voice as she looked at the blue divine hall in excitement.

“Finally!” Jian Chen smiled triumphantly.

Chapter 1346: Sword-forging (One)

No one knew how large the Sea of Despair was. It had always been shrouded by mist even in ancient times. The sea goddess' Abyssal Crystal divine hall floated aimlessly through the Sea of Despair. It moved at all times, making it impossible for anyone to find it, including Origin realm experts. The only method was to use an Abyssal Crystal as a guide. Only then could someone find the correct location.

Yadriam excitedly flew up the steep stairs as Jian Chen followed close behind her. They made their way to the front entrance step by step.

The door of the divine hall was tightly closed and the entire structure hid an extremely powerful energy. Before this energy, even Jian Chen and Yadriam shivered.

Yadriam took out the Abyssal Crystal and performed several hand seals. She used a secret technique to activate the energy within the Abyssal Crystal. A blue pillar of light appeared from the crystal, and under Yadriam's control, it formed an extremely profound inscription, which then struck the main entrance with lightning-like speed.

Immediately, the door of the divine hall began to shine with a blue light. The powerful energy sleeping within seemed to have awakened, and with a series of creaks, the door slowly opened.

Not only was the Abyssal Crystal the guide to finding the divine hall, but it was also the key to the divine hall as well. However, a corresponding secret technique was needed.

An icy and desolate presence immediately began to radiate out of the divine hall, causing Jian Chen and Yadriam to shiver inside. They felt like they had arrived in the ancient times. The divine hall had drifted through the Sea of Despair for several hundreds of thousands of years, even reaching over a million. It had never been

opened the entire time it had drifted, so the residual presence inside was extremely ancient.

The divine hall was empty and silent. An invisible pressure permeated the entire building. The door closed automatically after Jian Chen and Yadriam entered the divine hall. Afterward, the sea goddess' familiar voice rang out.

“You’ve finally arrived safely in my divine hall. Jian Chen, I’ll send you to the control center of the divine hall and give you partial control. Take the divine hall and leave the Sea of Despair with Yadriam,” the sea goddess said with excitement that she struggled to hide. There was not long before she would be able to bask in the sun once again.

An invisible force gathered and surrounded Jian Chen. The force was gentle, but it was also powerful to the point that Jian Chen could not resist.

With a flash of blue light, Jian Chen was sent away by the force. He entered the control center and began to refine the divine hall.

“Yadriam, you are injured. Jian Chen needs a few days to refine the divine hall, so use this time to heal,” the sea goddess said to Yadriam. Her figure had not appeared, so her voice originated from the surroundings.

“Yes, your majesty,” Yadriam replied politely before sitting down on the spot. She began to work on recovering.

In the Sea of Despair, she and Jian Chen had suffered injuries on different levels. Jian Chen possessed the toughness and recovery rate of the Chaotic Body, so he was able to recover without requiring much time after becoming injured. Yadriam was not in possession of such a powerful body. Although she had ingested quite a lot of medicine, there were still signs of injuries hidden within her body.

In the blink of an eye, a few days passed. Yadriam made a full

recovery within those days and returned to her peak condition while Jian Chen had successfully refined the divine hall. He had left the control center and had appeared before Yadriam.

Jian Chen only gained partial control over the divine hall. The true master of the divine hall was still the sea goddess, but after he had gained partial control, he had obtained an even clearer understanding of the power of the divine hall. He was as insignificant as an ant before the divine hall. The power hidden within was enough to easily wipe out Saint Emperors.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Yadriam worked together to pilot the divine hall. They hurried off in another direction, guided by the Abyssal Crystal.

The journey back was far less complicated than when they made their way to the divine hall. Not only did Jian Chen and Yadriam manage to avoid many of the dangers in the Sea of Despair; they were even able to resist the distortions of space with the divine hall. They had no need to worry about being transported to an unknown location due to the distortions, throwing them off-course.

Their primary reason for entering the Sea of Despair this time was to bring out the soul of the sea goddess and prepare for her resurrection. Without the Abyssal Crystal, even the sea goddess would find it very difficult to make it out of the Sea of Despair. After all, she was no longer in possession of her peak strength. She was just a soul now, unable to use many of her abilities or secret techniques.

The divine hall did not fly very quickly, but since it could repel the distortions of space, they managed to avoid a lot of detours. It only took around a dozen days before they made it out of the Sea of Despair, returning to the sea realm. It was several fold shorter than the amount of time it had taken them to reach the divine hall.

“Your majesty, what should we do next?” Jian Chen asked. Now

that the entirety of the sea goddess' soul had left the Sea of Despair, they could resurrect her.

“My resurrection requires the activation of the ninety-nine spirit springs in the sea realm. The Qi from the springs will nourish the vitality of my body, allowing my soul to fuse perfectly with it. There must be no disruptions during the process, or everything we've done will be useless,” said the sea goddess.

“Your Majesty, the hall masters of the Serpent God Hall and Heaven's Spirit Hall have lusted over you legacy for a very long time. When your Majesty undergoes resurrection, the two hall masters are likely to come to disrupt the process. They are experts who have been emperors for a very long time. We obviously do not fear them in an open fight, but I fear that they will disrupt the process without considering the consequences. That will be very difficult for us to stop,” Jian Chen said with some worry.

“I've already made many preparations for her Majesty's resurrection. Coupled with her majesty's weapon and divine hall, stopping them will not be difficult,” said Yadriam.

“Yadriam, can I ask how confident you are at stopping the two hall masters? They possess powerful secret techniques after all,” Jian Chen asked.

Yadriam thought about it silently before responding, “I am around eighty percent confident that I can and ninety if I have her majesty's divine hall. It's just a pity that the resurrection cannot be held in the divine hall, or there would be no problem even if there were several more opponents.”

Jian Chen fell silent and sank into his thoughts.

“Jian Chen, do you have any good ideas to successfully resurrect me?” The sea goddess asked hopefully. They had reached a crucial stage for her resurrection. She did not wish for everything to fail here and waste everything they had already accomplished.

“Your Majesty, if you can give me half a year to forge my swords, I am confident I can stop the two hall masters or even kill them. Then, your Majesty’s resurrection will be successful,” Jian Chen said, full of confidence.

Chapter 1347: Sword-forging (Two)

“Forge swords? What swords do you want to forge? How are they so powerful that they can kill two emperors? Are you going to be training some powerful secret technique instead?” Yadriam glanced over and asked out of curiosity. She had gained a complete understanding of Jian Chen’s strength during their time together in the Sea of Despair. She assumed that he possessed some powerful treasure, but his battle prowess was only at the level of a standard Saint Emperor. He would find it difficult to put up a fight against experts who had become Saint Emperors a very long time ago.

This was because the hall master of the Serpent God Hall possessed powerful secret techniques, more than just one of them. After observing Jian Chen, she understood that the power he used was very great, but he had never used a secret technique.

Jian Chen shook his head and said, “I’m not going train some powerful secret technique. I will be forging weapons that suit me.”

Yadriam became even more curious. She looked at Jian Chen in surprise, as if she no longer knew him. It was a common fact that all the humans of the Tian Yuan Continent practiced Saint Force and would condense their own Saint Weapons from it. She had never seen anyone become an exception to that fact in all these years, let alone hear that an expert needed to forge their weapons.

Even the Ruler Armaments of Saint Rulers, King Armaments of Saint Kings, and Emperor Armaments of Saint Emperors were all condensed from Saint Force by their previous owners. They were a materialization of energy, which made them even tougher than steel.

“Jian Chen, we’ll wait half a year since you’re so confident. Reconstructing my body is very urgent, but so many years have passed already. Just another half a year is nothing,” the sea

goddess agreed to Jian Chen's suggestion. Clearly, she did not wish to see anything happen to the resurrection process and ruin everything they had done so far.

Jian Chen shrank the divine hall to the size of a fist and gave it to Yadriam so that she could bring it back to the Sea Goddess Hall. Afterward, he returned to the Turtle clan by himself. He spoke to the elders before immediately entering seclusion. At the same time, Tie Ta entered seclusion as well. Jian Chen had given him a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach and a few Immortal Tier heavenly resources. He planned on using the heavenly resources to properly increase his strength.

After all, he was the same as Jian Chen. He possessed battle prowess on the level of Saint Emperors, but his cultivation still dwelled on the level of Saint Kings.

The Turtle clan was as prominent as the midday sun in the sea realm now. Guests visited them from everywhere, and they were all extremely polite. Even the people from some of the most powerful clans dared not to act snobbishly when they paid a visit to the Turtle clan, so Jian Chen and Tie Ta did not need to worry about the safety of the clan. They entered seclusion at ease and cut off all contact from the outside world. They would not emerge until they had accomplished what they were aiming for.

Deep underground in a gloomy room, a fist-sized golden tower hovered in the air with a hazy glow. Jian Chen sat within a majestic hall within the artifact space as he communicated with the sword spirits.

“Master, there are two main steps to forging the swords. These two steps possess the utmost importance to forging anything. The first step is to melt the materials by using your own Settling Flames. However, the grade of the materials is closely tied to the strength of the flames. If the materials are too high of a grade and the flames are too weak, it's impossible to melt the materials, thus, making it impossible to continue forging them.”

“The second step determines whether the forging of a sword is successful or not. They need to be inscribed with sword inscriptions. The quality of an immortal sword is not only related to the materials it’s forged from but also the power of the inscriptions. The more powerful the sword is, the more powerful its inscriptions are.”

Jian Chen immediately found the matter to be troublesome after hearing that. He knew that it would be difficult to forge the Azulets swords, but he had never imagined it would be so complicated. He knew nothing about Settling Flames or sword inscriptions. His agreement of half a year with the sea goddess had been based off of what the sword spirits had told him to say.

It seemed like he had a lot to learn if he wanted to forge the Azulet Swords. Half a year might not be enough time.

“Master, you don’t need to worry so much. Since we said that you only need half a year to forge the swords, you will definitely be able to do it in that time frame. The Settling Flames are divided into three major levels, which are the Settling Triflames, Settling Hexaflames, and Settling Novaflames. The triflames are the weakest and can only melt materials that are no higher than the Immortal Tier. However, these Settling Flames are produced by circulating and burning the energy in the body with the use of a secret technique. We will be passing this secret technique to master. With master’s talent, you should be able to grasp it very quickly, and with master’s Chaotic Force, the flames produced will definitely be Chaotic Flames. Even though they’re not true Chaotic Flames, they’re much more powerful than Settling Flames of the same level. They will be able to melt Immortal Tier materials...”

Jian Chen gained somewhat of an understanding of forging the swords with that explanation. Creating the Chaotic Flames was akin to burning the Chaotic Force within him, which would be consumed very quickly. Jian Chen had only just reached the fourth layer, so his Chaotic neidan was still the size of a soybean. He did

not have a lot of Chaotic Force, not enough to gain a grasp over Chaotic Flames.

Jian Chen grabbed a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach from his Space Ring and consumed it without any hesitation. It turned into vast energy that expanded throughout Jian Chen's body. The amount of energy was extremely shocking, but it was pure and gentle, making absorption very easy, and it would not cause any problems for his body, such as exploding from too much energy.

Jian Chen began to circulate his energy along a certain path as he began to refine the vast amounts of energy within the peach. A fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach could increase his cultivation by two thousand five hundred years. This period of time was calculated according to the time of higher worlds, so on the Tian Yuan Continent, it was enough to replace ten thousand years of cultivation by a person or even more than that.

Of course, talent played a factor in regards to the time period as well. Every single person possessed a different amount of talent, which was why they would spend different amounts of time at similar cultivation levels. If the peach was consumed by a genius, it would probably only be equivalent to a thousand years of cultivation or just a few centuries.

The vast energy had already formed a swirl in Jian Chen's dantian. He was currently refining and absorbing the energy as quickly as he could. His soybean-sized chaotic neidan seemed to have become a bottomless lake. As the vast amounts of energy poured in, nothing evident seemed to happen. It was growing at an extremely gradual rate.

Seven days later, the energy from the peach completely disappeared, having all been absorbed by Jian Chen with nothing left. The fifth grade peach had increased his chaotic neidan by an inch in diameter. It was just slightly smaller than a dove's egg now.

Jian Chen observed his chaotic neidan and could not help but feel

rather disappointed. The effects of the peach were not as significant as he had imagined. The amount of energy he needed for cultivation had increased by several fold yet again after reaching the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body.

Chapter 1348: Sword-forging (Three)

However, Jian Chen did not stop. He knew that he would be burning his Chaotic Force by using the Chaotic Flames, so he would end up using a tremendous amount of Chaotic Force. Even after his chaotic neidan had increased by an inch in width, it could still lead to failure during the sword-forging if he ran out in the final crucial moments.

Violet Cloud Peaches could only be consumed once in a hundred years, or they would lose their effects. He needed to wait a century before he could consume another one. As a result, Jian Chen pulled out a few dozen Class 9 Xuanhuang beast energy crystals and a large pile of heavenly resources that could increase a person's strength. He had obtained all these heavenly resources from the Xuanhuang Microcosm. Thus, even the lowest grade was at the Immortal Tier.

At the same time, these heavenly resources were even more valuable than regular ones since they originated from a Xuanhuang Microcosm. Their effects were far more powerful than the heavenly resources from the outside world.

However, Jian Chen immediately put the energy crystals away after absorbing a single Class 9 crystal. When he was still at the third layer, a single energy crystal could still be refined into quite a few strands of Chaotic Force. Now, the amount of energy one provided was basically insignificant.

Jian Chen looked at the pile of heavenly resources beside him. His hopes of quickly increasing his Chaotic Force all lay with them.

Jian Chen began to stuff himself with the heavenly resources. He knew that their effects would be even greater if they were refined into pills, but even when considering the fact that he did not know how to refine pills, there was probably no one in the world with the ability to refine these heavenly resources.

Once Jian Chen wolfed down some heavenly resources, his face became flushed and he could not help but tremble slightly. The energy hidden within the heavenly resources was tough and domineering. He felt like he had consumed gunpowder when they reached his stomach, where they exploded with violent energy that wreaked havoc on his body. If he had been weaker, he probably would have been blasted to pieces.

If it were not for the fact that Jian Chen's Chaotic Body had reached the fourth layer and that the toughness of his body had increased drastically, he probably would have been quite heavily injured from just a single heavenly resources. The energy within the heavenly resources was nowhere near as vast as the Violet Cloud Peach and absorbing it was far more difficult. It would have been impossible for him to consume heavenly resources if he hadn't established a certain foundation of strength beforehand.

Jian Chen consumed the heavenly resources one by one, but after understanding how volatile the energy in them was, he gave up on the heavenly resources that were of the third grade or higher. He only consumed first and second grade heavenly resources. He choose to do this to prevent himself from being heavily injured before he could power up.

Gradually, the pile of heavenly resources near Jian Chen became smaller and smaller before completely disappearing altogether a few days later. However, the effects of consuming so many heavenly resources was only equivalent to the fifth grade Violent Cloud Peach, which only made Jian Chen's chaotic neidan slightly larger than a dove's egg.

What Jian Chen collected the most in the Xuanhuang Microcosm was not the energy crystals of Xuanhuang beasts but Immortal Tier heavenly resources. Jian Chen pulled out another large pile of first and second grade heavenly resources and continued increasing his strength.

Jian Chen originally planned to leave some of the heavenly

resources for the people around him, but after understanding their volatility, he decisively dismissed that thought. The heavenly resources were unlike the more valuable varieties, such as the Violet Cloud Peaches or Flamecloud Fruit. They were unsuitable for people beneath Saint Emperor to ingest without being refined into pills, and even a few Saint Emperors would become heavily injured from the violent energy in them after consuming them.

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had been in seclusion for a month. He had consumed over a hundred heavenly resources and refined them into a large quantity of Chaotic Force, allowing his chaotic neidan to rapidly expand.

Jian Chen emerged from seclusion full of confidence. He had discovered that his body had developed some immunity to the effects of the heavenly resources after consuming so many in such a short amount of time. They were becoming less effective at increasing the amount of Chaotic Force he could absorb. It was an aftereffect, but this aftereffect would slowly vanish with the passage of time.

Jian Chen secretly checked on the situation of the Turtle clan before silently leaving. He still had five months before the agreed time with the sea goddess. During that time, he needed to forge the Azulet swords.

“I already have enough Chaotic Force to forge the Azulet swords. I should look for somewhere suitable now.” Jian Chen shot into the air like a rocket and passed through the protective barrier of the sea realm extremely quickly. He appeared above the vast ocean before flying in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent.

Soon afterward, Jian Chen returned to the Tian Yuan Continent. He kept his eye out for a region of concentrated volcanic activity along the way since that region would be suitable for forging his swords.

Jian Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed when he flew past a

mountain range. There was actually an ancient clan there with a Saint King present. He was at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer. Such powerful strength was extremely rare on the Tian Yuan Continent.

Jian Chen stopped and slowly descended. An invisible pressure radiated from him, surrounding the ancient hall where the Saint King was in seclusion. The other Saint Rulers had failed to sense the pressure.

In the next moment, the door to the hall opened and a white-robed, sagely old man hurried out. He stared at Jian Chen in shock while Jian Chen hovered in the sky. Although Jian Chen seemed very young, the old man refused to believe that was his true age since he could feel a tremendous pressure from him, almost to the point where he found it to be suffocating.

“Saint Emperor!” The old man felt shocked, before immediately clasping his hands at Jian Chen. He asked politely, “I am Kong Tian and I greet senior. I have failed to welcome you from afar when senior has come to visit my Kong family. Please forgive me.”

“Kong Tian, this emperor wants to know where the largest and hottest region of volcanoes on the Tian Yuan Continent is located,” Jian Chen asked nonchalantly. He knew that Kong Tian had treated him as a Saint Emperor, so he obviously needed to act like one.

Chapter 1349: Sword-forging (Four)

Kong Tian became stunned by Jian Chen's questions. He wondered to himself if the Saint Emperor had really just come to his Kong family to ask such a question.

Despite his intense curiosity, Kong Tian dared not to behave rashly before a Saint Emperor. He thought about the question seriously before replying with clasped hands, "Senior, from what I can recall, the hottest place on the Tian Yuan Continent would be the far western side of the continent. There is a large expanse of volcanoes near the west sea, filling a circle with a radius of two hundred thousand kilometers. It's unendurably hot there, and there are eruptions all year round. Ordinary people are unable to approach the region at all."

"The west," Jian Chen mumbled and took note of the region. Afterward, he asked some more questions, "Kong Tian, this emperor has been in secluded cultivation for many years and has only recently emerged. I want to know if there has been any major things that have occurred on the continent."

"Senior, there has indeed been a lot of shocking matters that have recently occurred. First, the former sect master of the Bloodsword sect, Houston, became a Saint Emperor, and then the great elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian, became one as well. However, these two matters were nothing compared to another matter. In the depths of Mercenary City..." Kong Tian informed Jian Chen of everything he knew. He told him about everything that had happened without bending any truths or hiding any details. He placed particular focus on the seal beneath Mercenary City when he explained everything.

Jian Chen became stern. He had spent most of his time in the sea realm recently, so he had no idea what had happened on the Tian Yuan Continent. He had never thought that the seal of the World of Forsaken Saints would have broken so soon and that they had

already sent scouts to the Tian Yuan Continent.

“The World of Forsaken Saints is extremely powerful. According to what I learned in Mercenary City, they have even more Saint Emperors than the Saint Kings of the Tian Yuan Continent,” Kong Tian heavily added. His complexion was horrible. The World of Forsaken Saints possessed a terrifying amount of power. Many Saint Kings even thought they were seeing the premonition of an apocalypse.

“Since all the Saint Kings of the Tian Yuan Continent have gathered in Mercenary City, why are you still hiding here?” Jian Chen asked nonchalantly.

Kong Tian’s face changed. He was afraid of being punished by the ‘Saint Emperor’ because of this. After all, he was not the opponent of a Saint Emperor, so he hurriedly explained in fear, “Senior, it’s not that I’m unwilling to use everything I have to protect the Tian Yuan Continent at Mercenary City, but I’ve already reached the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer. As a result, I wanted to use this period of time to go into seclusion and reach the Ninth Heavenly Layer before the World of Forsaken Saints invades. That way, I’ll be of even more use during battle.”

Jian Chen nodded slightly. With a wave of his hand, he tossed a Class 8 Xuanhuang beast energy crystal at Kong Tian and said, “That’s the monster core of a foreign beast. Use it to cultivate. I hope you can reach the Ninth Heavenly Layer soon and protect the Tian Yuan Continent.”

“I thank senior for senior’s gift,” Kong Tian caught the energy crystal and responded emotionally. Even though he was a Saint King, Class 8 Monster Cores were extremely important to him. After all, Class 7 Monster Cores were items that could only be encountered by chance. Class 8 Monster Cores were even more valuable, and even Saint Kings would struggle to obtain them.

With a single movement, Jian Chen instantly disappeared,

leaving behind an afterimage. He was lightning-fast, and he looked like he had just teleported away.

Jian Chen hurried off with the Illusory Flash. He moved faster and faster before he turned into a faint afterimage in the end. He hurried to the west to an area described by Kong Tian.

He did not use a Space Gate, but since his understanding of the Illusory Flash had rapidly increased, he could move even faster than Saint Emperors.

A day later, Jian Chen appeared several million kilometers away. During his journey, he had passed by Mercenary City. He had used his soul to sweep through the entire area from a hundred thousand kilometers away to check on its situation. However, he did not stop while continuing south.

This was because he knew that he would not be able to provide much support before he had forged the Azulet swords even though his strength was on par with Saint Emperors now. He would only be an extremely ordinary Saint Emperor when the army of Saint Emperors from the World of Forsaken Saints attacked.

“I need to resurrect the sea goddess as soon as possible. Even if the Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent increase by tenfold, we still won’t be the World of Forsaken Saints’ opponent. Only Origin realm experts can change the situation,” Jian Chen thought.

The west possessed the largest volcanic ranges on the Tian Yuan Continent. They filled a radius of two hundred thousand kilometers and were close to the west sea. It was unendurably hot all year round, and rarely did anyone set foot there because several hundred volcanoes would erupt everyday. Even Heaven Saint Masters were unlikely to make it out alive if they entered this region.

There was no land in the region either. The surface was an endless expanse of lava with violent storms occurring from time to

time, flinging lava into the air. The lava in the air would turn the entire sky red and was even more violent than the storms at sea.

This region of volcanoes was a forbidden zone on the Tian Yuan Continent, except it was not as renowned as the Death Nest since even Saint Kings and Saint Emperors had fallen in the Death Nest before. Only Heaven Saint Masters were threatened in this volcano region while those who had reached Saint Ruler would be able to protect themselves.

At the same time, this was heaven for those who practiced fire-attributed Saint Force. However, the strength required to cultivate in this region was extremely great, not something that any ordinary person possessed.

Jian Chen approached the region with lightning-like speed. As soon as he arrived, he was hit by a wave of heat. He immediately felt like he had plunged into a sea of fire. His clothes caught on fire and were reduced to ashes in the blink of an eye.

Jian Chen used Chaotic Force to protect himself while he pulled out a new set of clothes from his Space Ring. He then flew to the depths of the region. There were even larger volcanoes and even hotter magma in the depths, which would be helpful for forging his swords.

Jian Chen discovered around a dozen Saint Rulers in individual caves along the way. The strongest out of all of them was a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. There was not a single Saint King to be seen.

Jian Chen arrived in the center of the volcanic region very quickly. An extremely large volcano stood before him, and its crater was over a thousand meters wide. The magma inside surged, producing huge waves from time to time. The fire-attributed energy there was extremely unstable.

Jian Chen could tell with a single glance that the volcano was about to erupt. While still in the air, he pondered whether to use it

or not for a while. He then plunged into the magma like a loose arrow.

The magma was terrifyingly hot. Without any doubt, Jian Chen believed that even steel that been refined hundreds of times would be reduced to a puddle of liquid in the shortest amount of time possible in there. Jian Chen used his Chaotic Force to protect himself and pushed away all the magma around him so that it could not make any contact with him at all. He immediately headed for the depths.

Jian Chen sank for several thousand meters before finally hitting solid ground. The surface was soft like soil, but it was several times hotter than the magma itself.

Jian Chen sat down and focused his attention. He began to practice the secret technique he had learned from the sword spirits, attempting to make his Chaotic Force burn to produce Chaotic Flames.

The secret technique was not profound. In the Immortals' World where the sword spirits came from, everyone knew it. In just three days, Jian Chen had gained a basic grasp over it. A gray flame happily flickered in his palm like a spirit.

The flame seemed gray on the surface, but with a closer inspection, it seemed to possess all the colors in the world. It was extremely odd.

As soon as the Chaotic Flames appeared, the surrounding temperature skyrocketed. The scarlet magma rapidly became a white color.

Suddenly, the magma began to churn. The appearance of the Chaotic Flames had caused the volcano to erupt prematurely. A pillar of flames shot into the sky from the crater, but the eruption this time was different. The flames it erupted with were not scarlet but reddish-white.

Chapter 1350: Sword-forging (Five)

The wild lava formed a scarlet wave that gushed into the sky before scattering like resplendent fireworks. It rained down everywhere, causing the entire sky to become scarlet red.

At the same time, the surrounding temperature climbed at an unbelievable rate. The sea of lava in the surroundings vigorously bubbled like boiling water.

The Chaotic Flames created from the Chaotic Force were far more powerful than Jian Chen had expected. Not only had the volcano erupted prematurely because of them, but all the volcanoes in the surroundings were affected as well.

Every single volcano seemed to be an independent existence, but they were all connected beneath the earth. Jian Chen's Chaotic Flames, which were at the center of all the volcanoes, had basically influenced all of them. Terrifying waves of heat rapidly rolled out, quickly expanding across the entire region.

At the same time, the Saint Rulers who had been cultivating in their caves stopped what they were doing and immediately emerged. They stared at the depths of the lava in shock.

“What’s happening? Why has the temperature here become so terrifying where even I find it hard to endure? Has something happened to the volcanoes?”

“Odd. Why is the temperature of the volcanoes climbing? Even I find it rather difficult to withstand. This has never happened before.”

“Is something happening to these volcanoes?”

The Saint Rulers all stared at the depths as surprise and suspicion filled their faces. They had already cultivated in this region for many years, so they possessed an extremely detailed understanding of this place. What had happened today was

unprecedented.

They hesitated above the sea of lava for a while. A few of them had retreated toward the outskirts because the temperature was still climbing. If the temperature continued to rise, a moment would come where they would find it unbearable even as fire-attributed Saint Rulers.

In the end, only three people remained. They were the strongest of all the Saint Rulers present, having already reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer and were not too far off from Saint Kings.

“Something’s definitely happened inside the volcanoes to cause these sudden changes. It might even be a fortuitous encounter. Sirs, would you like to work together and see just what is happening inside?” A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler asked the other two people.

In the end, the three of them agreed to move together and headed further into the depths simultaneously.

However, when they were a thousand kilometers from where Jian Chen was forging his swords, they both needed to stop. They all became flushed and their bodies seemed to be burning. The heat there had completely exceeded anything they had been expecting. They had possessed the strength to travel through the volcanoes before, but they had reached their limits now. They even began to suspect that they would be reduced to ashes if they took another step forward.

Boom!

Suddenly, with a powerful sound, the entire sea of lava churned. Huge waves tossed and turned as white-hot lava erupted from the largest volcano a thousand kilometers away, shooting through the sky. The eruption was so violent that it caused the surrounding space to gently tremble, and the heat was so shocking that it seemed to burn the air.

The three Saint Rulers stared in a daze at the unique, white-hot lava from a thousand kilometers away. With their sharp senses, they noticed that the violent fire-attributed energy in the surroundings calmed down with the eruption of the white-hot lava, behaving like a docile little lamb.

The lava shot into the sky and blossomed like a flower. It fell like a fan, enveloping a radius of a thousand kilometers.

“Oh no, retreat!” The three Saint Rulers revealed different expressions, because they just happened to be within the area that was going to be enveloped by the lava.

In the end, they managed to avoid the white-hot lava by a hair's breadth after fleeing with everything they had. When a stream of lava fell fifty meters away from them, the terrifying heat reduced their clothes to ashes instantaneously. Even their bodies became pitch-black, having been injured by the heat.

“So scary!” The three Saint Rulers all shivered from fright. They had suffered such injuries even though they were fifty kilometers from a stream of lava. The outcome would have been unthinkable if they had been hit by a stream.

“Something must have happened to these volcanoes. We cannot stay here for long. Let's leave as soon as possible and report this matter to Mercenary City. I am worried that this is connected to the World of Forsaken Saints,” a Saint Ruler immediately reached a conclusion before leaving in a state of shock. He hurried to Mercenary City.

Jian Chen sat at ease in the depths of the magma. All of the magma surrounding him had become white-hot. The temperature of the magma had increased several fold.

He used Chaotic Force to protect himself, so he did not fear the heat. He held a material for the Azulet swords in his hands. He lacked weapon forging experience, but the sword spirits would primarily be in charge of forging the swords this time. He was only

there for support, so he did not need to possess much skill at forging weapons.

What he did was very simple, which was listen to the sword spirits' commands. He melted the materials in a particular order before letting the sword spirits handle everything else.

“Master, you must closely observe the forging process this time. You will be able to gain quite a lot of valuable experience. Since the Azulet swords that we are forging this time are only immortal artifacts, just Zi Ying and I will be enough. However, if you want to forge god artifacts, the completion of such an item will completely depend on master,” Zi Ying warned. He and Qing Suo had already materialized, floating above Jian Chen's head as two illusionary figures. They stared at Jian Chen as he melted the materials with great attention.

Jian Chen nodded. He understood that the Azulet swords formed this time would only be temporary substitutes. He would not use them permanently. Once his strength had reached a corresponding level, the swords would fall into disuse. He would end up forging a second set of swords in the future.

Heaven's Soulstone, stardust, and all the other materials Jian Chen had gathered over many years, with great effort, were melted into a liquid by his Chaotic Flames. Jian Chen continued to power the Chaotic Flames so that they could purify the liquid so that only the essence of the materials remained.

Jian Chen spent a total of seven days on this step. The liquid had been reduced to two-thirds of its original size, but only the purest essence remained.

“Condense!” Zi Ying and Qing Suo exclaimed together. With that, Jian Chen immediately maneuvered the liquid in the air, having it undergo condensation by following a set of orderly steps. In the end, he condensed the blades of two palm-sized swords. He then used Draconix Wood to form the hilt, slowly forming the swords.

At the same time, Zi Ying and Qing Suo began to move as well. They each tended to one of the swords as they constantly changed hand seals, engraving inscription after inscription. Jian Chen poured his Chaotic Force into the blades endlessly as well, refining and forging the swords even more.

Chapter 1351: Shocking Sword Qi

The second stage of forging and refining the swords was the most important process. Not only would this stage impact the success and failure of the forging process, but it would also control the quality of the swords. The swords power would completely depend on this step and determine whether or not he could successfully forge them.

Jian Chen and the sword spirits got to work when they arrived at this step. The sword spirits took the lead by rapidly inscribing inscriptions on the swords.

When the inscriptions covering the immortal swords were about to be completed, the dull blades began to shine with a weak glow and a sharp presence. The glow rapidly strengthened as more inscriptions were added.

The second step was an extremely lengthy process. Jian Chen used his left hand to pour in Chaotic Force so that he could forge the swords and so that the Chaotic Force would be able to perfectly fuse with the swords. His right hand burned with Chaotic Flames, nurturing the swords as they went through the inscription process so that the inscriptions could fuse perfectly with the swords.

Chaotic Flames consumed Chaotic Force extremely rapidly. Jian Chen's chaotic neidan had clearly shrunk after several days of constant use.

Above the ruins of Mercenary city were several dozen divine halls that seemed to surround the city. There was a large, empty region directly above the seal in Mercenary City. No one stayed there so that they could avoid being struck by the streams of energy created by the spatial tunnel.

The four races all took up one side, making them divided. The humans had the most people. Virtually all the Saint Kings of the continent had gathered. After them were the experts of the

Wasteland Continent, who had sent three-quarters of their entire force with forbidden artifacts.

There were fewer magical beasts than the Hundred Races, but all three Saint Emperors had gathered together. They all remained within their own divine halls, giving off presences that were obviously meant to deter the other parties but caused the atmosphere to feel heavy.

The Sea race possessed the fewest people, only a few dozen. However, no one dared to underestimate them.

Several Emperor Armaments had been stabbed into the ground below and gave off terrifying pulses of energy, causing the surrounding space to shake. They were extremely powerful.

The experts of Mercenary City had all gathered within one of the divine halls in the human region. The person who lead them was the grand elder of Mercenary City.

The grand elder sat on the highest point in the room. His face had darkened and he was extremely stern. There was also some worry present on his face. He mumbled, “The great elder still has not refined the supreme divine hall. I wonder when he will succeed. If we have the divine hall, our confidence will be greater when dealing with the invasion of the World of Forsaken Saints. I just hope that they don’t attack too soon, or we might not be able to repel them with our strength here.

“Changyang Qing Yun’s taken away the ancestral weapon of his clan. Back then, Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Qing Yun left together. Changyang Zu Xiao has already returned while Changyang Qing Yun and the other great leaders are nowhere to be seen. I wonder where they’ve gone with the ancestral weapon. Have they changed their minds now?” The sixth elder of Mercenary City asked.

The grand elder fell silent before standing up, “I’ll go see Changyang Zu Xiao right now and ask him about the situation. The

ancestral weapons of the ten protector clans are crucial for repelling the invasion. If great elder Tian Jian uses them to cast the supreme killing formation left behind by the city lord, we'll be able to temporarily stop the World of Forsaken Saints even if they send an army of Saint Emperors.

The grand elder left the divine hall of Mercenary City and went to Changyang Zu Xiao's divine hall to inquire about the situation. He wanted to borrow the Emperor Armament of the Changyang clan.

"Something has happened to our Changyang clan. Our founding ancestor, Yang Lie, has returned. The ancestor has taken away the Emperor Armament and the great elders of the Yuan and Qing branches were heavily injured. They are currently in seclusion and healing, so they are unable to come," Changyang Zu Xiao told the truth after hesitating for a while. Although the return of their founding ancestor was unbelievable, the Tyrant's Blade School had already mentioned a similar occurrence before.

"What! The founding ancestor of your Changyang clan is still alive!?" The grand elder of Mercenary City was astounded. After all, it had already been more than a million years since the Changyang clan had been founded. The clan was even more ancient than Mercenary City.

Changyang Zu Xiao gently sighed while his feelings became mixed. The return of their founding ancestor was supposed to be something to celebrate, but he was unable to lighten up no matter what since the founding ancestor's past identity was actually his own great-grandson. The hierarchy had been reduced to a mess.

Because of this matter, Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun remained silent and depressed.

The grand elder fell silent for a while, finally accepting this shocking piece of news. Afterward, he asked, "Changyang Zu Xiao, do you know where the senior is?"

“He’s left with the founding ancestor of the Tyrant’s Blade School, Guihai Yidao. I don’t know where he is, but he will recover his strength very soon. When the World of Forsaken Saints invades, the ancestor should appear,” said Changyang Zu Xiao.

“Fantastic, fantastic. This is just fantastic,” the grand elder was overjoyed. The strength of the Tian Yuan Continent would drastically increase that way.

“When the great elders of the Tyrant’s Blade School had said that their ancestor had returned, I thought they were joking. Never would I have expected what they had said to be true,” the grand elder sighed emotionally to himself.

At this moment, a Saint Ruler of Mercenary City hurried into the divine hall. He said with clasped hands, “Grand elder, there are three Saint Rulers who want to see you outside. They say that they have something important to report, where it might even be connected to the World of Forsaken Saints.”

The grand elder’s face changed slightly with that. He clasped his hands at Changyang Zu Xiao before leaving in a hurry.

The grand elder met the three Saint Rulers, who had come from the western volcano range, outside. The three Saint Rulers told the grand elder what they had seen as well as what they believed was happening, catching the grand elder’s attention.

Very soon, there were many experts of the four races who came after receiving the news. It was a sensitive period of time. Anything that could be connected to the World of Forsaken Saints was enough to peak their interest.

“Is it caused by that Scorching Divine Phoenix’s secluded cultivation?” A Class 8 Magical Beast in human form asked.

“But we didn’t sense the presence of any magical beasts at all,” the three Saint Rulers politely replied. Every single breath they took was filled with hesitation before the Saint Kings.

“No matter what it is, we should go and have a look. If it really is that Divine Scorching Phoenix, we can invite her to join us and protect this world. However, if it’s another tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints, we can prepare for the invaders beforehand,” the grand elder said heavily.

Afterward, the four races all sent some experts to the volcanoes to check on the situation.

The volcanoes in the west were currently undergoing an overwhelming change. All the volcanoes in the region were erupting and flames and lava were thrown into the sky, turning it a scarlet color. The endless sea of lava below violently churned. From just a single breath, one would feel like they were breathing in a bundle of roaring flames. The temperature was just frightening.

“This definitely isn’t caused by the phoenix. It’s impossible for her to make all the volcanoes in the region undergo such shocking changes, and her presence isn’t here either,” said a magical beast. His face immediately became ugly. He had already sensed that the changes here were likely connected to the World of Forsaken Saints.

“Let’s enter and immediately have a look around,” the grand elder suggested. He used Saint Force and World Force to protect himself before charging into the depths.

When they had advanced ten thousand kilometers, a terrifying sword Qi suddenly appeared, causing all of them to shiver. The sword Qi was just far too powerful. It possessed a seemingly-destructive presence, ripping through space before boldly spreading in all directions.

“Look! What is that?” Suddenly, a Saint King called out as he pointed ahead.

Everyone looked over. Before them were two pillars of light, one violet and one azure, plunging into the sky. They obliterated the

thick layer of red clouds in the sky. It was a shocking display.

“What is that? Is this the birth of some treasure?”

“I can sense that the unbelievably powerful sword Qi originates from that place.”

“Odd. Why do the two pillars of light look like two swords?”

The Saint Kings became fixated on the two pillars of light as they began to discuss the changes. Surprise filled their faces.

“The two pillars of light look extremely similar to two supremely powerful swords. Why was this happening in this cluster of volcanoes? Was some treasure of the world coming into existence?”

A few Saint Kings could no longer resist the temptation when they heard about the treasures of the world. They broke away from the main group and flew forward as their eyes burned with desire.

Some other people were unwilling to fall behind now that some people had broken away from the group. Like a snowball, more and more people left, flying toward the two pillars of light in a hurry. Only an extremely low number of people maintained their composure.

Chapter 1352: Fight for Treasure

The surrounding volcanoes rapidly erupted, spewing out a lot of white flames, which gave off a terrifying heat.

The humans, magical beasts, Hundred Races, and Sea race all hurriedly flew toward the ‘treasure.’ All of them wanted to take it for themselves and, thus, drastically increase their own strength.

Along the way, they constantly dodged the lava that rained down. Although the lava was extremely densely-packed, almost forming a blanket, all of them were Saint Kings. Their understanding of the mysteries of space were incomparable to Saint Rulers, so they could easily avoid the lava.

Clearly, they knew that the terrifyingly-hot, white lava was very powerful. Even Saint Kings at Ninth Heavenly Layer would not want to get any of it on themselves. Even when they were faced with the situation where they could no longer dodge, they would disperse it with an attack. They did not want to come in contact with the lava.

“The treasure is mine. Don’t fight with me over it. I only want the treasure. I am not afraid to take on Saint Emperors for it. I might even be able to become a Saint Emperor with this treasure,” a Ninth Heavenly Layer human Saint King thought to himself. His eyes were filled with greed and eagerness. He used wind-attributed Saint Force, and coupled with his high level understanding of the mysteries of space, he moved ahead of everyone else.

At this moment, a silver-white spear shot over from afar, traveling toward the back of the leading Saint King. The person who had attacked was an Eighth Heavenly Layer human Saint King. He wanted to stop the person in front of him and take the lead.

The Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King became furious. Saint Force surged out of his body and enveloped him. An azure sword

immediately appeared in his hand as he turned and knocked away the spear.

Boom!

The collision of the two weapons erupted with a loud sound. Battles between Saint Kings were destructive. Just the pulse of energy from the clash tossed boiling lava into the sky when it struck the sea below. White-hot lava surged into the sky like fire dragons, giving off extremely terrifying heat.

Some of the Saint Kings who were unable to dodge the lava attacked it. Powerful strands of energy shot through the sky, colliding with the lava and erupting with heavy sounds. All of them had used ruthless methods to clear the obstructions before them.

The wave-like lava was immediately dispersed by the Saint Kings, causing it to erupt in all directions like meteorites. The drops were densely-packed like rain, which made dodging them even more difficult.

Very soon, several Saint Kings were struck by the lava. The power of the white-hot lava exceeded anything that anyone could have imagined. The protective barrier formed from Saint Force around the Saint Kings was filled with holes because of the rain-like lava, which then burned through their bodies with white flames. The drops of lava left behind finger-sized holes that rapidly expanded to the size of a fist.

The Saint Kings paled and produced heavy grunts. They stopped their advance and rapidly retreated. A violent poison from the fire was deposited within them after the lava passed through their bodies. If they did not cleanse it, it would cause even greater damage.

“What powerful lava!” Many people witnessed the suffering Saint Kings and immediately became shocked. The white-hot lava was more terrifying than any of them had imagined.

However, this was nowhere near enough to stop them from attempting to obtain the treasure. As they came closer and closer to the two pillars of light, more and more people engaged in battles. They all wanted to charge over first and take the treasure for themselves, before anyone else. Whenever someone took the lead, that person would have to withstand the combined attacks of multiple Saint Kings. The number of injured people increased as well.

A Sixth Heavenly Layer Class 8 Magical Beast had even fallen into the sea of lava below. When he emerged again, he was covered with roaring flames. Even with his body as a Class 8 Magical Beast, he was burned until he only had half his life left. His body suffered extremely severe injuries, where most of it had dried up from the heat.

Suddenly, a terrifying ripple of energy appeared in front of them. A Saint King at Great Perfection, who was only a meter tall, had pulled out a shield. The shield expanded as he moved, reaching a width of thirty meters. After placing it behind him, he shot off like a rocket, surpassing everyone in a single moment. He took a wide lead.

Immediately, the Saint Kings behind all attacked the dwarven Saint King, but all their attacks were blocked by the huge shield. More than twenty Saint Kings struck out in unison, but not only did they fail to smash through the shield; they did not even manage to make it shake.

“It’s the forbidden artifact of the dwarves, the Heaven’s Guard,” cried out a knowledgeable Saint King.

“What! This is the Heaven’s Guard? It’s said that even Saint Emperors cannot smash through it. It was a work of pride created by a powerful ancestor of theirs, and it’s been passed down since ancient times. I never would have thought that the dwarves would have brought this forbidden artifact.”

“He has the Heaven’s Guard, so it’s impossible for us to stop him like this. Stop fighting and catch up, or the treasure’s going to end up with the Hundred Races.”

“This is our Tian Yuan Continent. Since a treasure has appeared here, it belongs to us humans. You have no right to take it.”

Many Saint Kings yelled from behind. They were extremely furious. They all stopped fighting and tried to catch up as quickly as possible while dodging the lava.

Very soon, everyone was only a hundred kilometers from the two pillars. However, at this moment, the dwarven expert at the very front with the Heaven’s Guard produced a weird cry, as if he had seen something terrifying. He came to a sudden halt before retreating extremely quickly.

As he retreated, his clothes were reduced to shreds in the incoming wind before turning into dust. His bronze skin also became covered with densely-packed gashes. Every single wound was extremely thin, thin to the point that they were difficult to distinguish by eye. However, they were all bone-deep. Blood gushed out, and in the blink of an eye, the dwarf was covered in blood.

He bellowed out and placed the Heaven’s Guard above him. The edges of the shield immediately fell, forming a shell around the dwarven expert. The shield isolated him from the outside world.

Even though that was what had happened, the shield constantly rang out with sounds, as if it was being hit by a storm of rain.

At the same time, all the Saint Kings rushed up from behind, but without any exceptions, all the people who entered a hundred-kilometer radius was attacked by something unknown. Even with Saint Force around them, they were unable to protect themselves. They suffered the same injuries as the dwarf.

“This is sword Qi. My god, what powerful sword Qi. And it’s

invisible. Everyone retreat...”

“Oh no. An extremely powerful sword intent has enveloped this place. The energy and air in the surroundings has been turned into invisible sword Qi by the sword intent, making it exist everywhere. This sword Qi is just too powerful. We cannot stand against it. Everyone retreat.”

A few experts who used swords understood what was going on and cried out in shock. Disbelief filled their faces.

Chapter 1353: Birth of the Immortal Swords

“Just what is this treasure? It’s actually so powerful and terrifying that even we cannot get within a hundred kilometers of it with our strength as Saint Kings...”

“I think the treasure is probably an overwhelmingly powerful sword. Seeing how it can produce such terrifying sword Qi without a person controlling it, it is no weaker than the ancestral weapons of the ten protector clans. It might even surpass them in power...”

“The birth of this treasure in such a crucial moment probably has something to do with the World of Forsaken Saints. It might be crucial to repelling the other world...”

“Fantastic! I am skilled with the sword and have been enchanted by the sword for thousands of years. I may not be able to claim that I have reached absolute mastery, but there are few that can rival me in the world at the very least. The treasure is suitable for me. If I happen to obtain it, I will definitely do all I can to protect the continent,” the ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire said sternly. He was also filled with a desire to possess the treasure. Even though he was covered in blood, he still possessed the bearing of a ruler, which he had accumulated over the years.

All the people had retreated to over a hundred kilometers away from the treasure and no one dared to get any closer than that. Even the dwarven expert with the Heaven’s Guard did not travel any closer. Even though he would be fine under the protection of the shield, he wouldn’t be able to take the treasure for himself when he was encased by the shield.

Of course, that was not the reason why he did not want to venture any further. The true reason was that he had sensed a presence that made his heart beat heavily.

The dwarf calmed down. He continued to carry the Heaven’s Guard, which had shrunk back to a meter in diameter, a

hundred kilometers away as he stared at the two pillars of light while brimming with interest. He then gazed around the endless volcanoes and lava in the surroundings. After a moment of silent thought, he seemed to understand something and his face immediately changed. He called out with his rough voice, "I'm not going to take part in this anymore. The treasure is not something we can take."

The dwarf immediately signaled the other experts of the Hundred Races, communicating with them through a secret technique. Afterward, he left without any reluctance at all.

The experts of the Hundred Races all revealed slightly different expressions. They stared deeply at the location of the light before all choosing to silently leave.

"All the people of the Hundred Races have retreated. Have they found out what it is?" A human immediately voiced his doubts.

"Hmph, what do they know? Everyone's witnessed the might of the treasure. It's probably even more powerful than the ancestral weapons of the ten protector clans. Even Saint Kings cannot approach it. Probably only Saint Emperors have the power to compete for it. Does the Hundred Races have any Saint Emperors? They know they're weak, which is why they abandoned the fight," a magical beast immediately responded scornfully. He had no good will for the Hundred Races.

The people of the Hundred Races did not retreat too far away. They stopped at the outskirts of the volcanoes to watch.

Without long, several tremendous presences engulfed the entire place. The news there had already reached the ears of the Saint Emperors. The three Class 9 Magical Beasts and the path lord of carnal desires had all arrived.

They were extremely powerful, having reached the apex of the world. With the entire world in perspective, there were only a few people as powerful as them. There was no one who could dominate

them other than the barrier spirit that had already reached the Origin realm.

As soon as the four of them entered the volcanic region, they shot toward the pillars of light. They moved extremely fast, to the point where it seemed like they were teleporting.

In the end, they safely arrived above the largest volcano. They stared at the two pillars of light that had erupted from the crater. Energy that was enough to shake the surroundings protected them, keeping the invisible sword Qi away.

Even with that, their barriers slightly trembled.

The path lord looked at the bottom of the crater before glancing over the three other Saint Emperors with him. A sliver of undetectable coldness flashed through his eyes before he plunged into the lava.

The three magical beasts did not hesitate either when they saw him move. They all jumped in as well. They had all witnessed the power of the treasure. Even as Saint Emperors, they were tempted by it.

From afar, the grand elder of Mercenary City helplessly sighed. He mumbled, "It's a pity that the great elder is in seclusion refining the divine hall while the artifact spirit remains hidden away. Otherwise, there would be a chance that the treasure would belong to Mercenary City."

Regret filled the faces of the Saint Kings when they saw the four Saint Emperors plunge into the lava. All of them were interested by such a powerful treasure, but they did not possess the strength of Saint Emperors. They were unable to get closer than a hundred kilometers away.

"I hope the treasure doesn't end up in the hands of foreigners," a few Saint Kings prayed inside. Even if someone else obtained the treasure, they hoped that that person would be a part of the Tian

Yuan Continent.

At this moment, two beams of extremely bright lights erupted from the central volcano. At that moment, the scarlet-red volcano had become half-violet and half-azure because of the beams of light.

Countless sword Qi criss-crossed in the light. The sword Qi were not invisible but had materialized. Every single one of them was only the length and width of a finger, but they were all extremely resplendent, giving off a bright, white light.

At the same time, a terrifying energy erupted from within the volcano, causing the entire mountain to violently jolt. Many boulders shattered and even the entire mountain had shrunk to half its size. The four Saint Emperors all surged back into the sky as flames burned around them. They were like four fireballs as they hung in the sky.

Very soon, the flames were put out, revealing the four of them. They were all in a rather horrible shape. They had not been injured, but they had been forced out of the lava.

The path lord and three magical beasts were completely shocked. They all stared down sternly and quietly.

A long while later, the path lord broke the silence, "That seems like sword Qi, yet it's a little different." He spoke with a very heavy voice. The treasure was far more powerful than he had imagined. Probably even the Emperor Armaments of the protector clans could not rival it.

"This sword Qi doesn't seem to be condensed from Saint Force or World Force. It's like sword Qi, yet it's different at the same time. However, I have never seen such terrifyingly powerful sword Qi," Lankyros said in a heavy voice.

"The odd sword Qi can harm me, but it's still not enough to bring life-threatening danger. We might as well charge in forcefully,"

Kaiser coldly said as his eyes shone brightly.

The path lord shook his head and said, “Treasures of the world have appeared throughout history. According to the ancient records, the world gives birth to them and they are naturally nurtured. Once they have completely formed, they will erupt by themselves, unlike right now. I think this treasure is still being nurtured and still has not formed completely. If we take it forcefully, we might destroy it.”

“You’re right. Let’s wait for now. It might not be the time to collect the treasure right now. If we try to take it at the wrong time, the treasure might even end up destroyed by our hands,” said Cangqiong. His white clothes fluttered in the wind. His face was ruddy and filled with spirit, giving off a righteous feeling. He carried the slight presence of divinity.

Kaiser and Lankyros both agreed with their suggestions. They had read the ancient records on treasures of the world, so they possessed some understanding as well. They knew that the path lord was telling the truth.

Afar, the grand elder of Mercenary City let out a breath in relief before personally returning to Mercenary City. He wanted to find the barrier spirit and request her to take the treasure of the world. He did not wish to give up on something so powerful.

Unfortunately, the barrier spirit basically never appeared. If she did not appear herself, no one could find her. The grand elder was flustered after using all the various methods he could think of in attempt to get a hold of her.

“I understand now. The barrier spirit is tasked with protecting Mercenary City and guarding the seal to the World of Forsaken Saints. She never takes part in the battles on the Tian Yuan Continent. Treasures like these have appeared several times in the history of the Tian Yuan Continent and she’s never appeared for them. It’s probably exactly because of this that the barrier spirit

does not care for the treasure this time. Sigh, I have become muddle-headed,” the grand elder understood something. He no longer paid any attention to the treasure and devoted himself to guarding Mercenary City. He poured all his attention into keeping track of the other world’s movements.

In the blink of an eye, the path lord and the Saint Emperors had waited in the volcanic region for two months. In those two months, they did not take a single step away, waiting and guarding the place silently. They were afraid that the treasure would appear once they left and be taken by someone else.

At this moment, the four Saint Emperors’ eyes snapped open simultaneously.

Boom!

In the next moment, the largest volcano exploded. It was reduced to countless pieces of loose rock and lava, which shot out in all directions. Two eye-catching swords flew out of the lava and into the sky.

The two swords were 1.3 meters in length each. They erupted with violet and azure lights, one color for each sword. They also gave off a shocking sword Qi that was extremely powerful.

Wherever the swords passed, the space would shatter and be reduced to darkness. They seemed to become the only existences in the world. The world seemed to lose its color before the swords, where even the scorching sun lost its radiance. The entire world seemed to kneel before the swords.

The wind and clouds in the surroundings churned and the red clouds that hung in the sky all year round actually began to vanish. Thick, dark clouds silently gathered instead, replacing the red clouds.

Chapter 1354: Puny Saint Emperors (One)

The two swords radiated a dazzling light as they revolved around the surroundings. They flew freely through the air. The two swords seemed like a couple of lovers. They moved close to one another, side-by-side. They did not separate, but they always maintained a certain distance away from each other.

The clouds that had gathered in the sky had already become thicker and thicker. They sank lower and lower as well as an invisible pressure from the clouds filled the surroundings. The Saint Kings that still remained found breathing rather difficult, as if a huge boulder pressed against their chests. The atmosphere was extremely heavy.

However, everyone's attention had been drawn away by the two swords. They all followed the movements of the sword and paid no attention to the dark clouds in the sky. Their eyes were filled with desire and greed.

"The treasures nurtured by these volcanoes really are powerful swords as expected, and there's two of them," the ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire said emotionally. He had been absorbed by the sword for thousands of years already. His insight was tremendous, able to tell the power of the two swords with a single glance.

"The treasures are spiritual, so they cannot be obtained by power. It will depend on the person's fortune. These two swords possess enough power to move the heavens, so probably even Saint Emperors are unable to take them by force. They must receive their recognition. Even an ordinary person can have the chance of obtaining one. If I am recognized, I can immediately become a Saint Emperor. Even though my cultivation level will not be there, my battle prowess will be no lower than a Saint Emperor's..."

"That's right. These treasures are spiritual and they possess

extremely great might. Probably even Saint Emperors are unable to take them by force. We all have the same opportunity.”

“Come, everyone. Whoever receives the recognition of the treasures will immediately become an expert no weaker than Saint Emperors.”

Immediately, the group of people fell into a commotion. All the Saint Kings began to move, shooting into the air toward the two swords. At the same time, a few Saint Kings from ancient clans closed their eyes and formed hand seals. They wanted to use the secret techniques that had been passed down in their clans to communicate with the treasures.

Treasures of the world had appeared several times throughout the history of the Tian Yuan Continent, but this did not mean that they could be taken forcefully. Some treasures possessed a spirit themselves and chose their own masters. As a result, a few ancient clans, who had existed for a particularly long time, possessed unique secret techniques to deal with these treasures.

A game of tag unfolded high in the sky. A group of human and magical beasts tailed the swords desperately, along with a few experts of the Sea race.

However, no matter how hard they tried or what secret technique they used to increase their speed, they were unable to catch up with the swords. Although the two swords flew freely, they possessed unbelievable speed. They traveled through the air as two long streaks of light, far quicker than the Saint Kings.

A few Saint Kings had already tried to freeze space, but the frozen space was not enough to halt the two swords. Around a dozen Saint Kings had even pooled their Saint Force together to create a net and wait for the swords to fly into them, thus capturing the swords. Unfortunately, their net was no different than a spider's web to the swords, rupturing from the slightest contact.

Suddenly, a heavy rumble reverberated through the sky as the

very center of the dark clouds began to rapidly spin. An invisible pressure radiated from the clouds and enveloped the swords.

All the people who had personally witnessed the metallic spirit at the tungsten alloy mine undergo its heavily tribulation had different expressions. They immediately yelled out, "Danger! Everyone retreat! These treasures are so powerful that the world rejects them. Devastating lightning will fall to destroy them. Everyone retreat, or you will be utterly doomed."

All the people stopped their pursuit. Their eyes were filled with regret, but none of them dared to put their own lives at risk.

Suddenly, the swords in the sky did something that took everyone by surprise. They actually transformed into two streams of resplendent light and directly plunged into the clouds.

Boom!

Immediately, a deafening sound rang out from high above. A bright white flash illuminated the world as shocking thunder erupted in the clouds. The tremendous sound wave actually caused the entire region to tremble. Countless volcanoes below began to collapse as huge waves were formed in the sea of lava below. A few Saint Kings even began to tremble without noticing. All of their ears rang.

They seemed to have caught a glimpse of the two swords fighting the tribulation lightning through the clouds.

"What powerful treasures!" All the people sighed in surprise. Just that had outclassed the ancestral weapons of the protector clans.

The path lord of carnal desires and the three Class 9 Magical Beasts gazed at the sky as well with shock plastered across their faces. The power of the swords had completely overturned their understanding of any treasure.

The lightning that had exploded in the clouds was no weaker

than the tribulation lightning that had struck the tungsten alloy mine. It possessed the power to devastate Saint Emperors, yet the swords were actually able to fend off the lightning by themselves. Just that had surpassed Saint Emperors.

The sound of thunder constantly reverberated across the sky. Every single boom was heavier than the one before. The power was absolutely terrifying. None of the bolts of lightning fell. They all exploded in the clouds instead. The sparks that they produced were like resplendent fireworks.

“My god, I think I saw the two swords collide head-on with the lightning. Even such powerful lightning is not enough to destroy them...”

“Those bolts of lightning have all been smashed into pieces by the two swords, dissolving into countless sparks that expand in all directions. The treasures can actually take on such terrifying lightning...”

People exclaimed constantly. All of them were shocked. Quite a few people caught glimpses of what was going on in the clouds, bringing extreme astoundment to them.

The swords continued to shine bright as they quickly moved through the clouds. Their glows had completely obscured their blades. Only two illuminating balls of azure and purple light could be seen from afar.

In the blink of an eye, eight bolts of lightning had fallen. With a final boom, the ninth bolt fell. This was the most powerful one out of all of them. Even if the previous eight bolts were combined, it was not enough to rival the ninth bolt of lightning.

The two swords remained the same as before, turning into two streaks of light before smashing into the bolt of lightning.

Boom!

The glows around the swords immediately dulled when the ninth

bolt of lightning fell. However, their blades became even brighter. Not only had the ninth bolt failed to destroy the swords, but it seemed to have assisted them instead, allowing them to undergo a process of forging.

The two swords trembled after dealing with the nine bolts of lightning. They then emerged from the clouds. They produced a series of resonating pitches as the clouds in the sky gradually dispersed.

Only after the clouds disperse did the human and magical beast Saint Emperors begin to move. The four of them appeared before the swords as if they had teleported. They struck out as hard as they could, grabbing at just one of the swords.

The three magical beasts grabbed at the violet sword while the path lord went for the azure one. This was because the three magical beasts all knew that they could probably only take one of the treasures with their combined strength since the treasures were so powerful. They would not have the power to take a second one.

Chapter 1355: Puny Saint Emperors (Two)

The path lord of carnal desires did not celebrate at all when he saw the three magical beasts reach toward the same sword while avoiding the one he went for. Instead, he grumbled inside, cursing how the other two Saint Emperors of the Tian Yuan Continent had not come and missed such a fortuitous encounter.

This was because the path lord knew that the two swords were no weaker than the ancestral weapons of the protector clans. He knew that they were actually even more powerful than them. Even Saint Emperors might not have been able to subdue the swords from how they repelled the tribulations before. There were four Saint Emperors present in total, but three of them were magical beasts, and he was the only human. Even when he knew that it was impossible for him to subdue even just one of the swords, he could only reluctantly try.

The two swords were enveloped by a resplendent glow of their respective color. The glows obscured the blades of the swords, making them blurry.

The path lord and the three magical beasts grabbed toward the sword hilts at the same time. They had all made preparations for any sudden changes. Not only had they coated their hands with powerful Saint Force, but even their bodies flickered with light as powerful energy formed a protective barrier around them.

However, the moment they came in contact with the glow around the swords, blood flew from their hands. The glows did not just possess a decorative purpose; they had offensive abilities as well. The light pierced through the protection of Saint Force around the Saint Emperors and reduced them to a bloody mess in a single moment.

The four Saint Emperors immediately withdrew their hands. They were covered with densely-packed gashes, some of which

even revealed the white bone beneath.

The Saint Emperors were shocked. The four of them had already arrived at the apex of the world with their strength, yet they could not even touch the two swords. The power of the swords completely surpassed any of their understanding in regard to treasures of the world.

There had never been such an extraordinary treasure that had appeared in the world, where even Saint Emperors could not touch them. How could they be subdued?

“These treasures really cannot be taken by force. They can only be received through luck,” mumbled the ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire. His face was filled with joy. Since Saint Emperors were unable to take them by force, the Saint Kings would obviously have a chance at obtaining a sword for themselves as well. The ancestral emperor immediately dismissed his thoughts, closed his eyes, and began to attempt to connect with the ‘treasures’ through some special means.

All the people in the surroundings who used swords copied the ancestral emperor. Some of them sent a strand of their soul, some devoted their minds to it, and others tried to use their understanding of swords to gain the recognition of the treasures and get the treasures to accept them as their masters out of their own accord. There were countless different methods.

Over ten kilometers away, the experts of the Hundred Races had all returned. They all remained in the distance as they attentively watched. They did not get any closer than that, nor did they plan on taking part in taking the treasures for themselves.

“Hank, are you certain that the two powerful swords are not treasures nurtured by the world, but forged by someone?” A thin, old woman asked with a husky voice. Her pupils were jade-green, and at a closer inspection, it seemed like two green flames leaped about her eyes.

She was a flame daemon and a Saint King at Great Perfection.

The flame daemons were naturally blessed with power over fire. They possessed a green flame within them at birth. The flame could not burn any objects, only life, causing it be known as daemonfire.

Beside her, the dwarf with the Heaven's Guard sternly nodded. He said, "Please do not doubt the judgement of this dwarven king. If we dwarves claim that we are only the second best at forging weapons, then no one in the world can claim that they are first. In my experience, I am extremely certain that the two swords were forged by someone and not nurtured by the world."

"The two swords possess unfathomable power as soon as they were forged, so just how terrifying is the person who forged the swords? I never thought that there would actually be such a great expert on the Tian Yuan Continent," a dark-furred lycanthrope sighed in surprise

"The person who has forged the two swords has probably already surpassed Saint Emperors and reached the Origin realm. He's at the same level as the existence in Mercenary City," said an extremely pretty woman. She only seemed to be in her twenties and possessed enchanting beauty. However, her lower half was a snake's body.

She was an expert of the lamias, also a part of the Hundred Races

"If it really is an Origin realm expert, that's not necessarily good for us," said an eleven expert. She was also a fairly young woman, possessing an enchanting figure but with a tinge of divinity. Her voice was as pleasant as a lark's song. However, her true age was nowhere near how old she seemed. She was a Saint King at Great Perfection who had lived for thousands of years.

The three Class 9 Magical Beasts in the air all revealed rather ugly expressions. They could not even touch a sword when they worked together, so it was rather embarrassing for them. Even if it was

difficult for them to take away the swords, they could not leave after such an embarrassing situation.

A sliver of maliciousness had even appeared in Kaiser's eyes. He furiously said, "I refuse to believe that I cannot subdue even a single sword." One of his hands immediately turned into a dragon's claw. It was powerful and covered with scales. He then reached toward the violet sword again.

As soon as the claw came in contact with the glow of the sword, the screeching of metal rang out and some sparks flew as well. However, the outcome was the same as before. Before he could even touch the hilt of the sword, he was injured by the glow and forced to retreat. His claw had been reduced to a bloody mess. The scales on his claw had shattered and the white bone underneath had been revealed.

Lankyros gasped before sighing, "This treasure is far too powerful. Even Kaiser can't touch the hilt. Looks like no one can subdue them in this world."

At this moment, a figure leaped out of the lava. He shone with a dazzling light, like a miniature sun, illuminating all the volcanoes.

The attention of everyone was drawn to the figure who had suddenly emerged from the lava. However, the only thing that could be seen was a blurry figure. No one could see through the light.

The figure stood on a volcano. As the light around him gradually disappeared, his appearance was revealed.

"It's Jian Chen. He's actually always been hiding beneath the lava..."

"It's said that Jian Chen has already disappeared from the Tian Yuan Continent for a very long time. Has he always been hiding beneath the lava, cultivating..."

Quite a few people recognized him as soon as Jian Chen

appeared, and they immediately cried out. He was famous on the continent now. There was rarely an expert who did not know him.

The experts of the Hundred Races became fixated on Jian Chen as well, the dwarven king Hank in particular. His eyes became extremely wide. He did not recognize Jian Chen, but he knew that it was extremely likely that the person who had forged the two swords was in the depths of the lava.

“Isn’t that the ruler of the Turtle clan?” The experts of the Sea race looked at one another. They were all members of the Sea Goddess Hall, so they were familiar with Jian Chen. They recognized him with a single glance.

A gleam of heavy killing intent immediately flashed through the eyes of Kaiser and Lankyros the moment they caught sight of Jian Chen. The path lord glanced over at the two of them and smiled mysteriously.

Jian Chen stood on a volcano. His face was pale and haggard, as if he was sick. Even though that was the case, his straight posture still managed to give off the feeling that he was immovable. His eyes were extremely bright and brimming with spirit.

He slowly raised his head and looked at Kaiser and Lankyros in the sky. His eyes sharpened at that very moment. He sneered, “Kaiser, Lankyros, I never thought that I’d encounter the two of you as soon as I emerge from seclusion. That’s just fantastic. Saves me from looking for you later.”

Kaiser and Lankyros’ faces immediately grew cold. Kaiser stared at Jian Chen scornfully and sneered, “Jian Chen, your three magical beast helpers aren’t here. You’re nothing but an ant before us without their protection. Crushing you is a piece of cake.”

“That would be the case if it was before, but you probably no longer have that ability today. Kaiser, Lankyros, it’s time we settle our differences,” Jian Chen said. Even though he appeared to be very weak right now, he was filled with confidence that he could

deal with the two Saint Emperors.

Chapter 1356: Puny Saint Emperors (Three)

“Such arrogance, Jian Chen. I’d like to see who will save you today,” Lankyros coldly said. Heavy killing intent filled his eyes as he immediately moved against Jian Chen. He instantly appeared before Jian Chen by traversing several hundred meters with a single step and swung a palm toward his head. The palm surged with energy as it shook the surrounding space, causing it to crack.

At the same time, the surrounding space froze as well. Lankyros had used his spatial powers to trap Jian Chen, preventing him from escaping.

Lankyros struck out viciously and forcefully in an attempt to finish off Jian Chen in a single stroke and end all future problems. His enmity with Jian Chen had already reached the point of no return. If he let Jian Chen to continue to grow, there would be a day where he would be overpowered, and that day would be the day his life ended.

Lankyros had completely forgotten about the threat of the barrier spirit from Mercenary City at that moment. He had already realized that Rui Jin and the other two were not present, so eliminating Jian Chen right now was more important than anything. He had even temporarily dismissed the powerful weapons,

When Jian Chen wanted to strike back, a white flash suddenly appeared. Cangqiong had already charged into the space frozen by Lankyros and appeared before Jian Chen. With a wave of his sleeve, he responded to the tiger emperor’s attack with a palm strike as well, blocking it for Jian Chen.

The clash between the two Saint Emperors immediately resulted in an explosion of terrifying energy. The surrounding several thousand meters of space shattered and disintegrated into darkness. All the volcanoes in a radius of several kilometers

collapsed. Lava shot into the sky like a fountain, dyeing the sky red. It began to rain lava.

All the Saint Kings in the distance had retreated. Just the ripples of energy from a battle between Saint Emperors was enough to injure them. They were unwilling to suffer from something uncalled for like this.

The volcano Jian Chen stood on turned to nothingness as well. He used his glow to protect himself as he retreated in the air. He stared at Cangqiong in surprise. The two of them were not on any positive terms at all, so he did not understand why Cangqiong had stopped the tiger emperor for him.

From afar, Kaiser's eyes narrowed. He stared at Cangqiong fixedly as a sliver of maliciousness appeared on his face.

Cangqiong stood with his silver hair ruffling in the wind and his back toward Jian Chen. His robes fluttered wildly because of the ripples of energy. His face was peaceful, without any sorrow or joy.

The tiger emperor's complexion became utterly horrendous. He coldly said, "Cangqiong, what are you trying to do?"

"Tiger emperor, we four races are facing something that can cause extinction. The matter at hand is to stop the World of Forsaken Saints. We must not fight within and cause inner turmoil. That will only weaken our strength. At the same time, Jian Chen's talent is extraordinary. It can be described as unprecedented, in fact. He will become a Saint Emperor without long, and this will increase the power we have to repel the invasion. That is something positive for us four races, so we should let go of everything that happened in the past," Cangqiong calmly replied.

The tiger emperor did not waver at all. He asked in a heavy tone of voice, "Cangqiong, do you insist on protecting him?" Lankyros had already made up his mind about killing Jian Chen. He also knew that Jian Chen's talent was impressive, which was why he

did not wish to see Jian Chen become a Saint Emperor at all. Such a breakthrough would imply that his end had arrived.

“I am considering the greater good,” Cangqiong said sternly and righteously.

Jian Chen’s impression of Cangqiong was altered drastically. He could still remember that he never took part the many times Lankyros and Kaiser came for him, even in the fight for the Saints’ Fruit. Yet now, he ran the risk of offending the two Saint Emperors to speak up for Jian Chen. Jian Chen had an extremely good impression of Cangqiong now.

Suddenly, a tremendous pressure descended from above. Seeing how Lankyros had been stopped by Cangqiong, Kaiser struck out without any hesitation at all. His right hand had been injured by the sword, so he used his left. The hand had transformed into a powerful claw, stabbing toward the center of Jian Chen’s forehead with lightning-like speed.

Cangqiong became stern. He was unable to stop two Saint Emperors all by himself. When he wanted to take Jian Chen and flee with his supreme speed, Lankyros attacked him, preventing him from saving Jian Chen.

The three Class 9 Magical Beasts had moved away from the treasure, so a few Saint Kings moved. They ignored the battle between the Saint Emperors and went for the sword, all surrounding it. However, none of them dared to touch the weapon. Instead, they tried various methods to subdue it, and some of them had even tried dripping their blood on the sword.

“Argh!” A miserable cry rang out. A Saint King had tried to fuse a strand of his soul into the sword, but it had been wiped out mercilessly. It injured his soul, causing him to pale.

A dazzling white light condensed in Jian Chen’s right hand. It radiated with shocking sword Qi as he stabbed it at Kaiser’s claw.

Ding!

The claw was very tough. When Jian Chen's sword Qi collided with it, the screeching of metal rang out. Afterward, a few droplets of bright, red blood flew into the air. Every single droplet of blood pulsed with a powerful energy.

Kaiser violently trembled as disbelief filled his face. His left hand had actually been injured by Jian Chen. There was a bone-deep wound on one of his fingers, which took him by utter shock.

After all, he was a Class 9 Magical Beast and his original form was a mutated earthworm. Both his battle prowess and defense was more powerful than magical beasts at the same level as him.

"What did you use?" Kaiser asked heavily. He could tell with a single glance that Jian Chen was not a Saint Emperor yet. The reason Jian Chen had been harm him was all because of that bright, white light.

He had never seen such an odd and powerful energy. However, there was something familiar about it. It seemed like sword Qi, yet it was not.

"The Way of the Sword," Jian Chen said emotionlessly and his face paled even more. Afterward, with a single gesture, the two swords that had just been forged immediately flew down as long streaks of light. They immediately appeared beside Jian Chen, sticking to his back as a cross.

Jian Chen drew the Zi Ying Sword from his back and poured Chaotic Force into it, causing it to immediately erupt with a violet glow. The light had basically encased Jian Chen but did not harm him at all.

Everyone, including the Saint Emperors and the Saint Kings who had attempted to take the swords for themselves, became stunned. Disbelief was written all over their faces.

Kaiser, Lankyros, and the path lord's eyes had almost popped

out. They had a deep understanding of the power of the two swords. It was impossible for Saint Emperors to subdue them, and if Origin realm experts did not appear, no one could do anything to the swords. Yet right now, the two swords allowed Jian Chen to wield them obediently. The powerful glow from the swords that even the Saint Emperors could do nothing about did not harm him either, which took them by disbelief.

They had even begun to doubt whether their eyes were working or not.

“How is this possible? How can you subdue the two swords? How did you do it?” The path lord asked in shock.

“It was me who forged them, so why describe it as subduing?” Jian Chen answered.

However, what he said was like a bolt from the blue to the path lord, tiger emperor, and Kaiser. They all became dazed from the shock they felt.

“It really is him who forged the swords. I never thought that there would be such a great senior on the Tian Yuan Continent. I, the glorious king of the dwarves, must ask him about his method of forging. Once we dwarves learn such an extraordinary method, it will be a new era. A new era of blacksmithing will begin,” Hank said excitedly. His face was flushed.

The other experts of the Hundred Races said nothing. They all just stared at Jian Chen. They did not know Jian Chen’s background, but they knew that there was rarely anyone who could match up to him if he wielded the swords.

“Just the two swords themselves can harm Saint Emperors. Now coupled with that young man’s strength... There is no one who can take him on in this world. Probably only the World of Forsaken Saints possess opponents for him,” the elven expert sighed in surprise. She could sense that the young man had suddenly become rather terrifying now that he wielded the two swords.

The other members of the Hundred Races silently nodded and agreed with the elven expert.

Suddenly, a clear resonance came from the sword and knocked everyone back to their senses. The resonance was long and rang through the surroundings. The Zi Ying Sword surged with sword Qi as it glowed bright with a violet light, enough to rival the glow of the sun and moon. It illuminated the entire place, as if the world had become violet.

Jian Chen struck out. He used the Illusory Flash and shot toward Kaiser as a blur. He stabbed out with the Zi Ying Sword. It shot toward Kaiser's chest as a streak of violet lightning.

The moment Jian Chen struck out, he seemed to have fused with the sword in his hand. He had become the sword and the sword was him. They became one entity, inseparable.

Kaiser's face drastically changed. He knew the power of the Zi Ying Sword extremely well. He was extremely fearful of the two swords, so he dared not to take them head-on at all. He tried to dodge.

However, he discovered, to his shock, that it had already locked onto his presence. He could not avoid it no matter how he tried. After Jian Chen had fused with the sword, he had become even faster than the Illusory Flash. He became a streak of violet light, reaching unbelievable speeds.

Kaiser angrily roared and a layer of scales appeared on him. He transformed into a half-human, half-dragon form and placed his claws before him as well.

Magical beasts rarely used weapons or armor, and this was the same for Kaiser. His body was the best armor while his claws were his sharpest weapons.

The violet light stabbed into Kaiser's claws. They failed to stop the light at all. They were insignificantly fragile before the violet

light. The streak of light pierced the two claws like a hot knife through butter before piercing Kaiser's chest in the end. It left behind an almost undetectable wound.

The violet light did not stop there. Instead, it continued without slowing down at all, rushing toward Lankyros and piercing him as well. Only a shallow gash appeared on his chest.

Kaiser and Lankyros suddenly froze. The scales and clothes on the upper half of Kaiser's body was reduced to dust, revealing his burly chests, and on there, a droplet of blood slowly rolled down.

Chapter 1357: Taking the World by Shock

Kaiser and the tiger emperor became sheet-white as a streak of blood ran from the corner of their lips. They were stunned, only shock and disbelief remained.

Behind the two of them, the violet light around Jian Chen vanished. He carried the azure sword on his back as he looked at the two of them with the violet sword in hand, “I won’t kill you today in consideration of the world. The war between the World of Forsaken Saints is about to erupt. If you perform meritorious service, I will let the past go. Otherwise, I will never let the two of you off.”

Kaiser and the tiger emperor stood there without moving. They were stupefied, as if their souls had flown away. The moment the violet light passed through them, their organs were instantly turned to mush. They believed that Jian Chen could have turned their souls to mush as well if he had wanted to.

The violet light was just far too terrifying. It did not need to strike their souls. Any part of their body would have been enough to wipe out their souls

This was because they did not possess the strength to stop the rampage of the violet sword Qi within them.

The path lord in the distance stared at Kaiser and Lankryos in a daze before forcefully rubbing his eyes. He carefully observed every inch of their bodies before his eyes narrowed. His face drastically changed. He was no longer willing to stay any longer. He left as quickly as he could.

He could already tell that Jian Chen’s strength had increased by countless folds after he had obtained the swords. He was extremely terrifying, not an enemy that the path lord could take on.

The group of Saint Kings were stunned by this as well. Jian Chen

had actually defeated two Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent instantaneously before scaring away the human Saint Emperor. This all felt like a dream to them. It was difficult for them to believe what had just happened.

Cangqiong became tongue-tired as well. He had even acted by himself to stop the tiger emperor when the tiger emperor had attacked Jian Chen first in an attempt to save him. He had never expected everything to turn out like this.

With Jian Chen's current strength, he had no need for any protection at all. He could kill Saint Emperors as easily as killing ants. He was so powerful that even the powerful Kaiser and Lankyros could not fight back.

At that moment, Cangqiong could not help but feel like what he did before was an utter joke.

"Sigh," Cangqiong secretly exhaled. His gaze toward Jian Chen became filled with mixed emotions. Jian Chen had grown far too quickly. According to the information he possessed, Jian Chen was not even fifty yet.

There were many people who had not even reached Earth Saint Master when they were fifty on the Tian Yuan Continent and Beast God Continent, yet Jian Chen could easily kill Saint Emperors without even reaching fifty years of age. Even in ancient times, no one had cultivated so quickly.

With a flash of violet light, the Zi Ying Sword broke free from Jian Chen's hand and returned to his back as a violet streak of light. Jian Chen looked at Cangqiong and clasped his hands, "I thank senior Cangqiong for helping." Jian Chen's voice carried gratitude from the bottom of his heart. He only viewed Cangqiong in a different light among all the original Saint Emperors of the two continents.

Cangqiong shrugged and said in a self-depreciating fashion, "With your strength, you have no need for my help at all. I have

acted wrongly before and made a spectacle of myself.”

“Senior’s character has piqued my admiration. I still have matters to attend to, so I shall be leaving first. However, I will definitely come visit senior in the future. Farewell.” Jian Chen clasped his hands. He spoke extremely sincerely.

“The Beast God Hall of our Beast God Continent is extremely important to the Winged Tiger God. Only the Winged Tiger God can enter the ninety-ninth floor. It’s said to possess a great fortune for the Winged Tiger God. You must come to the Beast God Hall with the Winged Tiger God when you have the time and let him go to the ninety-ninth floor,” Cangqiong requested. He knew that Jian Chen now possessed the power to take the young Winged Tiger God to the Beast God Hall.

Jian Chen bid farewell with Cangqiong and left the volcanic ranges. He returned to the sea realm.

Soon, the news that Jian Chen had defeated the two Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent in the volcanic ranges and had scared away the path lord of carnal desires spread throughout the continent. The entire continent was in shock, and even the experts of the four races were thrown into an uproar.

The grand elder of Mercenary City, Changyang Zu Xiao, and the others immediately became stunned when they learned of this news. However, they had not witnessed the battle, so they did not believe it to be true. Only when all the experts returned to Mercenary City and began to discuss the events that unfolded did they reluctantly accept the news as reality.

“In the world, if we want to discuss who is the strongest below Origin realm, it is definitely be Jian Chen. Once he appears, who dares challenge him? Even Saint Emperors as powerful as Kaiser and Lankyros can’t even withstand an attack from him...”

“In the current day, the two swords are undeniably the greatest weapons in the world. Once they appear, even the Emperor

Armaments of the protector clans will be overshadowed...”

Mercenary City immediately began to bustle with activity. Saint Kings gathered in groups in the air as they enthusiastically discussed the battle between Jian Chen, Kaiser, and Lankyros.

Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun stood before their divine hall as they listened to the surrounding discussions. All of them were extremely excited. As the seniors of Jian Chen, they all felt glorious and extremely proud of their great-grandson since he had reached such a high level of cultivation.

Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba obviously received the news as well in the Changyang clan of Lore City. Joy and happiness instantly filled their chests. They had received this news from the Saint Rulers of the Zu branch who lived in the forbidden grounds, so it could not have been false.

“Has Xiang’er become a Saint Emperor?” Bi Yuntian asked with a trembling voice. Her eyes pooled with tears of joy.

“This shocking piece of news was brought by the great elders. Congratulations, you have an extremely impressive son,” a Saint Ruler smiled benevolently and amicably answered. In the blink of an eye, the Saint Rulers treated the couple in a completely different fashion.

The entirety of Flame City was ravished with great joy. You Yue and Bi Lian could not be happier while Bi Hai laughed at the sky to release his surging emotions.

Jian Chen had no idea about the uproar he had caused on the Tian Yuan Continent. He had already returned to the sea realm by now and had entered seclusion in a desolate mountain range.

The sword spirits had broken away from his soul after the swords were forged and had moved into the swords. In the past, Jian Chen was at the brink of death, and the sword spirits fused with him to

support his shattered soul, allowing him to survive. A long time had passed since then, and his soul had still been bound with the sword spirits.

Now that the sword spirits had broken away from his soul, Jian Chen's soul suffered a very great loss. His body was fine, but his soul was extremely weak, as if it had been heavily injured.

In a gloomy mountain cave, Jian Chen illuminated the place with a luminous pearl and removed several canes of amethyst bamboo. Every single cane gave off a faint, amethyst haze, along with a light fragrance, which could make people feel at ease.

That was the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo he had collected in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. The sap of the bamboo was extremely useful for healing the soul as well as refining and strengthening it. It was a priceless treasure even in the Immortals' World.

Wounds of the soul were not easy to heal. Jian Chen planned to use the bamboo to deal with the injuries of his soul.

Chapter 1358: Sword-riding

Jian Chen had collected several dozen canes of bamboo from the Xuanhuang Microcosm. Only a single droplet of sap could be refined from a single cane, so he could only refine several dozen droplets of the sap with the amount of bamboo on him. There wasn't much.

Jian Chen treated the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo well since it was valuable. If it were not for the fact that his soul was left in a weakened after the sword spirits broke away and that he needed to be in peak condition right now, he would have never wasted such precious bamboo so easily.

Jian Chen refined a droplet of amethyst sap from a single cane through a method he had learned from the sword spirits. It let out a faint amethyst glow while a mysterious energy pulsed inside it. It was a wondrous energy that could strengthen the soul.

Jian Chen guided the droplet of sap to the center of his eyebrows. As soon as it came in contact with his skin, it immediately melded with the skin it touched, dissolving into a refreshing energy that nourished Jian Chen's soul.

The droplet of sap possessed extremely great effects. Jian Chen's fragile soul actually healed at an unbelievable rate. A comfortable feeling filled the depths of his soul. It was extremely pleasant and Jian Chen could not help but deeply exhale.

Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes as he sat on the ground. He became drunk off the pleasant feeling of his soul strengthening. Not only was his soul rapidly recovering, it became even more consolidated and even stronger than before.

Half a day later, the effects of the sap gradually vanished. Jian Chen's soul had been healed by a large portion as well. Although he had not returned to peak condition yet, he could feel that his current soul was far more powerful than before.

If his soul before was described as a hand full of soil, his current soul would be an egg-sized rock. The sizes were different, and it was also much tougher than before.

Jian Chen was overjoyed. He had originally thought that he would need at least several canes of the bamboo to make a full recovery. He had never expected that just a single cane would heal most of it. He was surprised by the powerful effects.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen immediately began to refine a second droplet of sap.

A day later, Jian Chen's soul finally returned to its peak condition. Just two droplets was enough to allow his soul to become several times more powerful than before. Expanding his senses, he could actually engulf a radius of over two hundred thousand kilometers. This would have been unimaginable in the past.

This was because a massive requirement of strength needed to be met just to increase his soul by ten thousand kilometers.

“My soul has already reached the level of a peak Saint Emperor or possibly beyond Saint Emperors,” Jian Chen joyfully mumbled to himself.

He had forged the Azulet swords successfully. Not only could he use the Way of the Sword even more than before, but he could also learn many powerful sword techniques as well. Coupled with his strengthened soul, was there anyone in the world who was still his opponent, excluding Origin realm experts?

“Master, you may have forged the Azulet swords, but they have yet to become your fated weapons. Once they become your fated weapons, not only will you be able to continue comprehending the way of the sword, but the power of the swords will also increase once more. However, this process takes some time. It requires master to fuse your mind with the swords. It's inconvenient right now. Master, we will teach you the most basic sword techniques

first...”

After successfully forging the Azulet swords, Jian Chen had formally embarked on the cultivation path of the Way of the Sword. Zi Ying and Qing Suo then began to pass on various sword techniques to him like teachers, pointing Jian Chen in the right direction on the Way of the Sword. This would allow Jian Chen to progress much faster than if he felt his way around. This information would allow him to avoid many unnecessary twists along the path.

Zi Ying and Qing Suo were only sword spirits, but they had existed for far too long. They knew far too much and were like grandmasters on the Way of the Sword. They were extremely experienced. They could deal with anything that was difficult or anything that Jian Chen did not understand.

“The Way of the Sword is extensive and profound. It requires a lot of time to comprehend. I’ve only reached the very basics, having only just reached Sword Origin. There’s still Sword Spirit, Sword Immortal, Sword Sage, and Sword God afterwards. I still have a long way to go,” Jian Chen emotionally sighed. He seemed to have come across a completely new world before him.

Suddenly, Jian Chen formed a seal with his hand. The Zi Ying Sword immediately produced a clear resonance as it flew into the air from his back. It became ten meters long and half a meter wide in a single instant. It radiated a blinding, violet light, which obscured its blade.

Jian Chen leaped up and landed on the expanded sword. He then changed his seal and the Zi Ying Sword immediately shot off as a streak of purple light, leaving the cave extremely quickly. He had vanished into the horizon in just a single moment. This way of traveling was countless times faster than when Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash.

Sword-riding was one of the sword techniques Zi Ying had passed

onto Jian Chen. It was one of the most basic skills for practitioners of the sword, so Jian Chen grasped it in an extremely short amount of time.

The Zi Ying Sword seemed to have become a streak of light, but it also seemed to have become a violet lightning bolt as it shot through the sea realm. It was so fast that even Saint Kings could not catch it. Jian Chen stood on the sword as his clothes fluttered in the wind. He gave off an unexplainable feeling. He seemed like a sword immortal descending. He stared at the blurry surroundings in a daze as he sighed in surprise. Sword-riding really was just far too fast. Even with his vision, he was unable to clearly make out the rapidly receding surroundings. He had to use the senses of his soul to see them.

“Now that I’ve grasped Sword-riding, I am no slower than someone who uses Space Gates,” Jian Chen thought. Space Gates could cross space, traversing several tens of thousands, millions, or tens of millions of kilometers in a single step. However, he felt like traversing such a great distance with Sword-riding would not take much time either.

In less than two hours, Jian Chen arrived at the Sea Goddess Hall. He stopped ten kilometers from the structure and flew over with his two swords on his back.

All the people that came across Jian Chen after he had entered the divine hall bowed to him and treated him politely. Even a few Saint King elders greeted him with smiles, in an extremely courteous manner.

The name of the ruler of the Turtle clan had spread throughout the sea realm. Everyone knew him. He had caused ripples to travel through the entire sea realm, so the Saint Kings obviously needed to treat him politely now. Even hall elders needed to lower themselves before him.

This was the benefit of strength. Respect came from the fist!

Jian Chen met Yadriam in a majestic hall. Only the two of them were present in the quiet and cold room. Yadriam was not enveloped by any light today. Her appearance was revealed before Jian Chen. She was alluring like a goddess, her face dignified.

“Are those the weapons you forged?” Yadriam stared at the swords on Jian Chen back in curiosity. Her expression was rather odd.

Jian Chen nodded seriously and said, “Yes, I’ve already forged my swords and my strength has drastically increased. Even if the two hall masters come together, I can slay both of them easily. Your majesty, the resurrection can be held now.”

Yadriam smiled. Her smile was very pretty, like countless flowers were blooming and displaying the prettiest colors in the world. She said, “You can now easily slay the two hall masters together? Jian Chen, are your swords really that powerful? Have you forged some weapons that are as powerful as her majesty’s weapon?” Yadriam clearly did not believe Jian Chen. Even she was unable to easily slay two Saint Emperors.

Jian Chen smiled and said, “My two swords might even be more powerful than the weapon her majesty once used.”

“I hope that’s true. That way, the resurrection of her majesty will be successful,” said Yadriam.

Chapter 1359: Tension

Three days later, Jian Chen and Yadriam left with the sea goddess' divine hall. They proceeded to where the sea goddess needed to be resurrected. Over twenty Saint King elders went with them as well as several hall elders.

The sea goddess required vast quantities of energy during her revival, so the energy of the world would move abnormally throughout the sea realm, alerting everyone. The purpose of the elders were mainly to stop the experts that would hurry over to see what was going on. They were not responsible for fighting.

Yadriam flew in the air with the experts while Jian Chen stood on his violet sword beside her. He seemed very graceful, causing Yadriam and the Saint Kings to glance over. They all found it weird.

They had never seen or heard of a method of flying as weird as riding a sword. They obviously found it to be extremely novel.

“The resurrection of the sea goddess requires the support of the ninety-nine spiritual springs. These springs are buried deep and are formed from a vein of energy. It's impossible for people who are not powerful to find them. These springs are scattered throughout the sea realm. Her majesty needs to draw the energy of the springs from a spot between all of them, and unfortunately, that place doesn't lie in our territory but in the territory of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. This is why we're going over there right now,” Yadriam explained to Jian Chen along the way through a communication technique, so he would be prepared. The Saint Kings behind them still had no idea where the hall master was taking them or what she was doing.

Yadriam had not announced the sea goddess' resurrection to them. She kept the matter a secret. No one else knew about it other than her and Jian Chen. It would go better the fewer people knew

about it.

Jian Chen silently nodded. Although they would be trespassing in someone else's territory, he did not feel pressured at all.

Very soon, they had left the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall and entered the lands of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

"Hall master, we three halls have an agreement, where we are not to trespass in the land of others without permission. We're..." An elder immediately spoke his doubts. He was an ordinary elder at the Sixth Heavenly Layer.

"Hall master, are we declaring war against the Heaven's Spirit Hall? Are we changing the current situation and conquering the entire sea realm?" A hall elder asked in doubt. He felt very disturbed right now. If that was the case, a storm would definitely sweep through the entire sea realm.

"Enough with the questions," Yadriam coldly and emotionlessly commanded. A layer of bright, blue light concealed her entire body, obscuring her appearance.

The elders immediately stopped talking and quietly followed behind her. However, they were nowhere near as calm as they seemed on the surface. Now that the ruler of the Turtle clan had become an emperor and coupled with his mysterious friend, it could be said that the Sea Goddess Hall currently possessed three Saint Emperors. They had completely surpassed the other two halls. Unifying the sea realm was not impossible.

At the same time, the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall, who was nurturing his soul in a secret room, snapped open his eyes. They seemed to shine bright, which seemed terrifying. His eyes seemed to be able to pierce through space, passing through the various obstructions to see everything in the distance.

Suddenly, he rose up from the ground and became extremely stern. He heavily said, "Yadriam and Jian Chen have brought a

great group of people to my Heaven's Spirit Hall. What are they trying to do?" The hall master suddenly felt rather uneasy because he had thought of something terrifying. If Yadriam and Jian Chen worked together to attack the Heaven's Spirit Hall, he would struggle to fend them off with his strength.

The hall master vanished from the room. Soon, an ear-piercing horn rang from the hall. Its sound reached places several hundred thousand kilometers away.

All the experts who heard the horn displayed different expressions.

"That's the horn of war. It hasn't been blown in forever. Is the Heaven's Spirit Hall declaring war on someone..."

"Once the horn is blown, all experts must hurry to the divine hall at once as reinforcements..."

At that moment, countless people emerged from seclusion. They hurried to the central divine hall as quickly as they could. None of them were weak, all Saint Rulers or Saint Kings. Not only did independent cultivators head over, but the representatives and ancestors of large organizations also went.

Of course, there were also some people who fled from the territory of the Heaven's Spirit Hall into the lands of the other two halls. They wanted to avoid the matter all together.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall felt threatened when Yadriam and the emperor of the Turtle clan had stepped into his territory without any warning, which was why the horn had been blown without any hesitation. He wanted to gather all the forces he had.

In a very short amount of time, the Heaven's Spirit Hall made all the preparations they needed for battle. All the people in the divine hall were ready to fight. The divine hall levitated in the sky as it glowed with a resplendent light. Various arrays had been

activated, erupting with terrifying pulses of energy. They now waited for the arrival of Yadriam's party.

However, they stopped only a hundred thousand kilometers from the boundary of the two territories. Afterward, the Saint Kings scattered in the surroundings to watch over the region, leaving behind Jian Chen and Yadriam in the center.

Jian Chen looked around. All he saw was a desolate mountain range. The energy of the world was not dense either. He could not help but ask, "Is this the place?"

Yadriam nodded and said, "Correct, this is the place. The energy of the world here is thin, but it just happens to be the center of the ninety-nine spiritual springs. I will immediately begin casting formations to connect the ninety-nine springs so that we can draw over all the energy in them. I cannot be disturbed during this process."

"Don't worry, leave it to me," said Jian Chen before leaping onto a tall mountain peak nearby. He sat down and expanded the senses of his soul to watch over Yadriam.

Yadriam immediately got to work. With a wave of her hand, she cleared away several mountains and created a flat region of land before beginning to cast down the formation.

The formation originated from the sea goddess. It was extraordinarily profound and complicated and was capable of drawing in all the energy from the ninety-nine spiritual springs scattered across the sea realm. It was rather arduous to cast down even for Yadriam.

The number of experts in the divine hall far away rapidly increased. People constantly poured in from all directions as reinforcements, waiting for the arrival of the enemies.

Yadriam walked between the mountain range as she did all she could to cast the formation. The formation was extremely vast,

taking up a radius of a hundred kilometers. It could not be completed in a short amount of time.

Jian Chen sat on a tall mountain peak with the Azulet swords on his back. He observed the surroundings with his senses while he continued to comprehend the other sword techniques the sword spirits had imparted on him.

All of them were very basic. Other than Sword-riding, the rest were offensive in nature, but since they originated from a higher world, all of the basic techniques were far more powerful than Saint Tier Battle Skills.

The sword technique that interested Jian Chen the most among them was similar to the Soul Sword Jian Chen had once used. The sword technique allowed the user to control the sword with the soul, but the might the technique displayed was incomparable to what he used to use. It could kill people from long distances. He could control the sword with his mind as long as it was within the region his soul could envelope.

“My soul can reach over two hundred thousand kilometers away. That way, I don’t even need to set out to kill enemies two hundred thousand kilometers away,” Jian Chen’s blood boiled. The power of the sword technique was so great that it could enchant him and drive him mad. He immediately devoted all his thoughts to it in order grasp it as soon as possible.

Chapter 1360: Resurrection of the Sea Goddess

In the blink of an eye, the group from the Sea Goddess Hall had remained there for half a month already. The days passed very peacefully. Jian Chen remained seated where he was as he comprehended the sword techniques while Yadriam continued to cast down the formation. She had not completed it even after half a month.

The Heaven's Spirit Hall had maxed out their defenses after half a month of preparation. All the experts who were supposed to come had come to the Heaven's Spirit Hall. Of course, there were also a few people who completely ignored the war horn of the Heaven's Spirit Hall, continuing with what they were doing.

All the experts gathered in the divine hall began to wonder what they were doing after half a month of tense waiting without seeing their enemies at all.

"The Sea Goddess Hall still hasn't attacked yet. Are they afraid..."

"The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall and the emperor of the Turtle clan can overthrow the Heaven's Spirit Hall easily if they work together. But why have they never attacked..."

"Have the people of the Sea Goddess Hall learned that our hall master has contacted the hall master of the Serpent God Hall and that he might be hiding in the shadows, waiting for an opportunity to strike? The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall and the emperor of the Turtle clan aren't confident that they can deal with the two hall masters, which is why they still haven't come..."

A hall elder overheard some discussions and immediately sneered unhappily. "What do you know? Our Heaven's Spirit Hall is an ancient force that has existed for several hundred thousand years. Although we've never had someone who's surpassed emperor,

we've had quite a few emperors throughout history. Our heritage is so great that we obviously have our methods to deal with emperors. Even without the Serpent God Hall's assistance, we can fend off the two emperors just by ourselves."

"Of course, of course. We have existed in the sea realm for several hundred thousand years. We are so deeply rooted that we've experienced all sorts of disasters, yet aren't we still firmly rooted? Even if the Sea Goddess Hall sends four emperors this time, they won't be able to defeat us," another hall elder to the side immediately added.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall stood on the highest floor of the divine hall as usual. He gazed into the distance and mumbled, "Hmm. Yadriam and the ruler of the Turtle clan have stayed in my territory for so long already. Why have they remained in the same position without moving at all?" The hall master could sense Jian Chen and Yadriam's position from the divine hall, but he was unable to tell what they were doing. He could sense them not due to his ability but by using the divine hall through a secret technique. His senses were unable to reach so far away, unless some earth-shaking battle occurred.

Soon afterward, the hall master sent some people to go scout out the situation and gain an idea of what the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall and the emperor of the Turtle clan were doing. However, the report he received was that the people were unable to approach the region at all. They were all stopped by the Saint Kings of the Sea Goddess Hall. Even after sneaking in using secret techniques, they would be forced away by a sword Qi out of nowhere. They were unable to get close at all.

As that all happened, the news that the Sea Goddess Hall had invaded the Heaven's Spirit Hall spread across the entire sea realm, causing a great commotion. Everyone heard about how the hall master and the emperor of the Turtle clan had both settled in a desolate mountain range, drawing over many people to see what

was going on. However, they were all stopped ten thousand kilometers away by the Saint Kings of the Sea Goddess Hall.

In the blink of an eye, another half a month passed. After one whole month, Yadriam had finally completed the formation. She said to Jian Chen, “We’re all ready now. Get her majesty to start.”

Jian Chen opened his eyes as he sat on the mountain peak. He stood up and said, “Hall master, you’ve expended a lot of energy. Use the time to recover as soon as possible. I’ll protect you.” With a flip of his hand, the sea goddess’ divine hall immediately appeared in his hand before taking to the air. It turned into a three-thousand-meter-tall divine hall in the blink of an eye.

The sea goddess’ illusory figure appeared before the divine hall. This was a clone of her created from a strand of her soul. Her hands slowly swept through the air along an odd trajectory, as if she was using some mysterious power in the surroundings.

In a single instant, the mountains all flashed. Within a radius of a hundred kilometers, every single mountain glowed with blue light as a vast formation appeared.

Jian Chen levitated high in the air as he looked at the formation below on the ten-meter-long Zi Ying Sword. The huge formation had taken Yadriam a whole month to cast down, but only the sea goddess could activate it.

As the formation was activated, the surrounding energy of the world became extremely unstable. Vast amounts of energy began to gather from all directions, as if it was all being absorbed by the formation.

It was pitch-black in the center of the formation. The space there distorted, making it completely impossible to see what was going on. However, all the energy that had been absorbed by the formation entered the hole after it had been refined.

“Condense, vast energy of the world!” The sea goddess called out

and immediately began to create hand seals. The formation suddenly changed. It let out a bright blue light and quickly began to spin.

At the same time, ninety-nine similar pillars of blue light rose into the sky in various places throughout the sea realm. They weaved into a band of light, which shot across the sky, traveling toward the formation at an extremely fast speed.

Every pillar of light was condensed from pure water-attributed energy. Tremendous energy pulsed within.

Not only did the activation of the formation draw in the energy of the ninety-nine springs, but it also absorbed the energy in the surroundings as well. The energy of the world in the sea realm was affected, gathering together like blood.

The energy required for the resurrection of the sea goddess was extremely great. She had already drawn over all the energy of the world in the sea realm. The phenomenon could be described as unprecedented.

The abnormal movements of the energy had thrown the entire sea realm into shock and horror. Many people had no idea what was going on, and everyone in seclusion immediately stopped and emerged because cultivating with such violent energy of the world would only be detrimental.

“What’s happening? Why is all the energy of the world flowing in one direction...”

“Let’s go check out the place where all the energy is gathering and find the reason...”

More and more people either flew or rode various mounts in the direction the energy was gathering.

At that moment, the sea realm was bustling. People surged about as great swathes of people traveled toward the formation. This included many human and magical beast foreigners.

The vast energy in the desolate mountain range had already transformed into a destructive storm. The formation below grew brighter and brighter as it gathered the energy faster and faster. All the energy of the world ended up gathering in the black hole in the center of the formation.

Jian Chen squinted his eyes at the black hole and thought to himself, "I'll definitely be able to cultivate very fast in there. I might even be able to reach the fifth layer." However, Jian Chen only thought about the possibility. All the energy in the sea realm had gathered there. It would take a heavy toll on the land.

With a heavy sound, the door of the sea goddess' divine hall swung open and a thumb-sized bead of the sea goddess' soul floated out, slowly falling into the black hole at the center.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed. He discovered that the bead was very similar to the protective beads Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian possessed. It seemed exactly the same.

"I never thought that the Winged Tiger God's treasured beads actually possessed such powerful effects. Not only can it protect the soul and nullify all soul attacks, but it has also allowed the sea goddess' soul to exist for so long as well," Jian Chen thought. He knew that the sea goddess had passed away long ago and that it was all because of the Winged Tiger God that her soul still remained without dispersing.

"Jian Chen, the materials," the sea goddess' voice rang through Jian Chen's head. He immediately removed the Reconstruction Gel and essence of the Spring of Life that he had obtained from his Space Ring. He threw them all into the hole in the center.

The resurrection was being held right now. If she was successfully revived, then there would be one more Origin realm expert in the world, one that had existed during the ancient times.

Yadriam silently healed a hundred kilometers away. It had been very taxing to cast down the formation. She needed to recover to

her peak condition in the shortest amount of time possible, or she would not be confident that she could stop the two hall masters when they worked together. She did not believe what Jian Chen had said at all.

The Zi Ying Sword silently hovered a thousand meters away. Jian Chen sat on it as he guarded the entire revival process. He enveloped the surroundings with his soul. Even Saint Emperors would not be able to avoid his senses.

The Heaven's Spirit Hall was thrown into an uproar right now as well. Their divine hall was located in one of the places with the densest energy of the world. However, it had actually been sucked away, and they could not stop it no matter what they did.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall stood on the highest floor of the divine hall as he gazed out in suspicion. He mumbled, "What is Yadriam doing?"

At this moment, several pillars of light shot through the air at extremely great speeds. They originated from different directions, but all of them gathered in one place. Every pillar was condensed from tremendous pure, water-attributed energy.

"This is the energy of the spiritual springs!" The hall master reclaimed and arrived outside in a flash. He looked at the sky and gradually became stern.

"Oh no, the resurrection of the sea goddess is underway. I never thought that that little b*tch and Jian Chen had already gone to the Sea of Despair and brought out the sea goddess' divine hall," a heavy voice rang out from beside the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. A person appeared there silently. He was the hall master of the Serpent God Hall.

The hall master of the Serpent God Hall had hurried over several days ago. He had remained hidden the entire time, except he was still rather pale, clearly still injured.

Chapter 1361: Movements of the Two Halls

“Then what should we do?” The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall asked in a heavy voice. His complexion was very ugly and the light in his eyes flickered.

“What else can we do? Of course we have to go and stop them. We can’t let the sea goddess be successfully resurrected, or we will be in a lot of trouble. Remember all the things we’ve done in the past? The sea goddess already knows about all that. She also knows about the wild ambitions of the past hall master. If she is successfully revived, the first people she’ll be eliminating will be us two hall masters. We might even die,” the hall master of the Serpent God Hall heavily replied.

The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall fell silent. However, killing intent had already flashed through his eyes. The former hall masters of the two halls had always been searching for the Abyssal Crystal so that they could find the sea goddess’ divine hall in the Sea of Despair and devour her soul to replace her.

However, the Abyssal Crystal only appeared in the depths of the Sea of Despair. Even emperors would struggle to complete the task and even suffered the risk of dying. The past hall masters never had the opportunity to obtain it, preventing them from finding the divine hall.

The Abyssal Crystal finally appeared in the sea realm now. Meanwhile, the wild ambitions of the former hall masters had all been inherited by them, which was why the two hall masters had both participated in the fight for the crystal before. They had both sent experts to pursue Jian Chen in an attempt to obtain the Abyssal Crystal and find the sea goddess’ divine hall.

“There’s Jian Chen and Yadriam guarding the sea goddess as she’s being revived. Yadriam that little b*tch may not have cultivated for as long as me, but her strength is unfathomable. Any

one of us is probably not her opponent if we fight her alone. Coupled with Jian Chen who's not weak either, dealing with them will not be easy," said the hall master of the Serpent God Hall.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall fell silent and said, "Jian Chen is very impressive. He managed to wipe out a strand of my soul before, injuring me, and I still haven't fully recovered even now. My battle prowess will be affected. Coupled with your unhealed wounds, we won't have any advantages by facing them in an open battle."

The hall master of the Serpent God Hall glanced over in surprise. After some thought, he said, "The resurrection of the sea goddess will take quite some time before it's completed, which gives us some time. If we prepare adequately and bring some powerful killing formations with us, it should be able to keep them busy for some time. We only need a split second to disrupt the process. We might even be able to obtain what we dream of through this. The hall master's eyes immediately began to burn with desire when he finished speaking.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall's eyes lit up as well. He became rather excited, "There's no need for us to face against the two of them in a head-on battle. We just need to use formations to keep them busy. Let's go prepare immediately. This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for us."

The two hall masters both returned to their divine halls and started making preparations.

The pure energy from the ninety-nine spiritual springs poured into the central hole. At that moment, the energy of the world in the mountain range had become extremely dense, creating thick layers of mist. All the energy in the sea realm gathered there.

"I never thought that the resurrection of the sea goddess would create such a great commotion and that she requires the energy of the entire sea realm. Once she succeeds, the energy across the sea

realm will be much thinner than the past. It probably won't be able to recover for several dozen years," Jian Chen thought to himself from on top of his sword.

Several days later, Yadriam recovered her peak condition. She stood guard a thousand kilometers away in the direction of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

Currently, the surrounding mountain range was filled with people. There were people below Saint Ruler, at Saint Ruler, and at Saint King. All the people had followed the direction the energy of the world headed. There were over a hundred thousand people now.

The number constantly increased as well.

At this moment, the elders of the Sea Goddess Hall came into great use. They all guarded a region, stopping the people ten thousand kilometers away and preventing them from getting any closer.

As they all represented the Sea Goddess Hall and were all Saint Kings, they obviously possessed an extraordinarily great amount of deterrence. Even the Saint Kings that had hurried over from everywhere were not bold enough to start conflict with the Sea Goddess Hall. They wanted to avoid bringing trouble to their clans.

Half a month later, almost ten thousand people had gathered. Many of them had come from the lands of the Serpent God Hall and Sea Goddess Hall, having been drawn over in search of the source of the abnormal activity that was pulling away the energy of the world.

Countless rumors sprang into existence during that time. There were various kinds, but the most popular was a topic in regards to some great treasure. This was because all the energy in the sea realm had gathered in this mountain range, coupled with some odd phenomena in the sky. They were the best evidence for the rumor and made it even more convincing.

There would always be people who could not hold back their greed before treasures. Some experts began to use various secret techniques to sneak their way in, but they were all ‘invited’ to leave by the elders of the Sea Goddess Hall or killed off mercilessly by a strand of sword Qi that appeared out of nowhere.

A famed 16th Star expert had even snuck into the region under the watch of the elders, but he was killed off mercilessly after just traveling several dozen kilometers. He had been cleaved in half at the waist by a powerful strand of sword Qi. Blood sprayed into the air while his organs were obliterated. He ended up dead, shocking countless people in the surroundings.

After that, there were far fewer people who attempted to sneak in. They could all sense that an even more terrifying expert was guarding the place inside.

Suddenly, a vast pulse of energy appeared in the distance. A group of people aggressively hurried over from afar, and the ones leading them were all Saint Kings at Great Perfection. Behind them were several hundred people, and at least half of them were Saint Kings. The group was extremely powerful.

“It’s the people of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. They’ve finally come...”

“The people of the Sea Goddess Hall have broken the agreement and trespassed through the territory of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall in such an open manner. The Heaven’s Spirit Hall should have moved long ago...”

“If I’ve guessed correctly, the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall is present as well, or who else would have been able to order over twenty elders to guard this place? Even the emperor of the Turtle clan and his friend should be present...”

“In that case, doesn’t it mean that the Sea Goddess Hall possesses three emperors? The Heaven’s Spirit Hall is going to be returning with more than they bargained for...”

Everyone discussed the events that were occurring. Although many of them were unhappy with the actions of the Sea Goddess Hall, they were not optimistic about the Heaven's Spirit Hall's strength.

“Warriors of the Sea Goddess Hall, you’ve crossed the boundary without permission. Please leave our territory immediately, and we will forget that this ever happened in the first place,” a hall elder of the Heaven's Spirit Hall said with a deep voice. It was very loud, reverberating around the surroundings and reaching over ten thousand kilometers away.

“We are currently using this place. Elders of the Heaven's Spirit Hall, please make an exception. Once our esteemed hall master finishes with what she needs to do, we will leave immediately,” a hall elder of the Sea Goddess Hall hurried over and clasped his hands at the group of people.

“This is the territory of our Heaven's Spirit Hall, not your Sea Goddess Hall. Without the permission of our hall master, you have no right to use this land. Warriors of the Sea Goddess Hall, please leave immediately, or we will no longer show any politeness,” a hall elder of the Heaven's Spirit Hall said with a sunken face. A tremendous presence began to radiate from him, pressing toward the elders of the Sea Goddess Hall. Battle was about to erupt.

The hall elder of the Sea Goddess Hall became rather stern. There were several hundred people against him, and half of them were Saint Kings. On the other hand, he only possessed around twenty people. The difference in strength was just far too great. They would not even be able to last for a moment if they really did start fighting.

The Saint Kings of the Sea Goddess Hall were stuck in a hard position, but the surrounding temperature suddenly plummeted, as if they had been thrown into the arctic. Even the hall elders could not help but shiver.

Yadriam had silently appeared. She was enveloped by a bright blue light, which illuminated the surroundings and obscured her appearance. However, she radiated a terrifying presence that was enough to shake the surroundings. Just by herself, she had swept away the several hundred people of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

Yadriam's appearance did not make the group of people flustered at all. All of them remained composed. A hall elder bowed to Yadriam and said, "Esteemed hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, have you forgotten about the agreement? Without our hall master's permission, you are not allowed to trespass in our territory. Please abide to the agreement."

"We're only temporarily using the surrounding region of ten thousand kilometers. No one may enter, and those who do will be killed without mercy," Yadriam simply replied. She spoke coldly and firmly, stunning the experts of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

Meanwhile, Jian Chen sat on the Zi Ying Sword above where the sea goddess was being resurrected. Suddenly, something happened. The space around him violently distorted and was reduced to a blur. When it cleared up, he discovered that he had arrived in a world that was a sea of blood. The entire place was blood-red and endless amounts of vile energies permeated the surroundings. There were corpses there, and they all formed mountainous piles. It seemed like hell, which was hair-raising.

The vile energies began to condense, forming barely-visible rings that bounded Jian Chen.

This was a powerful trapping formation, enough to trap Saint Emperors for a while. At the same time, the rings of vile energies had a suppressing effect, preventing the trapped person from using his full strength. Jian Chen had been caught in the formation at that moment.

Jian Chen did not become flustered at all as he remained seated on the Zi Ying Sword. He slowly opened his eyes and gently smiled,

“Hall masters, you’ve finally decided to move after biding your time for so long.”

“Hmph. Looks like you won’t be able to remain as the emperor of the Turtle clan for much longer, Jian Chen. Today will be your death,” the hall master of the Serpent God Hall’s voice reverberated through the surroundings. Before he had come, he had planned it all out with the hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. If the opportunity presented itself, they would first work together to kill the ruler of the Turtle clan, as he had risen up just far too quickly. The threat he brought was far greater than the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall.

They were completely confident that they would be able to stop the revival of the sea goddess before Yadriam could hurry back.

Chapter 1362: Battling the Two Hall Masters

Jian Chen looked up to observe the formation. He said, “This is only a trapping formation. Just this is not enough to kill me. Hall masters, if you want to kill me, please use the killing formations you’ve brought.”

“Hmph. Since you want to die so much Jian Chen, we’ll let you,” the hall master of the Serpent God Hall powerfully replied. With that, a killing intent immediately permeated the surroundings. The landscape around Jian Chen changed once more. The bloody hell disappeared and was replaced by a hazy gray space.

The trapping formation was still present. Jian Chen could still feel the mysterious force restricting him, suppressing his strength. The killing formation had only been added onto the trapping formation, having been placed inside by the hall master of the Serpent God Hall. The two formations actually seemed to have melded together.

Suddenly, a beast’s roar, almost draconic, rang out. Nine serpent dragons ten thousand meters long appeared in the surroundings. They radiated with terrifyingly powerful presences. None of them were weaker than Saint Emperors.

“This is a formation forged from the essence blood of the former hall masters of the Serpent God Hall. Every single formation is created from essence blood,” Jian Chen thought to himself. His soul was so powerful that his senses had passed through the formation already, clearly seeing what had happened outside.

The nine dragons furiously roared as their teeth and claws flew over in a flurry, heading toward Jian Chen in a unstoppable manner. Every single serpent dragon was like a Saint Emperor. The tremendous presence stacked on one another as it pressed against Jian Chen, almost collapsing the space there.

The two halls were great organizations that had existed for

countless years. They had produced countless Saint Emperors during that time, totalling more than the Tian Yuan Continent's Saint Emperors. Although no more Origin realm experts appeared after the sea goddess, there were plenty of former hall masters with impressive talents who created earth-shaking Tian Level Saint Techniques and various killing formations.

In the battle against the hall master of the Serpent God Hall, it was not that the hall master was weak but that he had been careless. He had not made sufficient preparations.

However, it was completely different now. Both hall masters had made sufficient preparations to use this opportunity to take Jian Chen's life. Even though they were injured, they were still extremely powerful.

"Jian Chen, I'd like to see how you get through this formation. This is the Nine Dragons' Formation of Destruction. It's a powerful formation created by a former hall master of my Serpent God Hall near the end of his life when he was a peak emperor. Even emperors will face life-threatening danger when trapped, let alone you," the hall master of the Serpent God Hall sneered. If he used the formation on Yadriam, it may not have been sufficient, but it was more than enough to make the ruler of the Turtle clan suffer since he had only become an emperor recently. It might even be enough to kill him then and there.

This was because the nine dragons, which were condensed from the essence blood of emperors, could temporarily erupt with the power of emperors due to the formation. If they worked together, killing a newly broken through emperor would be far too easy.

Jian Chen did not move at all as he sat on the Zi Ying Sword. He used a sword technique as the Qing Suo Sword on his back immediately shone with dazzling azure light. With a resonance, the sword flew from his back as a streak of light, shooting toward one of the dragons with lightning-like speed.

Silently, the shockingly powerful serpent dragon dispersed, having been reduced to nothingness.

“H-how is this possible...” The hall master of the Serpent God Hall noticed the changes in the killing formation the moment it occurred. Disbelief immediately filled his face.

After dispersing the first dragon, the Qing Suo Sword then flew toward the other eight serpent dragons at an extremely great speed. It was like a bolt of lightning, making it difficult to distinguish through the naked eye. It seemed like a flash of azure light.

In less than a second, the nine serpent dragons had been destroyed by the Qing Suo Sword. They did not even have the opportunity to approach Jian Chen, having been wiped out from several thousand meters away.

“This is impossible... this is impossible,” the hall master of the Serpent God Hall became dumbfounded outside the formation. He had witnessed everything in shock. Disbelief was written across his face. The Nine Dragons’ Formation of Destruction was something that his Serpent God Hall took pride in, yet it had actually collapsed helplessly before Jian Chen. He was unable to accept this.

Boom!

With a violent sound and a flash of dazzling azure light, the Qing Suo Sword cleaved through the space and emitted a powerful force. It smashed through the formations of the hall master.

Jian Chen reappeared. He remained seated on the Zi Ying Sword just like before with only an azure sword hovering above his head.

The hall master of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall had become utterly stunned as well. He stared at Jian Chen in shock and actually completely forgot to cast down a new formation.

“Formations are useless against him. He has a treasure for

breaking through formations. Use the quaking thunders!” The hall master of the Serpent God Hall cried out. With a flip of his hand, two quaking thunders that pulsed with powerful energy appeared.

Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed. He became surprised, because the quaking thunders in the hands of the hall master gave off energy pulses no weaker than Saint Emperors.

Jian Chen had obtained quite a few quaking thunders back in the divine realm, but the most powerful one he obtained was only at the 16th Star. He had not obtained anything higher than that, but the two quaking thunders in the hall master’s hand was clearly greater than that. They were at the 17th or even 18th Star.

The hall master of the Serpent God Hall felt rather pained when he pulled out the two quaking thunders. Such powerful quaking thunders had already vanished for several tens of thousands of years. His quaking thunders had been passed down by a hall master several tens of thousand years ago. Every single one possessed destructive might able to blow Saint Emperors to pieces. He did not have much stored away anymore, and they would vanish after each use.

However, Jian Chen grew at a rate that was just far too shocking. Now that they had completely fallen out, Jian Chen would cause the demise of the Serpent God Hall sooner or later if he was not eliminated. This was why the hall master had made up his mind to use everything he had to eliminate Jian Chen.

With the whistling of wind from afar, Yadriam rushed over from ten thousand kilometers away as quickly as she could to reinforce Jian Chen as killing intent surged from her. The presence she gave off right now was so terrifying that it had become destructive, causing the surrounding space to violently tremble.

“Hall masters, if you make her majesty’s revival result in failure, I swear I will make you regret it for the rest of your lives,” Yadriam called out. Her voice was thunderous, enough to cause the space

there to shake. The loud voice echoed several tens of thousand kilometers away, shocking countless people.

Chapter 1363: Ant-like Emperors (One)

“That’s the voice of the hall master from the Sea Goddess Hall. Who is the hall master referring to by ‘her majesty’?”

“The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall is one of the three great leaders of the sea realm. She’s an emperor who possesses the greatest status. Just who can still be referred to as ‘her majesty’ by her?”

Yadriam’s shout had caused a huge commotion among the group of people there. Everyone began forming guesses as to who the ‘her majesty’ was. They wanted to know who deserved to be called that way by an emperor.

Was there an existence that was even more venerable than a hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall?

“Is it the former hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall? Is one still alive,” someone guessed.

“No. Even if the former hall master is still alive, they’s only be referred to as old hall master, not her majesty.” An expert dismissed the guess immediately. He was a 15th Star expert and possessed a lot of knowledge. He possessed a certain level of understanding in regard to the inner workings of the three halls.

Suddenly, the ancestor of a powerful clan suddenly seemed to think of something. His face changed drastically and he uncontrollably shouted, “Since ancient times, only our goddess has the right to be referred to as her majesty. Is the great goddess still alive?”

“What? The great sea goddess is still alive? That’s impossible. It’s been a million years since the ancient times...”

What the ancestor said stunned countless people in the surroundings. All of them became taken aback by disbelief.

“That should be the case. What the hall master meant before was

that the sea goddess was currently being revived while the hall masters of the Heaven's Spirit Hall and Serpent God Hall are trying their hardest to stop her revival," another 16th Star expert added. He was also the ancestor of a large clan. He was shocked, having been stunned by the great piece of news.

"My god! The great sea goddess is actually still alive. This is just unbelievable."

Many people sighed in surprise. Only the sea goddess among the four champions of the ancient times remained, having stayed alive since ancient times until this current day. This piece of information was like a bolt from the blue to the entire sea realm. It caused a shocking ripple to flow through the entire sea realm.

Ten thousand kilometers away, the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was just about to throw the two quaking thunders in his hand when he suddenly heard Yadriam's angry shout from afar. If Yadriam made it over here, killing the ruler of the Turtle clan and disrupting the sea goddess' revival would not be so easy anymore.

Yadriam was young, but she was not weak. The two hall masters had even begun to feel that her strength was unfathomable. Even in their peak condition, they were not confident that they could win against her, let alone now when they were both injured.

"Keep that little b*tch busy. Leave this to me," the hall master of the Serpent God Hall said heavily as his eyes emanated with cold with killing intent.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall did not hesitate at all. He immediately rushed toward Yadriam. Various formation banners had appeared in his hands. He tossed them out and they immediately merged with the surrounding space.

The next moment, the space around Yadriam trembled and she vanished, having been trapped by the formation.

The hall master knew that a single formation would not be

enough to trap Yadriam, so he did not stop. He threw out formation banners one after another, casting down eight layers of them in the shortest amount of time possible. Every single formation possessed shocking power. They could be used to deal with emperors, and there were even terrifying formations no weaker than the Nine Dragons' Formation of Destruction among them.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall immediately let out a breath of relief when he saw that he had successfully trapped Yadriam. He thought, "These formations are useless against Jian Chen, but I don't think that's the case with you." He had originally prepared most of these formations for Jian Chen, but seeing how they would be useless against him, he used them on Yadriam instead.

On the other side, the hall master of the Serpent God Hall viciously smiled at Jian Chen. He was just about to throw his two quaking thunders.

However, Jian Chen moved faster than him. The Zi Ying Sword beneath him immediately returned to its original size and reappeared in his hands. It then shot toward the hall master as a violet streak of light.

The streak of light was far too fast, and with the distance between the two of them, the hall master could not even react. The violet light arrived before him and severed his hands.

Jian Chen successfully removed the two quaking thunders from the severed hands before calmly returning back to where he had been before.

The hall master produced a grunt when his hands were cut off. He immediately became rather pale. Violent light flickered where his wounds were as the residual sword Qi ravaged his wounds, bringing him great pain. The pain caused his face to spasm.

Blood fell from high up in the sky as his severed wrist spurted out

large quantities of blood. The blood fell down like rain.

This was the blood of a Saint Emperor. Every single droplet possessed the pulses of powerful energy. This was a rare treasure to ordinary people.

Jian Chen did not let it go to waste this time. He pulled out a large gourd from his Space Ring and stored all of it away.

The hall master stared at his bloody wrists in shock. His eyes widened to the point where they almost popped out. His face was filled with disbelief as well as an unexplainable fear.

“This is impossible. This is not real,” the hall master cried out uncontrollably. His gaze toward Jian Chen became filled with dread as he rapidly retreated.

Jian Chen returned to a standing posture above the Zi Ying Sword as he examined the two quaking thunders in his hands. He faintly smiled soon after that and said, “What a surprise! To have actually obtained two quaking thunders of such high levels, the Serpent God Hall really is an ancient organization that has existed for several hundreds of thousands of years.”

Fear was written across the hall master’s face. He stared at the Zi Ying Sword beneath Jian Chen’s feet with wide eyes and yelled in fright, “This is definitely not your own strength. Jian Chen, what are you using?”

Jian Chen happily put the two quaking thunders into his Space Ring. He stared at the hall master and said, “These are the swords I’ve only just forged. With these two swords, I can kill Saint Emperors like crushing ants. Hall master, use whatever you have.”

The hall master of the Serpent God Hall became sheet-white. He stared at the two swords and a sliver of greed flashed through his eyes, but it disappeared very quickly. He then turned around to flee, no longer willing to stay for even a moment longer.

Chapter 1364: Ant-like Emperors (Two)

A gleam of light flashed across Jian Chen's eyes. He sat down on the Zi Ying Sword without moving at all. He formed a hand seal as the Qing Suo Sword immediately shot off as an azure streak of light.

It was a sword technique similar to the Soul Sword, except it was much more powerful. He could control the sword against enemies wherever his soul could envelope.

After being strengthened by the sap of the Amethyst Spiritual Bamboo, his soul had grown a lot. The radius he could envelope had exceeded two hundred thousand kilometers, so as long as the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was still in that range, he could not escape the attacks of the Qing Suo Sword.

Under the control of Jian Chen's mind, the sword seemed to have exceeded the speed of lightning. It crossed a great distance in a single moment, and even when the hall master fled as hard as he could, he was not faster than the Qing Suo Sword. The sword pursued him as an azure streak of light.

The hall master had discovered the sword behind him as well. Seeing how he could not avoid it, a sliver of determination immediately flashed through his eyes. He thought, "That sword can display unimaginable power in Jian Chen's hands. It can cleave through emperor-level formations easily, but it's so far away from Jian Chen, and there's no one controlling it anymore. I refuse to believe that I can't even subdue a sword that has no user with my strength. I must take this sword for myself this time. If I possess it, even Yadriam will fear me while Jian Chen will not be stronger than me if he loses one of his swords."

The blood had already stopped flowing from the hall master's two severed stumps. He slowly swept his severed arms through the air, and immediately, a surging energy leaked out. It rapidly

condensed into a two-meter-wide shield on his left arm and his body was covered with dense scales. Every single one of them flickered with light as energy pulsed from them.

A hand condensed from energy had appeared on his right arm. It almost seemed to be tangible. He placed the shield before him and used the condensed hand to grab the Qing Suo Sword.

However, the hall master had underestimated the power of the Qing Suo Sword. When it had just been forged, it was able to injure Saint Emperors without anyone controlling it. That was incomparable to right now since Jian Chen was secretly controlling it with his mind. The power would definitely be greater than before.

The hall master's hand was like a piece of paper when it came in contact with the sword. The Qing Suo Sword punched a hole through it in an unstoppable manner before continuing toward the hall master without slowing down at all.

Spurt!

The hall master's shield shattered as the Qing Suo Sword passed through his body as a streak of azure light. His defenses as a serpent dragon were unable to stop it at all.

The hall master suddenly froze and his face paled in a single moment. A large amount of blood sprayed from his mouth in the form of mist along with many pieces of his organs.

When the Qing Suo Sword passed through his body, an extremely powerful sword Qi had erupted, turning his organs to mush in a single moment and dealing devastating damage to his body.

A large amount of blood poured from every pore of the hall master, dyeing him red with his blood. He stumbled about in the air, having been heavily injured and struggled to stay upright.

The hall master was completely stunned. He found it difficult to believe how heavily injured he had become. Most of his body was

destroyed and his organs were gone. Even most of the flesh and blood within him had been reduced to a mess. Only his soul remained intact, fortunately for him.

Jian Chen flew over from afar on the Zi Ying Sword. He grabbed the hall master with a single hand before flying back. He said, "Hall master, no one can stop the resurrection of the sea goddess. You better come back with me to be judged by the sea goddess. You still might have a chance of surviving that way. Of course, if you attempt to flee by abandoning your body, it won't be my fault if I obliterate your soul."

The hall master became ashen with that as despair filled his eyes.

On the other side, the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall devoted all his attention to controlling the formations against Yadriam. The space before him violently distorted as terrifying ripples of energy radiated out, causing the space there to tremble.

At this moment, a streak of azure light appeared with a flash. It flew over as a long streak of light, piercing through the hall master's chest with lightning-like speed and directly collided with the formations.

Boom!

With a deafening sound, three of the eight formations cast down by the hall master were obliterated in a single instance, and the five other formations suffered from the heavy ripples of energy as well, becoming rather damaged.

Spurt! The hall master vomited a mouthful of blood as he stared at the Qing Suo Sword in disbelief. He tottered a few times in the air before directly plunging down.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The formations were damaged and no longer as powerful as before. Under Yadriam's full-powered attacks, they all erupted with powerful ripples of energy and sounds. Yadriam broke out of

the five remaining formations.

She shone with blinding blue light as the terrifying pulses of energy caused the surrounding space to ripple and give off horrifying presences. A fishman-like avatar stood behind her, as if it had fused with her.

She rushed over with a trident. Although the trident was not the sea goddess' weapon, it still possessed a might that could cause people to shiver. Thin, black cracks followed its gentle movements. They were cracks in space.

Yadriam had not discovered Jian Chen when she had just broken out. As soon as she broke free, she discovered the hall master who was falling toward the ground. Without questioning why, she pointed with her trident and produced a powerful stream of energy that shot toward the hall master.

“Hall master, please stay your hand!” Jian Chen's voice rang out and at the same time, an azure streak of light flashed. The sword had arrived before the light had disappeared, having dived down from higher above. It blocked the stream of energy.

The stream of energy struck the Qing Suo Sword and loudly erupted. However, the sword did not waver at all and its glow remained just as bright as before. The stream of energy from Yadriam's trident had completely vanished on the other hand.

The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall had managed to avoid disaster. He fell from an altitude of several thousand meters, causing a mountain to collapse. He lay in the rubble as he stared at the sky in a daze. He did not return to his senses for quite some time.

Only then did Yadriam discover that the hall master was heavily injured. Interest immediately flashed across her eyes.

Chapter 1365: Ant-like Emperors (Three)

Yadriam became rather stunned as she stared at the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall as he lay in the rubble. She could already tell that he was extremely heavily injured, basically incapacitated. She felt extremely shocked by this.

She had not touched the hall master at all.

With a flash of azure light, the Qing Suo Sword shot off as a streak of light after blocking Yadriam's attack. It returned to Jian Chen's back as he flew over on the Zi Ying Sword. He said to Yadriam, "The hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall is very heavily injured. He cannot withstand an attack from you, or you might end up wiping out his soul."

Yadriam looked away from the hall master of the Heaven's Spirit Hall and became completely fixated on the Qing Suo Sword on Jian Chen's back. She still could not forget the speed it possessed when it had flown over nor how it stopped a powerful attack from her without much effort at all.

"Jian Chen, are they really the weapons you've forged?" Yadriam asked. She found it very hard to believe that Jian Chen could forge such powerful swords.

Jian Chen faintly smiled, "I can only be counted as partially responsible for forging these swords. There were other great people who assisted me in forging the swords while I only acted as a support. However, my swords should be greater than her majesty's weapon. Hall master, do you believe what I said before now? With these two swords, killing the two hall masters poses no difficulty at all."

Yadriam stared at another mountain nearby and saw the hall master of the Serpent God Hall, who lay there as a bloody mess. Jian Chen had placed him there. He stared at the sky aimlessly as despair filled his eyes.

Yadriam sighed inside and the gaze she used to look at Jian Chen with was mixed with emotions. Thinking to back then, Jian Chen was still a puny Saint Ruler in her eyes. He was no different from an ant to her, yet only so long had passed, and he had grown to a level that even shocked her.

Yadriam knew that she was not Jian Chen's opponent. At the very least, she was unable to heavily injure the two emperors so easily like Jian Chen.

"He's become even more terrifying with such powerful weapons. Probably only those who have surpassed Saint Emperor can keep Jian Chen at bay," Yadriam thought as she became rather gloomy. She could not help but think about how she had to cultivate for several millennia to obtain this strength while Jian Chen had become much more powerful in just a few decades. She found this very disturbing.

"Our world is currently faced with the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints. If we don't have enough strength, it might be the end of the world when the other world attacks us. We just happen to be in need of strength. Hall master, I feel that we shouldn't kill the two of them right now. Saint Emperors are just far too rare after all. Our power grows stronger with every Saint Emperor standing on our side. What do you think, your majesty?" Jian Chen asked. He really did have some enmity with the two hall masters, but during this sensitive period of time, he was willing to eliminate the threat of the foreign world than to settle his disagreements.

Yadriam put away her trident and the powerful presence around her gradually vanished. After a moment of silent thought, she nodded, "You're right. The World of Forsaken Saints is just far too powerful. If we turn on each other right now, we'll be doomed for sure. Let's not take their lives right now, but their final fate still has to be determined by her majesty."

Afterward, Yadriam brought the two hall masters together before

sealing up their strength with a secret technique to prevent them from escaping if they recovered.

Jian Chen took away their Space Rings without any mercy at all. He found a large amount of wealth in there, and the greatest things he obtained were eight quaking thunders enough to injure Saint Emperors.

Without long, the news of the two hall masters' defeat by Yadriam and Jian Chen's hand spread amongst the others, throwing them into an uproar again. Many people had realized that the balance of the sea realm, which had remained in balance for countless years, was about to change.

Both the status and fame of the Turtle clan skyrocketed after the battle, enough to make everyone fear them. Although there were still not a lot of people who viewed the Turtle clan's own strength with any importance, they would never fall as long as their emperor was present. The Turtle clan would be able to stand at the peak of the sea realm forever, becoming just as great as the three halls.

All of the experts that belonged to the Heaven's Spirit Hall returned gloomily after their emperor was captured. A few people believed that the Heaven's Spirit Hall had fallen completely, breaking away from the group on the journey back. They left by themselves and broke away from the Heaven's Spirit Hall permanently.

The capture of the two hall masters spread through the sea realm like wildfire and shocked everyone.

The patriarch of a tribe by the name of Kalor had been utterly exhausted from worry recently. His daughter Kai Ya had obtained the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor from the ruler of the Turtle clan and had remained in seclusion the entire time. Her strength had increased extremely quickly, which was something the patriarch should have been happy for since he was her father.

However, he felt helpless over the fact that Kai Ya required expensive items to cultivate with. She required a large quantity of crystal coins. He had already used various methods to transfer most of the crystal coins that were supposed to go to other clansmen to her, but it was still not enough to fulfill her demand. He felt extremely pained over this.

His tribe was only a medium-sized one. They were not rich. They possessed a low grade crystal mine, but the amount they could collect in a year was extremely limited and only enough to support the cultivation of most clansmen. Kai Ya had basically used up most of it as she cultivated. The crystal coins split between the others had decreased by at least a half. It led to a lot of disagreement around the clan, so the patriarch felt very pressured as well.

“I hope my good friends haven’t let me down. I hope they can help me out and let my daughter power up,” thought the patriarch. He could only place all his hopes on his good friends now.

At this moment, a guard entered the room. He reported, “Patriarch, the patriarchs of the Tyt tribe, Herman tribe, Goldensword tribe, Dakar clan, and Tingwei clans have come to visit.”

The patriarch celebrated inside. He said, “Let them in quick. No actually, I’ll go receive them personally. I haven’t met them in so many years.”

The patriarch of the Kalor tribe conversed joyfully with his old friends in a room. He had once roamed the sea realm with these friends, having sworn blood oaths together and gone through thick and thin. Their friendship was extremely deep, and they had all become leaders of rather large organizations.

“My old friend, I’ve really run out of options which is why I’ve invited you all here today. My daughter recently obtained an impressive cultivation method and has been devoting all her

efforts to it. Once she completes it, she will become an emperor and will be able to reign supreme,” said the patriarch.

All the people present were surprised when they heard that. Their interests were immediately piqued and they asked, “Kai Tian, just what powerful cultivation is it? How can it be so powerful? Reaching the level of emperors isn’t something possible with just a high level cultivation method.” They were all Saint Rulers, so they knew that an increase of strength would not depend purely on the cultivation method. It also required a certain level of personal understanding and the comprehension of the mysteries of the world.

Chapter 1366: The Disaster of the Kalor Tribe

“This cultivation method was gifted to my daughter by the great emperor of the Turtle clan. It’s said that once this cultivation method is practiced to completion, the person will become an emperor. Once my daughter becomes an emperor, it will be a joyous occasion to both my Kalor tribe and you all as we rise up,” said Kai Tian. He trusted his old friends very much. After all, they had gone through trials of life and death together.

All the seated people narrowed their eyes when they heard his words. They all became shocked, and after quite a while of silence, one of them asked, “Kai Tian, you must have some connections with the emperor of the Turtle clan since he’s given your daughter such a powerful cultivation method. But why haven’t I ever seen you communicate with the Turtle clan?”

Kai Tian gently sighed, “To be honest, we don’t have much of a connection at all. It’s all because of my daughter. My daughter was fortunate enough to meet the emperor of the Turtle clan one time, which is why she’s been so spoiled by him and obtained this powerful cultivation method.”

“So that’s the case! A few years ago, I had heard that the Kalor tribe was connected to the Turtle clan in some way, but that was only a rumor back then and had not been confirmed. Looks like the rumor was false.”

“The ruler of the Turtle clan has already become an emperor that can shake up the entire sea realm. Kai Tian, because of the emperor of the Turtle clan, it’s only a matter of time before your tribe rises up. Once you become glorious, you must never forget about us.”

The old friends laughed with one another. They were all very happy, and Kai Tian was filled with pride.

“Kai Tian, you surely have another reason for calling us all together, not just to show off your precious daughter. Tell me, what have you encountered? With our friendship of so many years, we will help you no matter what problems you come across,” said an old man. He seemed very old, but he was only around Kai Tian’s age.

Kai Tian gently coughed and said, “My daughter’s demand for crystal coins is just far too great. With the wealth of our clan, it’s not enough to support her needs at all. In order to not get in the way of her cultivation, I ran out of choices, which is why I invited you all here. I want to borrow some crystal coins from you. I’ll definitely return them with interest in the future.”

“Isn’t it just lending some crystal coins? Don’t worry, Kai Tian. For Kai Ya to be able to become an emperor as soon as possible, we will support you with all we have even if we have to empty our pockets. Right, everyone?” The speaker was a young man. He was the patriarch of the Herman tribe.

“You’re completely right. I’ll send over the crystal coins immediately once I get back,” the Tyt tribe patriarch added. He was extremely generous.

Kai Tian’s five good friends all expressed that they would support him with all they had, which put Kai Tian in a great mood. His daughter rarely asked him for crystal coins, but he knew that the amount of coins he gave her monthly was nowhere near enough for her cultivation speed. Kai Tian had basically used all the ideas he could think of to collect cultivation resources so that his daughter could become a powerful expert as soon as possible.

Kai Tian’s five friends all left, and a few days later, they all visited the Kalor tribe again with large amounts of crystal coins. They were warmly invited into the same room by Kai Tian again.

Kai Tian gratefully accepted the Space Rings from his five friends. Checking them, he immediately became overjoyed. There

were around ten million to thirty million coins in each Space Ring, close to a hundred million in total.

This was a huge sum to the Kalor tribe.

“My friends have probably coughed up several year’s worth of accumulated wealth so that my daughter can become an emperor soon. Once Kai Ya becomes powerful, I’ll definitely get her to treat my friends well.” Kai Tian was utterly overjoyed. His friends had brought close to a hundred million crystal coins, giving him exactly what he required in this moment of need. Kai Tian became filled with gratitude as he swore inside that he would never forget the kindness of his old friends.

At this moment, the door to the room opened and an old man rushed in in a hurry.

Kai Tian frowned. He was currently discussing some secretive manners with his old friends, so he obviously did not wish to be disturbed by others. Just when he was about to lecture the person, he forcefully shut himself up after recognizing the old man. He was one of Kai Tian’s seniors who went by the name Kai Liu. He was not as powerful as him, but Kai Tian respected him deeply.

Kai Liu glanced over the five people present in hatred before frantically informing Kai Tian, “Patriarch, something bad’s happened. The Tyt tribe, Herman tribe, Goldensword tribe, Dakar clan, and Tingwei clan have attacked our tribe together. We have sustained heavy casualties and many are injured. We can’t stop them anymore.”

“What!” Kai Tian was shocked. Disbelief filled his face because the patriarchs of the five tribes mentioned were right here, and they were his good friends.

At this moment, Kai Tian’s five friends struck out at the same time. Taking advantage of Kai Tian while he was dazed, they sent a palm toward Kai Tian and trapped him by freezing space. He could not avoid their attacks.

Spurt! Kai Tian immediately vomited blood and heavily collided with the wall of the room, causing the entire place to violently jolt.

Kai Liu drastically changed his expression. He glanced at Kai Tian, who was heavily injured, and deep sorrow filled his eyes. Afterward, he turned around and fled without saying anything else.

“We can’t let him escape. We can’t let any person of the Kalor tribe escape alive, or we’ll be in trouble. Chase him,” the patriarch of the Goldensword tribe said heavily before pursuing the old man.

However, inscriptions suddenly appeared on the walls of the room at this time. Kai Tian had already activated the formation that had been cast in the room, sealing it off and stopping the patriarch of the Goldensword tribe.

The patriarch of the Dakar clan examined the formation and said, “This formation is strong. It’ll take us some time to get through it, but don’t worry, we’ve already encircled this entire place. No one can escape. The news won’t be able to leak out.”

Kai Tian stood up with difficulty. His face was pale as he stared at his old friends in disbelief. His heart ached as he said with a trembling voice, “Why? Why are you doing this? I have always treated you as my best friends. Back then, we roamed the sea realm together and stepped over countless corpses all together. Have you forgotten about the blood oath we swore before? Just when have I wronged you where the five of you work together to deal with me?”

The patriarch of the Tyt tribe gently sighed, “Kai Tian, have you really treated us as your friends? If you did, why have you never shared such a powerful cultivation method after you obtained it?”

“We will share our joys and pains. Kai Tian, that was our oath from before. We never broke it. You wanted crystal coins, so we gave them to you, but your tribe wanted to indulge on the cultivation method of an emperor just by yourself. You’re the one

who's broken the oath, not us," the patriarch of the Goldensword tribe coldly chastised.

Kai Tian began to laugh as two streak of blood tears rolled down his cheeks. He mumbled, "So you wanted the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor. It's a joke to think that I treated you as my best friends, yet you turn on me for a cultivation method. The blood oath in the past is a joke, and our past friendship is so fragile. I am filled with regret. I should have never believed you so easily. Not only have I doomed my tribe, I've doomed my daughter."

"Since it's the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor, the emperor of the Turtle clan probably used it to reach his current level of cultivation. Kai Tian, hand it over immediately and we'll still be friends. Once we all become emperors, the entire seal realm will belong to us." The eyes of the Dakar clan's patriarch lit up as he eagerly demanded.

The four other patriarchs' eyes began to burn with desire as well. Their breathing all became heavy. The cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor was extremely tempting to them, and when they heard that the emperor of the Turtle clan had used it to become an emperor, their hearts all began to heavily thud.

Kai Tian laughed at the sky. He laughed very crazily as energy pulsed from him. He then suddenly charged at the five of them without any regard for his own life. He wanted to bring the five of them down with him. He activated the attack of the formation as he did all that.

"Kai Tian, since the concept of brotherhood is nothing to you and you want to take the cultivation method for yourself, don't blame us for being ruthless," yelled the patriarch of the Goldensword clan.

Kai Tian's strength was similar to the five of them, and he was heavily injured as well. He was not the opponent of his five 'friends.' He very quickly collapsed in his own pool of blood. His

soul had been wiped out.

“Let’s get through the formation as soon as possible and go find Kai Ya. The cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor is definitely with her,” the patriarch of the Tyt tribe said to the four others as he fended off the attacks from the formation.

The Kalor tribe was a medium-sized tribe. They had been around for some time, but they still lacked a heritage. The formation in the room was unable to stop five Saint Rulers. They broke through the formation very soon with their combined attacks.

Outside, shouts of ‘kill’ constantly rang throughout the Kalor tribe. All the clansmen were engaged in an intense battle against the other five tribes. A barrier enveloped the entire area, preventing the people of the Kalor tribe from fleeing.

The disparity in strength between the two sides was just far too great. Corpses were littered across the ground and blood had formed streams. It was almost all from the clansmen of the Kalor tribe.

Kai Liu stood outside another hidden room in the tribe. Given the current situation, he did not worry about disturbing the person inside. He used the most direct method of knocking on the heavy stone door.

Very soon, the door opened and a streak of gentle light flowed out. Kai Ya sat in the center of the room in white clothes. She formed seals with her hands while her face was calm. She seemed otherworldly, giving off an almost divine presence.

She seemed like a seated goddess herself.

Kai Ya had undergone drastic changes by practicing the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor.

“Uncle Liu, what has happened? You look so flustered,” Kai Ya calmly asked. However, the presence she gave off changed when she spoke. The divine feeling vanished and she became ordinary

once more.

Kai Liu hurried in and said, “Kai Ya, flee. Your father’s five friends have been blinded by ambition. They’ve actually turned on your father together, and your father’s probably already in deep trouble. Even our tribe will face destruction. Kai Ya, go. You can’t stay here any longer.”

Kai Ya was greatly surprised. She suddenly stood up and asked, “Uncle Liu, what is this all about?”

“It must be because your father has leaked the fact that you practice the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor. Sigh, I told him before that no one else can know of this. Why didn’t he listen to me?” Kai Liu was filled with deep regret and disappointment over what Kai Yu’s father had done.

Chapter 1367: Destruction

Kai Ya arrived beside Kai Liu in a single step and grabbed him by the arm. She asked in a hurry, “Uncle Liu, what about my father? How is my father?”

Kai Liu shook off Kai Ya in a single stroke and frantically pushed her out. He said, “Kai Ya, don’t worry about your father anymore. You can’t save him. Leave, or it’ll be too late. You’re the only hope of our Kalor tribe. You have to survive, so you can take revenge for all the clansmen who have passed away.”

“No, I must save my father!” Kai Ya’s face was filled with worry and panic as well as some fear. She could already tell the importance of the matter from Kai Liu’s words. She was extremely terrified of losing her father.

“Your father’s already been hit by a sneak attack from five relatively good friends. They’ve probably come for your cultivation method. Dumb girl, you can’t save your father. Even if you hand over the cultivation method, they won’t leave anyone alive. Stop hesitating and go,” Kai Liu said in a panic. He looked back from time to time as an uneasiness filled his face.

“Uncle Liu, you go first. I’ll go save my father,” Kai Ya firmly replied. She gently let go of Kai Liu’s hand before rushing away with lightning-like speed. No matter how Kai Liu begged her from behind, he was unable to stop her.

Boom!

Just as Kai Ya emerged from underground, a loud sound rang out. In the distance, the ground cracked and earth was thrown into the air. Terrifying pulses of energy radiated from the cracks, and in the center of the explosion was a ten-meter-wide hole. It plunged straight into the ground.

The five patriarch slowly emerged from the hole, and in their

hands was Kai Tian who had already passed away.

“Father!” Kai Ya recognized the flesh and blood in their hands with a single glance. It was her father. She was immediately devastated and let out a sorrowful cry. She charged over without any regard for her own life.

“Kai Ya, you’ve come just at the right time. Hand over the cultivation method you’ve been practicing, or you’ll end up the same as your father,” the patriarch of the Dakar clan greedily demanded. He looked at Kai Ya as if she was a huge treasure. He had been blinded by desire. He appeared beside Kai Ya with a flash and extended a hand in an attempt to capture her.

“You were the ones who killed my father!” Kai Ya sorrowfully yelled at the sky. She was heart-broken. Tears poured down her cheek as she began to shine with blue light. A powerful presence radiated from her, and she firmly struck out with her hand. She began to fight the patriarch.

With a heavy sound, the patriarch of the Dakar clan countered with a similar palm strike. Kai Ya’s body jolted before being sent flying. It took her more than ten steps to stabilize herself, and she left a deep imprint in the ground every step she made.

The patriarch’s body jolted violently as well. He swayed a few times while his face became filled with shock. He said, “Kai Ya, I never thought that you’d have already become a 13th Star expert.”

The 13th Star was equivalent to the First to Fourth Heavenly Layers of a Saint Ruler on the Tian Yuan Continent. This was enough to be regarded as a peak-level force among small-and medium-sized clans.

“It must be due to the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor. The cultivation method really is wondrous. The ruler of the Turtle clan has been able to become an emperor in such a short amount of time after practicing it. Kai Ya’s strength had skyrocketed as well after practicing it.” The eyes of the Tyt clan

patriarch lit up. He was extremely emotional, as if he had already seen the moment when he would become an emperor.

“We have to get our hands on the cultivation method,” the patriarch of the Herman clan added. He seemed like an extremely young man. He was handsome and only seemed to be in his twenties at most, but he was also very greedy.

The patriarch of the Dakar clan struck out again. This time, he did not hold back. A three-meter-long spear appeared in his hands. It radiated with powerful pulses of energy. He stabbed it toward Kai Ya with lightning-like speed. He had even used his powers as a Saint Ruler to freeze the space around Kai Ya, so he could finish her off sooner.

The energy around Kai Ya swelled and continued to radiate a bright blue light. She stared at the five people in pure hatred as she spread her arms wide. Countless specks of white light gathered from the surroundings, condensing into eight spears. Every single spear was eight meters long. Although they were blurry, a mysterious energy circulated within them.

“Rise of the Octoterra, Single Cut!” Kai Ya cried out. The eight spears immediately let out a dazzling light and smashed through the frozen space in the surroundings. They then shot toward the patriarch of the Dakar clan in a straight line.

Boom! Boom! Boom...

The patriarch had already reached the 14th Star and was at the Sixth Heavenly Layer. He was just far more powerful. He used his single spear to receive the eight spears from Kai Ya, and with eight booms, earth was kicked into the air as the powerful ripples of energy expanded in all directions.

The patriarch of the Dakar clan destroyed the eight spears. Kai Ya had only just become a Saint Ruler, but the eight spears she had condensed were very powerful. The patriarch uncontrollably retreated several dozen meters after handling the spears. He

became disheveled while his clothes had been reduced to a mess. He had not been injured, but he was in a rather horrible condition.

He did not become angered at all, and his greed instead became even heavier. He excitedly said, “This must be a secret technique invented by the Octoterra Emperor. It’s so powerful that even when you use it, it’s enough to force me back. This is equivalent to a Tian Level Saint Technique.”

“It can be used at such a speed. This secret technique is even better than a Tian Level Saint Technique,” the patriarch of the Tingwei clan excitedly added. He was rather eager to obtain the cultivation method.

The Tyt tribe patriarch seemed to have reached the limit of his patience, “Quit dragging it out. Finish her off quick. Let’s attack together.”

The five people struck out at the same time and used their full strength. They were all rather eager, so they went as far as to lower themselves to deal with Kai Ya, who had only recently become a Saint Ruler.

It was almost impossible for Kai Ya to deal with just one of them, so she was even more helpless when the five of them attacked together. She condensed eight spears once again to force back one of them, but she could do nothing about the attacks from the other four.

A spear pierced Kai Ya’s shoulder, a trident produced a long gash across her chest, and the palms of the other two landed on her chest at the same time.

Spurt! Kai Ya vomited a mouthful of blood as she was sent flying back. She became extremely pale. If it were not for the fact that they wanted the cultivation technique and did not want to kill her before they got it, the wave of attacks would have been enough to wipe out her soul.

“Run, Kai Ya! Remember, you must take revenge for the tribe in the future. You must wipe out the Tyt tribe, Herman tribe, Goldensword tribe, Dakar clan, and Tingwei clan,” Kai Liu gloomily shouted as he charged over from afar. He carried a 14th Star quaking thunder in his hand as he charged toward the five patriarchs.

“Be careful, there’s a quaking thunder in his hands,” called out the patriarch of the Herman clan. He immediately froze space to trap Kai Liu.

However, Kai Liu was already close enough to them and the quaking thunder had already been set off. With a great boom, Kai Liu was devoured by the vast energy released from the quaking thunder.

The five patriarchs all retreated to avoid the ripples of energy from the quaking thunder.

“Uncle Liu!” Kai Ya produced a heart-wrenching sob. She felt utter sorrow. She constantly vomited blood as tears ran down her cheeks.

The pulse of energy from the quaking thunder caused the barrier around the Kalor tribe to tremble and shake. Kai Ya glanced in the direction Kai Liu had vanished while reminiscing before spreading her arms once more. She endured the pain and her shaking body with gritted teeth. She condensed another eight spears that shot toward the barrier.

Boom!

A huge hole ripped open in the barrier with a great boom. Kai Ya grabbed her father’s corpse as quickly as she could before rushing toward the barrier. She did not look back at all.

“Chase her down. We can’t let her escape,” the five patriarchs panicked as they all pursued her as quickly as they could.

The battle in the Kalor tribe only stopped when they left. Only

the people of the five clans remained scattered across the land. The Kalor tribe had been destroyed. Blood flowed like rivers while corpses lay everywhere.

Chapter 1368: Revival of the Sea Goddess

(One)

Kai Ya ran as fast as she could with her father's corpse. Tears constantly poured down her cheeks as blood dripped from the corner of her lips. Her eyes were filled with hatred and sorrow.

The five patriarch closely pursued her from behind. Every single one of them moved as fast as they could, and they even used secret techniques to increase their speed. They needed to capture Kai Ya. Not only was capturing her directly connected to whether they would obtain the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor, but it was also connected to their future fates as well.

“We can't let her escape no matter what. It's said that she has some connections with the emperor of the Turtle clan. This may not have been confirmed, but we need to make sure.”

“Yeah. If Kai Ya finds the emperor of the Turtle clan, we'll be dead no matter where we flee.”

The five patriarchs spoke with heavy tones. They were all stern. They had underestimated Kai Ya's strength, never having imagined that she would be powerful enough to smash through the barrier, leading to all this.

Although Kai Ya was nowhere near as powerful as the five of them, she was no slower than them, and even faster in some cases. Eight spears had appeared behind her. They were blurry, but every single one of them gave off a mysterious presence as a mysterious energy flowed inside them.

The eight spears formed a three-meter-long fan behind Kai Ya. A mysterious force radiated from the spears, causing them to fuse together. They seemed like a pair of wings from afar.

The wings formed from the eight spears slowly flapped, allowing Kai Ya to move extremely quick. Without the use of any other

secret techniques, she had reached speeds that even Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers could not attain despite only having just broken through.

The five people became more and more worried seeing how Kai Ya grew further and further away from them. The Tyt tribe patriarch coldly said, "We can't catch up to her anymore. I'll use a secret technique to mark her so it's easier for us to track her down." The patriarch immediately began to use a secret technique. A drop of blood flew from the tip of his tongue, vanishing into Kai Ya at a lightning-quick speed.

This was his innate secret technique. Only his clansmen could practice it. Once someone had been hit by the secret technique, they could be sensed from a very far distance. It was very difficult to erase their presence.

Over a hundred million people had gathered around the desolate mountain range where the sea goddess was being resurrected. They all stood ten thousand kilometers away. No one was bold enough to try to sneak in anymore.

The news about the sea goddess' revival had spread across the entire sea realm during that time, attracting countless people to come witness the spectacle. Many people were emotional, extremely eager for the moment when the sea goddess would return.

In ancient times, the sea goddess had devoted herself wholeheartedly to her people and committed great services for them. She had even cast down a barrier to protect the sea realm. She was the most revered person in the entire region.

The times were different now and many years had passed since the ancient years, which was why the sea goddess no longer held as much prestige as before. Some experts had even become ill-intended, but there were still people who devoted themselves to the sea goddess. Not everyone had changed.

Three months later, the water-attributed energy from the ninety-nine spiritual springs vanished while the formation stopped absorbing energy of the world as well. After such a long period of intense consumption, the energy in the sea realm plummeted. There was less than sixty percent of what there had been originally, and it would take a very long time to recover to its original level.

The revival of the sea goddess just took up far too much energy.

Yadriam sat on a mountain in the mountain range as she devoted herself to guarding and protecting the sea goddess. She had never let down her guard throughout the entire process, paying attention to the surroundings at all times to prevent any other people from coming to cause trouble after the two hall masters had.

Jian Chen sat on the Zi Ying Sword, which levitated at an altitude of a thousand meters and continued to let out a violet light. He devoted himself to comprehending the sword, studying the basic sword techniques that he had obtained from the Azulet sword spirits. However, he did not forget about guarding the sea goddess during that time. He kept a sliver of his soul on guard to observe the surrounding radius of ten thousand kilometers. That way, he was able to pay more attention to the sword techniques.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's face twitched and he immediately stopped studying the sword techniques. He opened his eyes and began to stare at the center of the huge formation without blinking at all.

Yadriam sensed something as well soon after he did. She stood up as her clothes fluttered despite the absence of wind. She silently flew over from a distance. She was both nervous and excited.

It remained pitch-black at the center of the formation, as if it hid another space or world all together. No one could see what was going on inside.

Boom! Boom! Boom...

At this moment, a series of booms rang out. The formation that Yadriam had cast down actually exploded, producing thunderous sounds and causing the mountains there to shake and crack. Large portions collapsed as dust was thrown into the air. The entire region became engulfed by a thick layer of sand and dust.

A powerful presence suddenly appeared and rapidly grew stronger. In just a few short seconds, her presence had reached a terrifying level. It engulfed the entire sea realm, as if a sleeping primordial beast had begun to awaken.

“I-is this her majesty? Has her majesty been revived successfully?”

“What a powerful presence. This presence actually makes my soul tremble. This is definitely from someone who has surpassed emperors. Is it really her majesty?”

“The sea goddess has revived. After a million years of slumber, the sea goddess of the four ancient champions has finally returned.”

The surrounding crowd of people buzzed with activity. Countless people loudly cried out. There was joy and excitement as well as a few people still filled with disbelief. They found it difficult to believe that the sea goddess was really still alive.

As the sea goddess' presence rapidly soared, she slowly began to display her prestige just like a waking god. Very soon, the tremendous presence surged out of the sea realm and condensed under the blue sky outside. It gave off a terrifying pressure.

No one knew just how much more tremendous the pressure was compared to Saint Emperors, but as soon as it radiated out, it was sensed by all the experts in the world.

The four races gathered in Mercenary City all gazed in the direction of the sea realm in shock. The path lord of carnal desires and the three Class 9 Magical Beasts were solemn. They could

sense the pressure even more intensely as Saint Emperors. They understood very well just how powerful the pressure was.

Even with their strength, they shivered deep inside before the pressure.

“It’s the goddess of the Sea race. It must be her,” mumbled the grand elder of Mercenary City. He was extremely excited. It was of extreme significance that they had one extra Origin realm expert.

However, the path lord, Kaiser, and Lankyros all became very ugly. Their eyes flickered with uncertainty. The sea goddess of the past had appeared, and someone who had surpassed Saint Emperors had appeared once again. The first since the ancient times. It would cause their status to greatly fall without any doubt. They were no longer part of the strongest of the world anymore.

Chapter 1369: Revival of the Sea Goddess

(Two)

“Her majesty has been revived. This is just fantastic. The sea realm can be completely united now. There’s no need for us to remain in a balance between three large organizations,” the Saint Kings of the Sea Goddess Hall all excitedly exclaimed. The successful revival of the sea goddess was extraordinarily significant to the sea realm.

In ancient times, the sea realm was under the Sea Goddess Hall’s supreme control. There was only a single Sea Goddess Hall for the entire sea realm back then. The Heaven’s Spirit Hall or Serpent God Hall didn’t exist like they did now.

The experts of the Hundred Races were extremely happy for the revival of the sea goddess as well. In ancient times, only the Sea race had not fallen out with them, so they possessed no prejudice toward the Sea race at all.

The sea goddess, who had just been revived, slowly hovered into the sky. She bathed in a layer of extremely dense blue light. Although her appearance was obscured, she gave off a holy presence that could not be tarnished.

The sea goddess’ presence had been erased already, but Jian Chen and Yadriam still sensed a powerful pressure.

The two hall masters, who had had their strength sealed up by Yadriam, looked up with difficulty from a nearby mountain. They stared at the sea goddess in a daze as despair filled their eyes.

“Congratulations on your revival, your majesty!” Jian Chen clasped his hands at the sea goddess as he stood on the Zi Ying Sword. He felt joy from the bottom of his heart for her.

Yadriam knelt in the air. She was extremely emotional as she said with a trembling voice, “The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall

greet your majesty!”

“Jian Chen, if it weren’t for your assistance, I would have never been able to be revived. I cannot express my gratitude with words. If there is anything I can assist you with in the future, I will definitely give it my all,” said the sea goddess. Her voice carried a sliver of joy and excitement. She had waited far too long for this moment.

“I have a great debt of gratitude for your majesty. You’ve helped me far, far too much in the past, so how can I forget your kindness? This was my duty. I am not someone who forgets kindness that has been shown,” Jian Chen replied nonchalantly. He was extremely easygoing.

“Yadriam, it’s been difficult for you during these years while preparing for my resurrection,” the sea goddess said to Yadriam. Her voice was gentle.

Yadriam’s eyes fogged up slightly. She replied courteously, “Your majesty is half a master to me. The only reason I am standing here today is all because of your majesty. I am willing to work until my dying breath for your majesty.”

The sea goddess gently sighed and changed the topic of the conversation. She said, “The Tian Yuan Continent is facing a great threat. This is a disaster directly connected to the lives of countless people. We cannot stand neutral in this. Yadriam, once the great calamity arrives, lead the experts of the Sea race to fend them off.”

“Yes, your majesty. I will definitely do everything I can,” Yadriam firmly responded.

“Release the two of them. Every single emperor is extremely important to us. We can no longer afford to turn on ourselves and weaken ourselves at this time,” followed the sea goddess.

The eyes of the two hall masters immediately lit up. They recovered some light to their despair-filled faces. They were both

filled with hope.

“But your majesty, the two hall master wanted to stop your revival just then. If it weren’t for Jian Chen, they probably would have succeeded already. Do you really want to let them go like this?” Yadriam said.

“They have attempted to harm me and have committed unforgivable crimes, but the threat of the World of Forsaken Saints takes priority. We can deal with their punishments after we eliminate that threat,” the sea goddess leisurely replied. She had always remained in the sea realm, but she knew exactly what was happening on the Tian Yuan Continent.

“I’ve just been revived so my strength is nowhere near my peak. I need to immediately enter seclusion and recover as soon as possible so that I can deal with the threat of the foreign world. Jian Chen, this divine hall forged from Abyssal Crystal has been with me for countless years. It’s the most valuable item on me, and I don’t need it anymore, so I’ll gift it to you out of gratitude for your help. You might not be able to use the divine hall, but it’ll be extremely significant to the Flame Mercenaries because its toughness is incomparable to other divine halls.” With a wave of her hand, the divine hall in the air immediately shrunk to the size of a fist and arrived before Jian Chen. It glowed with a blinding blue light.

Jian Chen originally wanted to turn the offer down, but after considering the Flame Mercenaries, he had no choice but to take it. The sea goddess was right. The divine hall would be far too significant to the Flame Mercenaries. It could be one of their greatest treasures that could be passed down.

The sea goddess left after handing over some matters. She found a place to enter seclusion so that she could recover her peak condition as soon as possible.

Jian Chen had no more need to stay any longer now that the sea

goddess' revival had been completed. He rode the Qing Suo Sword and left the place as a streak of light.

Jian Chen could not help but think of the four divine general that had once hunted him down from the Serpent God Hall. He had once visited the Serpent God Hall with ill intent and fought the four divine generals all by himself, but he had unfortunately been stopped by the hall elders, allowing the four divine generals to emerge with their lives. He had never completed his revenge.

“I originally planned on taking your lives once I was strong enough, but now that the Tian Yuan Continent is facing a great threat, I'll deal with our enmity after the disaster,” mumbled Jian Chen.

The Turtle clan was utterly different from its former self. Although it did not possess several experts at Great Perfection of Saint King guarding the clan, it was even more glorious than the past. They had given birth to an emperor. Just the single existence of their ruler allowed the clan to stand on equal ground with the three halls. They had taken the entire sea realm by shock and no one dared to provoke them. There were endless amounts of visitors from various clans daily.

The clansmen felt like they were living in a dream right now. They had never been so happy or proud before. They had fought until they bled against several large clans in the past and faced destruction, yet today, basically all the important figures from the surrounding clans had gifted them large numbers of crystal coins. They had not imagined a day like this in the past.

However, all of the clansmen knew that the reason why today existed was all because of their ruler. This was why the ruler of the Turtle clan had become the most respected and admired leader among all the clansmen. He received the love of everyone.

The discussion hall of the Turtle clan had been redecorated and was now extremely well adorned. It was majestic and grand. Jian

Chen sat on the throne in the hall while the elders of the clan courteously stood on both sides of them.

“I have gathered you all here today to announce two things. The first thing is that I am about to leave the sea realm,” Jian Chen nonchalantly informed them.

The elders all changed in expression when they heard what he had said. They all began to panic and urged him to stay because the clan could not go without a ruler.

Jian Chen quietened everyone below and said, “My departure will happen sooner or later, but don’t worry. Even if I go, the Turtle clan will remain as one of the most powerful clans in the sea realm. The second thing I want to announce is that I will increase all of your strength before I leave. You will become the pillars of support for the Turtle clan in the future.”

Chapter 1370: Glory of the Turtle Clan (One)

The elders of the Turtle clan all stopped talking. They clearly were all very heavy-hearted. Even after hearing that the ruler would increase their strength and allow it to skyrocket, no one was able to lighten up.

This was because the current glory of the clan and the reason why they possessed such a great status in the sea realm was because of the ruler himself. The clansmen had not contributed much at all. The ruler had already become the spiritual leader of the clan. His presence possessed extremely great significance to the clan. No one could go without the ruler.

Although their ruler had left the clan from time to time, his absence had only been temporary. However, it was different this time. Jian Chen did not give an explanation, but the elders could already sense that his departure would be the real thing. He might not return ever again.

“Ruler, don’t abandon us. The clan cannot go without you. If the ruler isn’t present, the clan will have lost its soul even if we’re powerful. We’ll just be reduced to the living dead,” an elder knelt down as tears streaked his face as he begged the ruler.

“Don’t abandon our clan, ruler...”

“Ruler, the clan needs you...”

The other elders all knelt down and bitterly pleaded with him. They all wanted Jian Chen to stay.

Jian Chen sighed inside when he saw this. He fell silent for a while before saying, “If the Turtle clan wants to become truly powerful, you need to be able to go without the ruler. A Turtle clan that can maintain its glory even without their ruler is a true, peak-level clan. Only then can you go through thick and thin without waning. Elders, please come to me into the secret room.”

Jian Chen lead the sorrowful elders into the largest secret room available before removing various heavenly resources from his Space Ring to increase their strength.

The elders knew that the ruler had already made up his mind and would not change it no matter what. They all gloomily sat down in the room in dejection.

Jian Chen glanced at the depressed elders and said nothing. He pulled out some Heaven-connecting Flowers he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm.

The faint fragrance of the flowers permeated the entire room. The fragrance possessed the power of gathering concentration and could refine the energy within people and suppress their inner demons, allowing them to cultivate without being affected. Even in the Immortals' World, the flowers were extremely precious.

And the flowers he had brought out had grown in the Xuanhuang Microcosm, so they were even more extraordinary. Their effects were even stronger than ordinary ones.

The elders immediately gathered their attention when they caught a whiff of the fragrance. Their eyes shone with interest. They were brimming with vigor once again. They were clear-headed once more. Their sorrow from the departure of their ruler had instantly vanished.

Jian Chen secretly praised the effects of the flowers. They really were powerful when he sensed the reaction of the elders. The power of the flowers had not disappointed him.

Jian Chen pulled out a large gourd from his Space Ring and poured out some blood. He split it into over a dozen droplets, which then floated before each elder. Each droplet was thumb-sized and pulsed with powerful energy.

“This is what I obtained from the hall master of the Serpent God Hall. It's the blood of an emperor and should possess great benefits

for you,” said Jian Chen, before using his mind to guide the droplets of blood into the mouths of the elders.

The energy hidden within the blood immediately began to radiate as soon as it reached their stomachs. A violent presence rampaged within the elders’ bodies.

The elders became too busy to talk. They immediately gathered their attention and closed their eyes to refine the droplet of blood. Although it was a Saint Emperor’s blood, there was not a lot of it and it had been stored for a long time already. The violent nature present inside had mostly dissipated, no longer able to pose any threats to the elders.

The elders refined the blood very quickly. Not only did they sense an obvious increase in their strength, but their bodies also became even more powerful as well.

The great effect of the droplets of blood was not an increase in strength but an increase in toughness of the body.

The elders all beamed with joy. The blood of an emperor was something that countless experts lusted over, but no emperor was willing to allow others to consume their blood, as it would take a toll on their vitality without a doubt at all. They all felt extremely proud seeing how they could actually enjoy something like this.

They all looked at Jian Chen again and saw him boiling water, about to make tea. Before them was a small bowl, and each bowl was filled with a faint, green liquid.

“This is divine water of the world!” An elder recognized what it was and could not help but cry out. The divine water of the world was a rare treasure of the sea realm. With just a single gulp of it, it was enough to make a person with mediocre talent become a genius that would only appear once in ten thousand years. It possessed great effects on Saint Rulers as well. Not only could it increase their strength, but it could also refine their souls and set down a foundation when they break through to Saint King.

“The divine water of the world will allow you to reach the 15th Star without any obstructions or worrying about personal talent. Drink it,” Jian Chen calmly ordered. He had collected several hundred liters of it from the depths of the divine realm, so he still had a lot of it in stock.

The elders all excitedly drank the water before them before closing their eyes. They all seemed intoxicated. Not only would the refinement of the soul from the water fail to cause them any pain, but it would also make them feel like they were transcending. It was extremely comfortable.

After a certain period of time, the special feelings brought on by the water slowly vanished. The elders opened their eyes and were all overjoyed. Not only had their souls strengthened after ingesting the water, but even their strength had made great improvements as well. They did not break through, but it was equivalent to several decades or even a century worth of cultivation.

What left them ravished with joy was that after the refinement of the souls, breaking through to Saint King would become a hundred times easier. All they needed to do was work hard and reaching Saint King would basically pose no problem.

At this moment, the light fragrance of tea hit their noses. Jian Chen had poured the tea for them, and on the tables, there were several fist-sized peaches.

These were first grade Violet Cloud Peaches. A single one of them could increase cultivation by five hundred years, and these five hundred years was calculated according to the Immortals' World. It would have far greater effects than that on the elders because their talent was not particularly impressive.

Under Jian Chen's orders, the elders first consumed the peaches before downing the entire cup of Comprehension Tea.

The emperor's blood and divine water of the world from before was only for establishing a foundation for them. The Violet Cloud

Peach and Comprehension Tea would be the heavenly resources responsible for making their strength skyrocket.

Chapter 1371: Glory of the Turtle Clan (Two)

As soon as the Violet Cloud Peach reached their stomachs, it immediately transformed into a vast amount of energy. The energy was pure and powerful and filled every corner of the elders' bodies.

The elders of the Turtle clan were all extremely shocked and stunned. They found the energy just far too vast and tremendous, having exceeded the limits that their bodies could withstand. What shocked them even more was that such a small peach contained this unbelievable amount of energy.

The emperor's blood and divine water of the world were nothing compared to the peach.

The elders began to arduously refine the energy with fear and unease. They were afraid of being blown apart by the energy.

However, they all let out a breath of relief. The energy within a single peach was terrifying, but it was not as violent as they had imagined it to be. Instead, it was extremely gentle and did not negatively affect them at all.

As they refined the peaches, the Comprehension Tea came into great use. It took them into a wondrous state of mind. Under this state, the mysteries of the world, which they would usually take forever to comprehend, were being presented before them in a clear way. In their absent-mindedness, they seemed to understand and comprehend something. Their comprehension of the mysteries of the world rapidly skyrocketed.

Before Jian Chen had possessed his fated swords, he had used the tea to force his way into Sword Origin. That was more than enough to demonstrate how great the effects of the tea were on people's abilities to comprehend the laws of the world. The elders were using the tea to comprehend the mysteries of the world that was far less significant than the Way of the Sword, so their

understanding improved very quickly.

Jian Chen sat before the elders and carefully observed their states. He watched over them, to prevent them from encountering any accidents as they went through the process. This was the first time he had given someone the heavenly resources from the Xuanhuang Microcosm. He could test the true effects of the heavenly resources on the elders.

The presence of the elders rapidly strengthened as powerful energy pulsed from them. Their strength continued to increase.

Suddenly, a faint white mist drifted out of the bodies of the elders. It grew thicker and thicker before enveloping them entirely.

Immediately, the energy of the world in the secret room became extremely dense before dispersing into the surroundings

Jian Chen frowned when he saw this. He could tell that the white mist from the elders was the vast energy from the peaches.

“They’re actually unable to completely refine a first grade Violet Cloud Peach. They still wasted quite a lot of energy,” Jian Chen thought while feeling some pain. The increase in strength brought on by the peach would decrease as a result.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, is there any way to prevent the leakage of energy,” Jian Chen turned to the sword spirits for help.

“Master, this is a common occurrence. Not everyone can absorb all the energy within a peach. Normally in the Immortals’ World, a weaker person will always have a senior of theirs watching over them when they consume the peach so that the senior can use their supreme strength to stop the leakage of energy or use some special method to seal the energy within them. However, you still don’t possess that ability with your current strength, master,” Qing Suo told him.

Jian Chen gave up after listening to their explanation. All he

could do was helplessly watch as the energy constantly drifted out of the elders. He could not stop it.

Jian Chen stayed there for close to a month before the elders finally refined all the energy they could. The moment they opened their eyes, a tremendous presence immediately radiated from them, rushing out like a flood. It blasted the room to pieces in a single moment, caused it to collapse. The entire clan was greatly affected by their auras.

Jian Chen put away the flowers, and with a flash, he left the room and returned to ground level. He stood with his arms crossed.

The secret room he had just been in began to collapse, quickly forming a deep ditch nearby.

The elders all erased their presences and rushed out of the ground. All of them stood behind Jian Chen while feeling emotional. They were all overjoyed when they sensed their current strength. They dropped to their knees and cried out, "We thank the ruler for your gift!"

At this moment, quite a few clansmen had gathered in the surroundings. They had no idea what had just happened, but they immediately bowed when they saw Jian Chen there. They politely cried out, "We greet the ruler!"

Jian Chen dispersed the crowd with a wave of his hand. He glanced over all the elders and smiled in satisfaction. He said, "Well done, you haven't disappointed me. Your strength has rapidly increased and you have all reached the 15th Star, and five of you have even reached the 16th Star. In the entire sea realm, there is no organization, aside from the three ancient halls, that possesses over a dozen Saint King. From today on, even without me, you will be able to support the clan.

As he said that, Jian Chen glanced at the sky above him. The sea realm was enveloped by a huge barrier, which was why no rainbow

clouds appeared when the elders all became Saint Kings

The elders' excitement gradually vanished. They said rather gloomily, "Ruler, we wish for you to visit the clan often in the future. All of us will be thinking of you."

Jian Chen glanced around the bustling clan and said, "The Turtle clan is a clan that stands at the very peak of the sea realm. I have finally completed the grand elder's wish. I may visit you from, time to time, but I will be handing the clan to you from now on. Farewell!" Jian Chen jumped on the Zi Ying Sword and took off as a streak of light.

"We bid the ruler farewell!" The elders behind remained on their knees. Every single one of them felt horrible. Their joy from becoming Saint Kings had already completely vanished.

Jian Chen visited the grand elder's grave before riding his sword to the Sea Goddess Hall.

Yadriam received him personally while several hall elders followed behind her. Now, all the hall elders looked at Jian Chen with gazes of respect and fear.

The most eye-catching person among them was a woman in a blue dress. She was alluring and no less beautiful than Yadriam.

Jian Chen greeted Yadriam before looking toward the woman. He clasped his hands at her and said, "I thank elder Atlantis' assistance back when I was being hunted by the experts of the Heaven's Spirit Hall and Serpent God Hall."

The woman was Atlantis, the one known as the strongest below emperor. She was a hall elder of the Sea Goddess Hall.

Atlantis bowed to Jian Chen and said, "The emperor must be joking. You probably only hid your strength intentionally back them. Even without my assistance, they wouldn't have been able to do anything to you. I was unneeded in that situation, so please forgive me for making a spectacle."

“Jian Chen, please come in,” said Yadriam as she invited Jian Chen into the hall.

Yadriam and Jian Chen sat opposite of each other inside a well-decorated room. Atlantis personally served tea and fruit for them.

“It hasn’t been peaceful over the past few days. Her majesty’s revival has thrown the sea realm into an uproar and the two other halls have wavered. Many people have broken away from them and joined our Sea Goddess Hall. If it were not for the fact that the two hall masters were still alive, the two halls probably would have dissolved already,” said Yadriam.

“This is a perfect opportunity for you to unite the sea realm,” replied Jian Chen.

Yadriam glanced at Jian Chen and shook her head. She gently sighed, “That’s not what her majesty wanted me to do. She said that having the sea realm balanced between the three halls is not necessarily bad.”

Jian Chen said nothing. He had nothing to say about the internal affairs of the sea realm.

Yadriam picked up a finger-sized piece of fruit and ate it. She said, “Jian Chen, have you come this time for your friend?”

“Yes, that’s exactly why I’ve come. Back in the territory of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, her majesty told me, as she was leaving, that my friend has been sent to the Sea Goddess Hall for cultivation. Hall master, is my friend well?” Jian Chen inquired.

“You have no need to worry. After you friend was brought here by her majesty, she has enjoyed the treatment of a valued guest. I have already sent people with large quantities of divine quality crystals to help with her cultivation. She is completely fine right now, and her strength is rapidly increasing. I’ll take you to see her right now.” Yadriam stood up and left as she spoke. She personally lead the way for Jian Chen. In her opinion, the only polite thing to

do his would be to personally lead him to his friend.

The divine hall was extremely vast. Jian Chen went through twists and turns as he followed Yadriam before arriving in a forbidden zone. He stood in front of a large door to a secret room.

Yadriam opened the door and a ray of dazzling blue light immediately flowed out. An extremely pretty woman, who seemed to be in her twenties, sat inside cultivating. Her long hair ran down her shoulders. Her face was almond-shaped and her lips were like cherries. Her long eyelashes gently trembled, making her seem extremely enchanting. This pretty woman was Huang Luan, who Jian Chen had not seen for a long time.

However, the current Huang Luan had already undergone an overwhelming change in strength compared to before. She possessed the Water Spirit's Body, so her talent was shocking. She cultivated at an extremely fast rate, especially after she had arrived in the sea realm. She practiced a cultivation method imparted on her by the sea goddess, and her rate of improvement could only be described as stunning. She had already reached the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler.

Although she was nothing compared to Jian Chen, there was rarely anyone in the world who could reach the Seventh Heavenly Layer in such a short time after just breaking through.

Huang Luan seemed to sense the door open and was roused from her state of cultivation. The moment she opened her eyes, her gaze froze. Her eyelashes gently trembled as she stared at Jian Chen in a daze. Her face was filled with excitement and joy.

"You two catch up. I'll be leaving first as I still have matters I need to attend to." Yadriam left and secretly dismissed the people in the surroundings, leaving Jian Chen and Huang Luan by themselves.

Chapter 1372: Departure

In the blink of an eye, the surroundings fell so silent that even a dropped needle would be heard clearly. Only Jian Chen and Huang Luan's long breaths were vaguely audible. Huang Luan's breathing gradually became heavier and the sound of her heart-beating seemed audible as well. This was all due to her excitement.

Suddenly, Huang Luan lunged at Jian Chen and wrapped her arms tightly around him. She buried her face deep in his chest as her body slightly trembled.

Huang Luan possessed the Water Spirit's Body, so she should have possessed a warm and gentle personality. However, her personality was the exact opposite. Deep in her was a natural sense of chivalry, and she was relatively straightforward, especially in certain aspects. She lacked the bashfulness present in young girls.

Jian Chen gently embraced Huang Luan as he could feel her supple skin. He could not help but let his state of mind waver slightly.

"Luan'er, it's been tough for you these days. I left you here all by yourself to cultivate. You had to endure the boredom and loneliness silently," Jian Chen sniffed Huang Luan's fragrance as he blamed himself. He had no choice but to leave Huang Luan here after bringing her to the sea realm.

Huang Luan covered Jian Chen's mouth with a hand as her eyes filled with tears. She affectionately looked at Jian Chen's handsome and masculine face and gently said, "Chen, I don't blame you. The only person that can be blamed is me for being useless, and I couldn't help you, forcing you to go through storms of blood all by yourself. I'm currently cultivating as hard as I can to increase my strength. Once I become a Saint King, I'll be able to help you."

Jian Chen was greatly touched by her words. He embraced

Huang Luan tighter and lowered his head to gently kiss her forehead. He tenderly said, “Luan’er, you don’t need to be like that. My hard days of life are over. I have the strength to hold myself up in the world now and protect those beside me...”

All the hidden thoughts they felt exploded at that very moment after being apart for so many days. In the silence and without any disturbances, Jian Chen and Huang Luan remained in each other’s embrace while they softly spoke. They revealed their true feelings.

The two of them talked about a lot of things. Jian Chen told her about everything that he had experienced over the past few years right down to the smallest detail. He did not feel like he had the need to hide anything from Huang Luan. The only thing he kept secret from her were the Azulet swords and the Immortals’ World. It would not be good for her to learn about these matters too soon.

Huang Luan became overjoyed after the initial shock when she learned that Jian Chen could easily kill Saint Emperors now. At that moment, Huang Luan had never felt so at ease. She remained in her lover’s embrace.

Over the past few days, she had been working hard on cultivating. She used her longing as motivation. She had always thought about becoming powerful to help out Jian Chen. She knew that Jian Chen’s strength had increased very quickly in recent years, but it had not been a peaceful time for him. He often walked on the edge and would always be on the front lines of life. He roamed the boundary between life and death, living each day with great difficulty.

Now, Huang Luan became extremely excited after she learned that her lover had become a Saint Emperor. This was because she no longer needed to worry about Jian Chen’s safety, which allowed her to be at ease.

“Luan’er, I’ve come today specifically to take you back to the Tian Yuan Continent. You’ve been away for so long, so it’s time for

you to come back. And it's time for us to find Changyang Qing Yun and settle the matter of him planting an ancient secret technique in you," Jian Chen gently explained. As soon as he mentioned Changyang Qing Yun, a sliver of fierce anger flashed through his eyes.

Huang Luan remained in his embrace obediently like a cat. She tenderly nodded and said nothing.

Jian Chen took Huang Luan to see Yadriam afterward and thanked her for looking after Huang Luan all this time. He pulled out a first and second grade Violet Cloud Peach from his Space Ring and said, "Hall master, these are some heavenly resources I obtained in the space that I went into to search for her majesty's revival materials. They possessed extremely wondrous effects. This peach of a deeper color is for you, and please hand the other one to elder Atlantis for giving me assistance back then."

Yadriam thanked Jian Chen before accepting the two peaches. She did not pay too much mind to them.

Jian Chen could tell with a single glance that Yadriam treated the two peaches as nothing. He could not help but add, "Hall master, do not underestimate these two peaches. Once I leave, it's best for the hall master to ingest the peach as soon as possible. Its effects will definitely give you a pleasant surprise."

"Really?" Yadriam examined the peach in her hands and glanced at Jian Chen doubtfully. She did not believe that the peach would surprise her at all.

She was already a Saint Emperor. No matter how valuable the heavenly resource was, its effects would be insignificant on an expert like her.

Jian Chen also left behind two second grade Comprehension Tea Leaves and some water from the Springs of Life. He told Yadriam how to prepare the tea before leaving with Huang Luan.

Jian Chen stood on the Zi Ying Sword with his arm around Huang Luan's waist above the Sea Goddess Hall. He shot off into the distance as a streak of light, headed to the Serpent God Hall.

The Zi Ying Sword moved extremely quickly, so quickly that Jian Chen was unable to distinguish the rapidly receding landscape around him. He used the senses of his soul to find his way. Huang Luan felt like she had entered a tunnel in space-time as she stood on the sword. Everything was all blurry around her.

“Chen, this Zi Ying Sword is so fast. I never thought that the two swords you forged could be used like this,” Huang Luan emotionally sighed as she stared at the Zi Ying Sword beneath her in surprise.

“This is only the base speed. As I grow stronger, the speed will increase,” Jian Chen smiled complacently. Traveling had always been a pain to him due to the fact that he was unable to comprehend the mysteries of the world on the level of a Saint King. The Zi Ying Sword made up for this flaw.

Soon, Jian Chen arrived in the territory of the Serpent God Hall and stopped before some ruins.

This was the territory of the Kalor tribe, but it had been reduced to nothing. The entire place had fallen into ruins.

Chapter 1373: Returning to Flame City

The Kalor tribe had been reduced to almost nothing from flames. The ground had been burned to a pitch-black with a few black remains scattered throughout the surroundings.

From the ruins and remains, the Kalor tribe had been devastated several days ago. The ruins were silent without any signs of life. The moaning of the wind blew some ashes off the ground. It was a dreary sight.

The Zi Ying Sword flickered with violet light. It was enveloped by a thick layer of violet sword Qi, making only a violet figure visible. It slowly descended under Jian Chen's control, stopping twenty meters above the ground.

Jian Chen gently held Huang Luan as he slowly glanced over the ruins. He remained silent throughout his observation. He could still clearly remember that the region had been extremely bustling when he had given Kai Ya the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor. However, the prosperous tribe was nowhere to be seen now. It had been reduced to dreary ruins.

"Sigh," Jian Chen exhaled deeply after quite a long time. When he had given the cultivation method to Kai Ya, it was to thank her for her help and to find the Octoterra Emperor a successor. Thus, Kai Ya would become the second Octoterra Emperor. Yet now...

"I wonder if Kai Ya is still alive," Jian Chen thought. He felt no sorrow. This was a world where the strong preyed on the weak. Tragedies like the Kalor tribe happened often both in the sea realm and the Tian Yuan Continent.

"Chen, is your friend here?" Huang Luan gazed around before looking at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen said, "This used to be a friend's home. I never expected this tribe to face destruction. I wonder if my friend is still alive or

not.” Afterward, Jian Chen expanded his soul as hard as he could and enveloped almost three hundred thousand kilometers. He searched as hard as he could, but he did not find Kai Ya in the end.

“Let’s go!” Jian Chen stopped searching and left with Huang Luan. He flew toward the Tian Yuan Continent.

Jian Chen flew over the oceans around the Tian Yuan Continent with Huang Luan and arrived in the Fire Dragon Kingdom, one of the eight great kingdoms. He made his way to the royal palace.

The Fire Dragon Kingdom was no weaker than the Qinghuang Kingdom. They also possessed four Saint Rulers, the four Imperial Protectors of the kingdom.

Jian Chen’s sudden arrival took the royal palace by great shock. The king and the four imperial protectors received him personally. They behaved with extreme humility and fear even though they reigned at the top on any other day. They spoke politely and were afraid of breathing too loud.

Jian Chen stated his intentions in a straightforward manner. He wanted to borrow the Space Gate to return to Flame City. He had forged the Azulet swords now and could move very quickly by riding them, but it was several million kilometers or more from the sea to Flame City. Space Gates would still be faster.

The king and the imperial protectors did not show any disagreement at all toward Jian Chen’s request. They even personally activated the Space Gate for him, sending him off courteously.

As Jian Chen and Huang Luan disappeared into the Space Gate, the king and imperial protectors immediately let out a breath of relief. Jian Chen did not give off a presence at all, but they felt like they were being pushed down by a mountain when they were before him. It was a psychological pressure.

“Imperial Protectors, has Jian Chen really become a Saint

Emperor? Why does he still need to borrow the Space Gate if he is one?" The king wiped the sweat from his forehead as he asked the four imperial protectors.

The imperial protectors fell into silent thought and did not respond right away. One of them only began to confidently speak after quite some time, "I have an old friend who was cultivating in the volcanic regions of the west. I've obtained definite information that Jian Chen has really become a Saint Emperor. Coupled with his two swords that were nurtured by the world, even Saint Emperors are no longer his opponents. Jian Chen used a single strike to defeat two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent and scared the path lord of carnal desires away. Jian Chen right now is far more powerful than any regular Saint Emperor. I have no clue why he has to borrow the Space Gate, however."

The king gasped. He became so frightened by the fact that Jian Chen had defeated two Saint Emperors with a single strike that his heart almost stopped beating.

However, he then became extremely excited and elated when he thought about how he had just come in contact with such a great expert at such a close range. He immediately sent out an order, "Immediately release the news that the Saint Emperor Jian Chen has just visited our kingdom..." The king immediately announced the news of his visit. Now that Jian Chen had basically become the strongest Saint Emperor of the Tian Yuan Continent, a personal visit from him was a great honor of the kingdom. It could raise their status and fame.

Twenty kilometers away from Flame City, space violently distorted before ripping open, forming a colorful Space Gate.

The Space Gate slowly vanished after Jian Chen and Huang Luan had stepped out. Everything quickly returned to how it had been before very.

Jian Chen hovered ten meters in the air as he stared at the city in

the distance. The walls were pitch-black, making it seem like a huge beast was slumbering there. The walls gave off a feeling of domination.

A golden barrier was expanded across the city, enveloping the entire place. The only way into the place were through the city gates.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed when he saw the golden barrier. His gaze became extremely sharp in a single moment, like two drawn swords. His eyes shone resplendently.

This was because he actually felt shocked by the pulses of energy from the barrier. The energy was just far too powerful, having completely exceeded the energy of Saint Emperors.

“An Origin realm expert? Who else has reached that level of cultivation other than protector Shui of the Ice Goddess Hall and Xiao Ling? And they've even put such a powerful barrier around the city?” Jian Chen was filled with doubt. He flew toward the city with Huang Luan.

Bi Lian and You Yue were currently gathered around a table as they personally taught a chubby, white boy how to fight. He only seemed to be three or four years old.

The boy was very cute. He wore golden clothes and had no hair. His large eyes were extremely bright as they flickered with naivety. However, diligence was spelled across his face.

“Xiao Jin, tell me what this word is,” You Yue asked the young boy with a smile as she held a piece of paper.

“Heaven,” the boy responded with his cute voice.

“Then this?” Bi Lian also asked the boy what was on the piece of paper.

“Earth,” the boy replied correctly.

“Xiao Jin is so smart, a perfect memory. Without long, Xiao Jin

will know everything,” Bi Lian giggled. Her gaze toward the boy was filled with affection.

At this moment, Bi Hai walked into the room in white robes. He pulled Xiao Jin away and chuckled, “Xiao Jin, you’ll have plenty of time to learn how to read in the future. Come with me first. I’ll teach you a new ability. The barrier you created is extremely powerful, but there are still many flaws. The barrier of Mercenary City made its energy sink into the ground, making the ground as tough as steel. Come with grandpa, I’ll teach you a new way to use the energy.”

The boy did not resist at all as he was lead away by Bi Hai. Only You Yue and Bi Lian voiced their displeasure.

“What do you know? There’s plenty of time to learn how to read in the future. The utmost priority is to make Flame City as tough as steel as well as to get Xiao Jin better acquainted with his abilities,” said Bi Hai righteously. He ignored the disagreement of the two girls as he lead Xiao Jin away.

But at this very moment, Xiao Jin seemed to sense something. He looked in the direction of the city gates before turning into a flash of golden light. He vanished in a single moment.

Chapter 1374: Reunion

“Xiao Jin, Xiao Jin come back! Where are you going!?” Bi Hai yelled. He was frightened and pursued Xiao Jin. He had already spent some time with Xiao Jin. Xiao Jin had always been extremely obedient during that period of time. The boy followed everything they told him to do, just like a good child. Bi Hai felt rather uneasy seeing how he acted out of the norm today.

Bi Hai was convinced of Xiao Jin’s strength after his initial doubt and after spending so much time together. Even though Xiao Jin’s strength was beyond a Saint Emperor’s strength and was extremely shocking and unbelievable, he had slowly begun to accept it after some time.

Bi Hai’s treatment of Xiao Jin immediately underwent a drastic change after understanding his strength. Xiao Jin possessed terrifying strength but still possessed the mind of a child. In fact, he knew nothing, just like a newly-born infant. As a result, Bi Hai decided to raise him like his own grandson, passing on all his battle experience and everything he knew to him. In the end, he got Xiao Jin to understand the many uses of energy and even how to use the mysteries of the world.

Bi Hai had taught him how to cast down the faint golden barrier around Flame City.

Bi Hai had become overjoyed for quite some time since Flame City had suddenly gained an expert who had surpassed Saint Emperor. However, he felt rather afraid and worried as well. He did not know the origins of Xiao Jin or whether he would suddenly leave the city at a certain point in time.

Bi Hai became extremely worried by Xiao Jin’s abnormal behaviour. He was afraid that the boy would leave and never return.

“Xiao Jin!”

“Xiao Jin!”

You Yue and Bi Lian’s cries rang out from behind. They also ran out of the hall quickly and worriedly looked for Xiao Jin. They immediately chased after him.

Jian Chen held Huang Luan’s hand as he strolled through the streets of Flame City. He was traveling by foot but in no way was he slow. He traversed close to a hundred meters with every single step. He was using Spatial Force.

Jian Chen would look at the golden barrier in the sky from time to time and would become rather stern. He constantly wondered just who possessed such terrifying strength and possessed some connection to Flame City.

“Is it Rui Jin and the others?” Jian Chen wondered. Only Rui Jin possessed energy of that color among all the experts he knew. However, the energy Rui Jin used also possessed a pure and dense dragon aura. That aura was not present in the barrier.

The streets of Flame City were bustling as people moved to and fro. Jian Chen and Huang Luan moved along the main street toward the city lord’s estate. No one noticed them along the way.

At this moment, a golden streak of light flew toward Jian Chen at an unbelievable speed before stopping in front of him.

Jian Chen came to a halt as he stared at the person who had suddenly obstructed him with interest. Chaotic Force surged within him, having made preparations for battle at any moment.

The person in front of him was a chubby boy in golden clothes. He was hairless and less than a meter tall. He stared at Jian Chen with his naive eyes. They flickered with interest and some confusion.

The boy felt an extremely close with Jian Chen. It was much heavier than the feeling he felt from Bi Lian, You Yue, and Bi Hai. It was as if he shared the same bloodline as him. The feeling also

engulfed him in warmth, which was extremely pleasant.

At that moment, the boy seemed to have found the most important thing in his life as he stood before Jian Chen. Without any contact or communication, he decided to treat Jian Chen as someone he could rely on.

Jian Chen was unable to remain as calm as Xiao Jin while the boy stood before him. He was extremely stern and some disbelief had even appeared in his eyes. He was only able to see the boy with his eyes, unable to discover him with his soul. If he swept the region before him with the senses of his soul, he would find nothing.

“The Origin realm!” Jian Chen was surprised inside. He was unable to see through the boy’s exact strength, but he knew that the boy would definitely be an expert of the Origin realm.

“All his clothes are golden, the same as the barrier around Flame City. Was this barrier cast down by this boy?” Jian Chen thought. He found it very unbelievable, but what he could not understand was where the boy had come from. Why had he appeared in Flame City?

Huang Luan had discovered Xiao Jin as well. Ever since she had entered the city, her focus had been devoted to the surrounding landscape. She had not discovered where Xiao Jin had come from since she had been admiring the prosperity of the city along the way. She did not know how powerful Xiao Jin was either. She arrived before him with smiles, bent down and touched his chubby cheeks. She asked, “Little brother, what’s your name? Where do you live? You can’t run around wildly on the streets all by yourself.”

Jian Chen was frightened by what Huang Luan had done. The boy was an Origin realm expert, so how could he be treated in such a manner? However, what took him by surprise was that the boy did not respond in a hostile manner. He only looked at Huang Luan with curiosity visible on his face and did not reject her. He allowed

Huang Luan to touch his cheek.

“I-I’m Xiao Jin,” the boy said with his immature voice. He seemed rather dumb.

Jian Chen pulled Huang Luan back and stared at Xiao Jin with an odd gaze. Was he really an Origin realm expert?

“Xiao Jin, don’t run away. Come quick to grandpa’s side,” a slightly worried voice rang out from the distance. Bi Hai shot over from the city lord’s estate and tightly grabbed Xiao Jin’s hand. He would not let go no matter what, afraid that the boy would suddenly run away.

“Great-grandfather!” Jian Chen exclaimed in surprise. He became even more confused when he saw how closely Bi Hai and the boy interacted.

Bi Hai had devoted all his attention to Xiao Jin, so he had not discovered Jian Chen before him. Bi Hai became stunned when Jian Chen called out, before raising his head to look at Jian Chen. He immediately became overjoyed, letting go of Xiao Jin’s hand immediately. He tightly grabbed Jian Chen by the shoulders and laughed aloud, “My good grandson, you’ve finally returned.”

“Great-grandfather, this...” Jian Chen asked in doubt as he pointed at Xiao Jin.

Bi Hai’s mood became elated with Jian Chen’s return. He chuckled aloud and said, “Grandson, let’s return to the city lord’s estate. I’ll explain everything in detail there.”

In the estate, You Yue, Bi Lian, Bi Hai, Jian Chen, Huang Luan, and Dugu Feng gathered together to celebrate their return. The dining table was filled with various delicacies, but none of them were interested in eating. They all wanted to confirm if the various rumors floating around the continent about Jian Chen were true.

“Yes, it was me who heavily injured the two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent. My cultivation level may still not be

there, but if we really do end up fighting, there's probably no Saint Emperors who can be my opponent," Jian Chen spoke the truth and hid nothing. Announcing his strength to his close friends and family would only bring benefits. It would also set their hearts at ease, no longer needing to worry about his safety all day long.

They were all euphoric when they gained Jian Chen's confirmation. The rumors had appeared long ago, but they were still rumors and would not be true sometimes. They could only believe them once they received personal confirmation from Jian Chen.

At this moment, Xiao Jin ran in from outside. He climbed onto a seat and began to wolf down the delicacies on the table all by himself, but he would always glance at Jian Chen from time to time with his large eyes.

Jian Chen asked everyone about Xiao Jin's identity, but no one present could answer that question unfortunately. It was a complete mystery to them.

At this moment, You Yue said after some hesitation, "Jian Chen, my master said that he's a spirit nurtured by the world. He was born from the tungsten alloy mine."

"What? Xiao Jin's a spirit born from the tungsten alloy mine?" Bi Hai was in disbelief.

"Sister You Yue, why didn't you tell us sooner since you already knew? Oh, was it all caused by Xiao Jin when the mine was struck by the lightning?" Bi Lian said with some displeasure.

Chapter 1375: Everyone Becomes a Saint King (One)

You Yue smiled apologetically, “Sister Bi Lian, grandfather, please forgive me for keeping this a secret, because this matter is just far too shocking. Even when I personally learned this from my master, I felt like it was all just a tale. It was difficult for me to accept, which was why I didn’t tell you all as soon as I learned of Xiao Jin’s identity.”

Jian Chen could not help but think of the metallic spirit origin energy hidden in the depths of the tungsten alloy mine with You Yue’s explanation. The sword spirits had discovered its existence long ago, but it had not matured back then, so he left it hidden deep within the tough tungsten alloy. Even the grand elder of Mercenary City back then, Tian Jian, was unable to penetrate that deep, so he could only leave it be in the end.

He had never thought that the metallic spirit would have fully matured before he returned to the city and would have been able to endure the heavenly tribulations to take on a human form. It was extremely powerful.

Jian Chen’s gaze toward Xiao Jin became rather odd after learning Xiao Jin’s identity. He could obviously tell that Xiao Jin’s naivety was like a newly-born infant. He was a harmless-looking boy but an Origin realm expert at the same time, which Jian Chen found rather difficult to accept.

He had learned from the sword spirits just how impressive the metallic spirit was and its unlimited future potential. However, he was just taken by disbelief to think that it would be an Origin realm expert as soon as it came into existence.

After all, there were only five experts of the Origin realm even in ancient times. Ignoring the one from the Ice Goddess Hall, there were the four champions of the humans, magical beasts, Sea race,

and Hundred Races. This was more than enough to see just how rare they were.

Even right now, there were only two Origin realm experts on the Tian Yuan Continent at most.

However, what made Jian Chen even more confused was why Xiao Jin would appear in Flame City after assuming a human form and why he felt that Xiao Jin's gaze toward him was filled with reliance. He did not shrug off Bi Lian and the others either, which he could not understand no matter how he thought about it.

"The Tian Yuan Continent is currently facing a disaster. The World of Forsaken Saints is about to invade our world. We're in desperate need of a powerful force in this crucial period of time. Xiao Jin's sudden appearance just holds far too great of a significance. However, he seems to be lacking knowledge in many areas. We need to teach him a lot over the next few days, especially techniques regarding battle," said Jian Chen.

The topic of conversation soon shifted away from Xiao Jin.

"Brother Ming Dong is currently cultivating in a secret room we've specially prepared for him in Flame City. He's already become a Saint Ruler, and we don't know what level he's reached now. However, brother Ming Dong's talent is much greater than grandfather's talent. His rate of cultivation has even made grandfather speechless."

Jian Chen expanded his soul and swept the surroundings. Indeed, he found Ming Dong in seclusion a thousand meters underground. He really did improve at an extremely great rate, having reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler already.

Jian Chen then looked toward the silent Dugu Feng at the table. Dugu Feng was among his earliest group of followers. He had met him with Ming Dong when they had competed in the gathering of mercenaries in Mercenary City.

Dugu Feng was not as powerful as Ming Dong back then in the competition, but the difference between the two had not been particularly great. Yet now, Ming Dong had already become an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler while Dugu Feng remained a Heaven Saint Master.”

“Dugu Feng’s not bad. He’s remained as the disciplinary elder of Flame City for a very long time, committing meritorious services for the Flame Mercenaries. He’s even pushed back his own cultivation. It would’ve been impossible for the mercenaries to be as stable as it is right now without Dugu Feng,” Bi Hai said from one side. The gaze he used on Dugu Feng was filled with kindness.

“Yeah, I don’t want Dugu Feng to busy himself because of the Flame Mercenaries and end up not cultivating at all. I’ve been trying to convince Dugu Feng to return back to the clan over the past few days, but he will return again soon,” Bi Lian added as well. Dugu Feng had indeed made drastic contributions to the expansion of the Flame Mercenaries.

“My talent is nowhere near as great as Ming Dong’s talent, so it’s impossible for me to catch up to him no matter how I cultivate. Since that’s the case, I did some things that were more meaningful,” Dugu Feng nonchalantly replied. He seemed to never smile with his steadfast face.

“Dugu Feng, you don’t need to worry about talent. I have my methods of completely altering your talent and allowing you to become a Saint King in the shortest amount of time possible, even insuring that you’ll become a Saint Emperor in the future,” Jian Chen solemnly said to Dugu Feng. He did not have many friends he truly trusted and Dugu Feng happened to be one of them.

Afterward, Jian Chen asked the others about Little Fatty and the others.

“Little Fatty, Senior An, Yun Zheng, and Wang Yifeng have not returned since they set off to train themselves on the continent.

We only receive some news from them from time to time, but it seems that they've been well over the past few years," said Bi Lian.

"Lian'er, command the Flame Mercenaries to search the continent for them and get them to return to Flame City as soon as possible," ordered Jian Chen. The disaster was imminent. He needed to use the resources on hand to increase their strength.

Three days later, Bi Lian, You Yue, Dugu Feng, Bi Hai, Huang Luan, and Ming Dong were all brought to the mountain range where the tungsten alloy mine used to be by Jian Chen. However, the vast mountain range had become ordinary. It was no longer as famous as before. Ever since the metallic spirit had absorbed all the metallic essence, the tough tungsten alloy had all been reduced to simple rock.

"Jian Chen, why have you brought us here?" Ming Dong asked in confusion as he looked around. He had just emerged from seclusion.

"This place is open enough. It's a good place. I plan on making you all break through here," said Jian Chen.

"Get us all to break through? Jian Chen, have you obtained some extremely impressive heavenly resources?" Ming Dong's eyes lit up and his interest was immediately piqued.

Jian Chen nodded slightly, "Yes, I've indeed obtained some heavenly resources. They are enough to make your strength skyrocket. Ming Dong, you're already an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler and your talent is impressive. It's possible for you to break through to Saint King with this opportunity or directly become a Saint Emperor."

"What!" Ming Dong was greatly shocked. He stared at Jian Chen in disbelief. Even You Yue, Huan Luan, Bi Hai, and the others were the same.

Jian Chen no longer wasted any time. He first used the blood of

the hall master from the Serpent God Hall to strengthen their bodies before using the holy water of the spirit sea to alter their constitution and talent. In the end, he removed some Heaven-connecting Flowers, enough Violent Cloud Peaches, and a few Comprehension Tea Leaves from the artifact space to increase their strength.

Jian Chen did not behave stingily at all. The immortal peaches could only be consumed once in a hundred years, so in order to maximize their increases in strength, he could no longer bother with wasting anything. He brought out fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches and Comprehension Tea Leaves and used the best spring water he had on hand to make tea.

Chapter 1376: Everyone Becomes a Saint King (Two)

Ming Dong, Bi Hai, and Huang Luan were all Saint Rulers and on the higher end of the spectrum of cultivation. As a result, they refined the blood and holy water faster than everyone else, rousing the soonest.

Without long, You Yue refined the blood and holy water since she had only recently reached Saint Ruler. Their bodies had strengthened greatly under the refinement of the hall master's blood, and even their talent and souls had undergone a metamorphosis from the holy water of the spirit sea

“Jian Chen, what is this blood? It actually contains such powerful energy. With my current strength, just refining a fist-sized amount of it would give me enough trouble,” Ming Dong said in surprise. He then looked at the Heaven-connecting Flowers in the surroundings and the recently-made Comprehension Tea that gave off a thick fragrance. He felt deeply shocked when he saw the treasures Jian Chen was able to pull out.

“I really do wonder what dangerous place Jian Chen has gone to to obtain so many impressive heavenly resources over the years I spent in seclusion,” Ming Dong thought to himself. He did not recognize the flowers or the tea, but he could determine they were extraordinary just from their fragrance.

“This is the blood of a Saint Emperor. I heavily-injured a Saint Emperor recently in the sea realm and managed to collect some of his blood during the process. The Saint Emperor's original form is a serpent dragon from the depths of the ocean. His blood is very useful to you,” explained Jian Chen before delivering a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach and a cup of tea to the three of them. He said, “This is a Violet Cloud Peach. It can increase your cultivation by two thousand five hundred years while this Comprehension Tea

can assist you while you comprehend the mysteries of the world. Consume them together.”

Ming Dong was shocked when he heard about the Saint Emperor’s blood, but when he heard about the almost heaven-defying effects of the peach and tea, he immediately became stupefied.

Even Bi Hai, Huang Luan, and You Yue felt the same way. They had never even seen or heard of something so wondrous. A single peach could increase their cultivation by two and a half millennia while a cup of tea could increase their comprehension of the mysteries of the world.

Ming Dong, Bi Hai, Huang Luan, and You Yue drank the tea with the peach just as Jian Chen had told them to in a rather numb fashion. The peach transformed into tremendous, surging energy that gushed through their bodies as soon as it reached their stomachs, causing them to devote all they had into refining the energy.

Jian Chen looked at Bi Lian and Dugu Feng. Bi Lian was still an Earth Saint Master while Dugu Feng was a Heaven Saint Master. They took far longer than the four others. Even after reducing the amount of blood he had given them, they still found it extremely difficult to refine.

The two of them were very stern and would appear in pain from time to time. Their bodies gently quivered as if they were enduring intense pain.

Jian Chen observed the two of them carefully. He had already made preparations to send them into the artifact space, if the situation took a turn for the worse, in order to prevent any accidents happening to them as they refined the Saint Emperor’s blood.

Dugu Feng finally roused an hour later. He had benefited a ton after refining the blood of a Saint Emperor. Ignoring the fact that

his body had toughened up, even his cultivation had risen to the Fourth Cycle from the Second.

Jian Chen did not give Dugu Feng any time to rest. He immediately made him consume the peach and tea, so that his strength could increase one final time.

Two hours later, Bi Lian finally roused as well. Her face was rather pale and exhausted. She was the weakest among all of them, only an Earth Saint Master, so it was extremely difficult for her to refine the blood. However, the effects were evident. She had reached the peak of the Sixth Cycle from the Third.

Fortunately the violent factors in the blood had mostly been removed, or she would not have been able to refine the blood at all. Just a drop of it might have even been enough to kill her.

The blood of a few powerful immortals could kill Saint Emperors, so the blood of Saint Emperors could also easily kill Earth Saint Masters.

Soon after Bi Lian finished refining the blood, she consumed the peach and tea as well. She entered a higher stage of cultivation.

Although the fifth grade immortal peaches possessed a tremendous amount of energy that did not match up to its size, absorbing it all could not be achieved by any one person. It would depend on the person's strength and talent.

Jian Chen practiced the Chaotic Body, so he had a tremendous demand for energy. He also refined energy at a rate far greater than ordinary people, which was why he was able to absorb an entire fifth grade immortal peach.

However, that was not the case for the group of people here. Even Ming Dong and You Yue who possessed extraordinary talent could only absorb parts of the energy. At that moment, white mist formed from pure energy drifted out of them and dispersed into the surroundings.

The mist was extremely thick, such that it shrouded them. From afar, they seemed to be wrapped in a large, white cocoon.

Jian Chen was helpless to deal with this situation. All he could do was watch because he was not powerful enough to seal in the tremendous energy right now.

He had learned from the sword spirits that an immortal was needed to seal in the energy from the peaches.

As the energy dispersed into the surroundings, the energy of the world in the mountain range quickly became very dense. It constantly increased.

Jian Chen sat on a nearby mountain as he used his soul to watch over them as he comprehended the sword. He had not understood all the sword techniques he had learned from the sword spirits.

Several days later, three tremendous presences suddenly appeared. Ming Dong, Huang Luan, and Bi Hai all broke through to Saint King, drawing in rainbow clouds, which covered a radius of several hundred thousand kilometers.

The rainbow colors from the clouds were bright and resplendent as three layers of them stacked on top of one another. They illuminated the world and dyed the entire region a shade of rainbow colors.

Jian Chen stood up on the mountain and waved his hand. Suddenly, a gentle force surged over and enveloped Dugu Feng and Bi Lian. He took them elsewhere, preventing any disturbances caused by Ming Dong, Bi Hai, and Huang Luan's breakthroughs.

The rainbow clouds in the sky had caused a very large commotion on the continent. The birth of Saint Kings was extremely significant to the various organizations across the continent. Particularly in an age that lacked Saint Emperors, Saint Kings were even more valuable than they were before.

"Another person's become a Saint King. Fantastic, we just

happen to be in need of Saint Kings.” All the Saint Kings in Mercenary City glanced in the direction of Flame City.

“No, there seems to be three layers of rainbow clouds stacked upon one another. Are there three people becoming Saint Kings at the same time?” Cangqiong was the first one to discover the abnormality of the clouds. He was surprised.

“You’re right. There really are three layers of clouds stacked together. We may not be able to see them from so far away, but I can clearly sense three,” said a Saint King at Great Perfection. Surprise filled his face since three people simultaneously becoming Saint Kings was very rare.

“It seems to be in the direction of Flame City. Have Saint Rulers of the Flame Mercenaries broken through?”

“That may not be the case. There’s some hermit and ancient clans in that direction as well. It might be them.”

Quite a few Saint Kings discussed the matter in Mercenary City. It was quite a significant matter for three Saint Kings to appear together on the Tian Yuan Continent. No one was certain who they were.

However, it was only a casual discussion. This matter was not enough to draw them over to see what was going on. Only the breakthrough of Saint Emperors would attract them.

Ming Dong, Bi Hai, and Huang Luan used the Violet Cloud Peaches and Comprehension Tea to become Saint Kings. The presences from them were as vast as an ocean. They were enough to kick up large gales that swept through the surroundings, where even the clouds in the sky were affected. The rainbow clouds churned as a result.

The three of them had not roused from their cultivation yet. The effects of the immortal peaches and tea were still present, allowing their strength to skyrocket, as if there was no end to it.

Chapter 1377: Breakthroughs Complete

At this moment, another tremendous presence erupted as well. Four presences appeared at the same time, causing the energy in the surroundings to become chaotic. The wind in the surroundings became even more violent as well.

You Yue had also broken through to Saint King, drawing in more rainbow clouds. There were now four layers of clouds in the sky.

With the four layers combined, the clouds spanned across an unprecedented area. They almost enveloped the area a million kilometers away. Even in Mercenary City, the distant horizon glowed with rainbow light.

The Saint Kings who had gathered in Mercenary City all looked in the direction of Flame City. They were all astounded.

It was already an overwhelming matter for three people to simultaneously become Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent. It was extremely rare even in the prosperous ancient times. There were four people becoming Saint Kings now and they were all located in the same region. They had no choice but to feel astounded.

“Good, good. Fantastic, another person’s become a Saint King. Our continent’s power has increased slightly again. The young really are going to be surpassing the old,” a Saint King at Great Perfection praised.

“Has the breakthrough to Saint King become easier than before?” Many people connected the four simultaneous breakthroughs to this question.

Back in the mountain range near Flame City, You Yue was clearly different from everyone else when she broke through. White, clear, and gentle light flickered on her body, as if she was a moon in the night.

Endless amounts of white light gathered behind her and condensed into a huge round moon in the end. It was extremely bright and gave off a gentle glow. It illuminated the surroundings, adding a unique color to the rainbow world that the clouds created.

Jian Chen stared at You Yue from afar. He knew that You Yue's cultivation method was extremely extraordinary, far more powerful than Saint Tier cultivation methods or cultivation methods of Saint Emperors. This was why a phenomenon like this had occurred as soon as she broke through to Saint King.

Afterward, Dugu Feng and Bi Lian broke through as well, reaching Saint Ruler. The energy from the Violet Cloud Peaches still remained, continuing to carry their strength through the cultivation levels like a hot knife through butter.

In the sky, two layers of five-colored rainbow clouds silently formed, enveloping an area of a hundred kilometers. However, since four layers of seven-colored rainbow clouds already occupied the sky, the two layers were ignored. Many people even missed them all together.

A few figures appeared one after another in the surroundings. Not only did the event attract the Saint Rulers of a few hermit and ancient clans, even quite a few Heaven Saint Masters had come.

"This is unbelievable. The four who have broken through to Saint King are actually all in the depths of this mountain range. I never thought that there would be four powerful experts hidden here," a Saint Ruler from a hermit clan softly said. He found this news difficult to believe.

"Shh, don't make too much of a disturbance. We don't want to disturb the four seniors who are breaking through. Let's go see what the four seniors are like."

The Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters began to carefully advance toward the depths of the mountain range. They wanted to

see the four Saint Kings personally.

In the end, the group of them stopped ten kilometers away. They could see the Saint Kings from very far away.

“One, two, three, four, five, six. There’s actually six people cultivating there, but they’re all enshrouded by a white mist. We can’t see what they look like, and there’s someone else nearby guarding them. Hmm? That person sure is weird. He actually carries two swords on his back.”

“That’s not mist. It’s formed from extremely pure energy of the world. My god, have I seen wrong? Such pure energy of the world is actually drifting from their bodies. No wonder I felt that the energy in this mountain range was countless times richer than elsewhere...”

“That doesn’t seem to be energy of the world. It’s countless times denser and purer than the energy of the world we know. Who are they?”

The Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters all discussed among themselves and all felt shocked. All of them spoke very gently or used communication techniques to communicate. They were afraid of disturbing the people there.

“Everyone, I am the captain of the Flame Mercenaries, Jian Chen. My friends are cultivating here, so please do not approach them and disturb them. Otherwise, I can only cause you offense,” Jian Chen said to all of them through a communication technique.

“What! The captain of the Flame Mercenaries!? I’ve actually just heard from the captain of the Flame Mercenaries.”

“It’s that person with two swords on his back. I never thought he’d actually be the great Saint Emperor Jian Chen. Those people are actually being guarded personally by Saint Emperor Jian Chen...”

“Everyone back off, we can’t get too close...”

“I’ve actually witnessed Saint Emperor Jian Chen with my own bare eyes. Am I dreaming...”

Jian Chen stated his own identity and immediately surprised the people in the surroundings. If they did not become excited for some reason, they became filled with dread. Their gazes toward Jian Chen were either filled with fear or abnormal excitement.

Jian Chen’s name had resonated throughout the continent long ago. Not only was this because he was the fourth Saint Emperor on the continent, but he was also an extremely powerful one as well, having defeated two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent in a single stroke.

Jian Chen had become a legend across the continent now. He was as well-known as Mo Tianyun from the ancient times, or possibly even more famous, because he had cultivated for less than a century.

Even in ancient times, there had never been anyone who had become a Saint Emperor without even reaching a hundred years in age.

The people who had been drawn over by the activity became extremely obedient after learning Jian Chen’s identity. They all retreated to several dozen kilometers away by themselves. They watched on from afar and even watched their own breathing. They were afraid of disturbing the people in cultivation by breathing too loudly.

As time went on, more and more people appeared. No Saint Kings had been drawn over, but there were quite a few Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Master. However, none of the people who had come later on dared to get any closer after being seriously warned by the people who had gathered earlier. They had taken up a role of protecting the people in cultivation by themselves.

There were people of the Flame Mercenaries among them. They were filled with pride when they heard that their own captain was

there.

The group of people's break through took around a dozen of days to complete. Their strength had undergone an overwhelming change with the increase this time, with Ming Dong in particular. He was the strongest, having reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint King, followed by Huang Luan and You Yue at the Seventh Heavenly Layer. Bi Hai on the other hand fell behind. As the person who had reached Saint Rulers many years ago, he was now at the Sixth Heavenly Layer of Saint King.

Dugu Feng had become a Saint King along with the four of them. He reached the Fourth Heavenly Layer from a Heaven Saint Master in the beginning. Only Bi Lian was the weakest, but even with that being the case, she had reached the peak of the Ninth Heavenly Layer as a Saint Ruler. She was quite close to becoming a Saint King.

They were all filled with joy when they roused from cultivation, Ming Dong in particular. He had reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint King in a single stroke from Saint Ruler, making him the strongest among all of them.

"This Comprehension Tea is just far too wondrous. It can help me comprehend the mysteries of the world so easily. It makes it hundreds of times easier than comprehending the mysteries beneath Mercenary City," Ming Dong excitedly exclaimed.

Jian Chen also faintly smiled. He was happy for their drastic increase in strength.

A fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach was enough for a mortal to become an immortal in a hundred days and surpass Saint Emperor. This was why the immortal peach was a priceless heavenly resource even in the Immortals' World. It was extremely valuable. However, they were unable to absorb all the energy from the immortal peaches due to their restrictions in strength and talent. A lot of it was wasted, which was why a single peach was only able to

make them become Saint Kings.

A few people gathered in the surroundings finally became bold enough to approach them. They congratulated them sincerely, but when they discovered that the people who had broken through were part of the upper echelon of the Flame Mercenaries, their mouths hung agape once again.

They were stunned by Bi Lian in particular. She had only been an Earth Saint Master before, and within just a dozen days, she had become a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. She was even more powerful than them, so the people who had come over with congratulations all became flabbergasted. They struggled to accept the reality of the matter.

At that moment, they even thought that their cultivation of thousands of years had been a complete waste.

Chapter 1378: Attack (One)

After returning to Flame City, the upper echelon's break through to Saint Ruler and Saint King spread through the city like wildfire. It threw the people in the city into great shock, the people of the Flame Mercenaries affected in particular. They all put down their matters at hand and gathered in groups as they celebrated. They cheered for the increase in the mercenaries' strength.

The Flame Mercenaries had once been a powerful organization that even the ten protector clans feared, but it was all due to their captain, Jian Chen, and the three magical beasts. The Flame Mercenaries only possessed a few Saint Rulers aside from them.

It was different now. Huang Luan, You Yue, Bi Hai, Ming Dong, and Dugu Feng had all become Saint Kings, and even Bi Lian had reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler. They had no need to fear the protector clans anymore with such a powerful combination. Perhaps they could not match up to the protector clans in terms of heritage, but they could match up in strength at the very least.

The strength of the mercenaries made all its members extremely excited and emotional.

All the people entered seclusion again right after their strength had increased. They had grown just far too quickly within the past few days, so they needed to practice their new abilities, or they would not be able to display their power in battle at all.

A few days later, a series of cries rang out from a large bird in the distant sky. The bird was five meters wide. It had collided with the golden barrier outside, producing a miserable cry as it fell out of the sky.

On the back of the bird sat four people. Due to the momentum, they all struck the golden barrier as well. They became dizzy and fell off the bird.

However, two of them were Heaven Saint Masters and could fly. They controlled themselves very quickly before moving through the air, saving one of their Earth Saint Master companions each.

In the end, the four of them landed safely on the ground despite the shock. They rubbed their heads as they stared at the barrier around Flame City in doubt.

A huge bird beside them flapped its wings as it stood up with difficulty. Its head had become bloodied and its neck had been broken.

“Where did this barrier come from? Why can’t we pass through it? Have we been kicked out of the group after leaving back then?” A young man in his twenties stared at the barrier like a victim as he complained in displeasure.

“The Flame Mercenaries are becoming more and more established. With this powerful barrier, people are unable to enter the city by air. The only way in is through the gates,” said a middle-aged man. His face was resolute while his eyes were fixated on the city walls.

At this moment, a group of guards on similar magical beast mounts rushed out of the city with lightning-like speed. They charged toward the four of them and surrounded them.

“Who are you? Don’t you know that it’s forbidden to fly in Flame City? State your identities and intentions,” the middle-aged leader coldly commanded. He was a Heaven Saint Master and wore armor forged from tungsten alloy. He seemed to possess quite an impressive demeanour.

Now that the Flame Mercenaries had powered up, even the guards had an air of complacency around them because of the glory.

“Who’s in charge of the Flame Mercenaries right now? Is it Jian Chen or sister Bi Lian? Why don’t you hurry up and report to them

that the four of us have returned,” the one, who seemed the youngest among, them slowly replied, like an old man. He did not treat the Heaven Saint Master’s words with any importance at all.

The Heaven Saint Master’s face sank and his eyes narrowed in a single moment. Their captain was now a legendary Saint Emperor on the continent. His status was so great that even great Saint Kings needed to treat him courteously when meeting him. It was an unforgivable crime for the group of insignificant Earth Saint Masters and Heaven Saint Masters to directly refer to their captain by his name.

Just when the leader of the guards wanted send out the order to capture the four of them, his gaze suddenly froze. His eyes became fixated on the young man who had called Jian Chen by his name, before his face abruptly took on a new expression. He then quickly glanced over the three others and became surprised. He asked, “Are you Xiu Tianyu, Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, and Senior An, the four people Jian Chen is looking for?”

“I never thought that there would still be people who remember us after being gone for so long. Yes, I am Xiu Tianyu. Oh right, who cast down the barrier around Flame City? Why didn’t they even tell us? It hurt a lot,” the youngest-looking person present grumbled.

He was Little Fatty, Houston’s grandson. After these years of roaming the continent, he had become a handsome young man. His face was filled with the results of traveling through wind and rain. It was resolute and rather cold.

The Heaven Saint Master hurriedly dismounted and politely bowed to the four of them. He said, “I am Zhuo Fan. I didn’t know you were the four sirs before, so please forgive me if I have offended you. I don’t know what’s up with this barrier either. All I know is that it suddenly appeared recently.”

“Whatever. Let’s go into the city and find Jian Chen. We have

been hearing rumors that he has become a Saint Emperor recently and defeated two Class 9 Magical Beasts from the Beast God Continent. I know these rumors are probably exaggerated, but it still should be something seeing how the entire continent knows about them,” Xiu Tianyu nonchalantly said. Afterward, he called out to Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, and Senior An to enter the city.

“You’ve finally returning. Looking for you really wasn’t easy,” at this moment, clear laughter rang out. Jian Chen stood at the entrance of the city in white robes as he looked at the four of them.

“Jian Chen!” Xiu Tianyu cried out. He immediately rushed over and hugged Jian Chen. The two of them laughed from the bottom of their hearts. They had not seen each other for many years, so they were extraordinarily excited to see one another again.

“Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, Senior An, let’s enter the city first. I’ve already gotten people to prepare a banquet, to receive you after so much traveling.” Jian Chen laughed as he directed them to the city lord’s estate.

Behind, the guard, who was a Heaven Saint Master, stared at the four of them in envy. They were only Heaven Saint Masters or Earth Saint Masters, yet they had been personally received by their great captain. Probably even Saint Kings could not have enjoyed such treatment.

At the banquet, Jian Chen drank and talked with the four of them. They slowly told him about the things they had experienced over the years, and Jian Chen had also confirmed the rumors they had heard from various parts of the continent. They all became stunned when they learned that Jian Chen now possessed the strength to overwhelm Saint Emperors.

The morning of the next day, Jian Chen brought the four of them back to the mountains where the tungsten alloy mine used to be. He also let out the several dozen elites from the artifact space, planning on increasing all their strength in a single stroke.

At this moment, a terrifying pulse of energy appeared from far away. It caused the earth to violently shake.

Chapter 1379: Attack (Two)

The mountain range violently rumbled as great thick cracks began to cover the entire region. Whole mountains began to collapse as rocks rolled down, creating heavy booms.

The area that was shaking was extremely vast. The entire continent was affected. Even if someone was several million kilometers away, they could still sense the trembling ground.

Jian Chen arrived on the highest mountain in a flash. He stood straight as he gazed into the distance. He looked in the direction of Mercenary City.

Although it was impossible to see anything since Mercenary City was just too far away, he could still clearly sense just how powerful the pulse of energy was.

Jian Chen became stern. However, his eyes began to shine as well. Not only did they become extremely sharp like drawn swords, they were filled with powerful battle intent as well.

“Jian Chen, what’s happened?” The others arrived beside Jian Chen and stared off into the horizon.

The energy pulse from the distance was so powerful that even Xiu Tianyu and Wang Yifeng could sense it, even though they were just Heaven Saint Masters.

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and said gruffly, “Little Fatty, gather all the people here. We’re returning to Flame City immediately.

“Alright!” Xiu Tianyu firmly responded. He did not ask why as he immediately gathered the several dozen people.

Jian Chen could not help but dismiss the thought of increasing their strength today. He returned to Flame City with Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, Senior An, and the several dozen elites from the artifact space. He immediately gave the command of

closing off the city, stopping all entries and exits. Afterward, he left them behind and left the city through the space gate there with Xiao Jin.

You Yue, Bi Lian, Huang Luan, Bi Hai, and the others all emerged from seclusion soon after Jian Chen had left. They all stood in the city lord's estate as they cast their gazes into the distance.

“What's happened? Why has brother left so hurriedly? And why has he brought Xiao Jin with him,” Bi Lian asked rather uneasily. She had a vague idea why.

Bi Hai, Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, and the others became stern. Bi Hai solemnly said, “If I've guessed currently, the people of the World of Forsaken Saints have come. The calamity is beginning.”

“Since the calamity is here, what're we standing around for. Let's all go to Mercenary City to help. Come, let's immediately open a Space Gate to Mercenary City,” Ming Dong cried out as he was brimming with interest to fight.

However, he received a guard's report that the Space Gate could no longer be activated.

“Since we can't activate the Space Gate, then I'll use my abilities as a Saint King to make one,” Ming Dong smiled confidently and immediately began to rip open space.

However, his smile soon froze because he discovered that he was unable to rip through the space there as an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, making Space Gates impossible to form.

“What is happening!?” Ming Dong's face twitched a few times unnaturally.

Bi Hai looked at the golden barrier in the sky and emotionally sighed, “Xiao Jin's barrier is becoming more and more complete. Looks like my dear grandson has taught Xiao Jin quite a few things over the past few days. Unless you possess strength greater than the person who set down the barrier, you're unable to rip open a

Space Gate.”

“Then I’ll fly out of here. With my increase of strength, I can reach Mercenary City without wasting much time at all,” Ming Dong pridefully said. He immediately took off, headed for the sky, but all he hit was the barrier. With a splat, he was stuck there with his legs and arms spread apart, before falling down in a horrendous manner.

“This barrier can actually stop us from leaving, and Space Gates don’t work either. What is Jian Chen’s intentions? He’s actually locked us in here,” Ming Dong said unhappily as he returned to Bi Hai’s side in a messy fashion.

“I heard that the World of Forsaken Saints has many experts. Just the number of Saint Emperors they have outnumber the Saint Kings of our continent by several times over. It’s extremely likely that the people taking part in the invasion this time are Saint Emperors. Jian Chen wants to protect us and not have us fall in battle, which is why he’s gotten Xiao Jin to trap us here. He doesn’t want us to take part,” You Yue gently said. Her eyes were filled with worry.

“Our strength is still not enough. We need to continue our secluded cultivation,” Dugu Feng nonchalantly added before returning to his secret room to continue his cultivation.

There was a ditch a thousand meters wide in the ruins of Mercenary City. The ditch was pitch-black and seemingly-bottomless. However, terrifying ripples of energy would surge into the sky and obliterate the clouds. The energy there caused the space there to violently distort.

The experts gathered in the surroundings all stood afar with stern expressions. The path lord of carnal desires and the three Saint Emperors the Beast God Continent were all present. They all maintained their guard and were ready for battle.

“Oh no, there’s coming over. They’re all Saint Emperors. So

many Saint Emperors,” Xiao Ling’s voice rang out from the empty air. She had materialized herself in that moment as well. Her young face was filled with fear as she stared at the depths of the ditch in unease.

When the experts heard that they were all Saint Emperors, they revealed extremely ugly expressions, causing the atmosphere there to become extremely heavy.

At this moment, a Space Gate ripped open several dozen kilometers away. Jian Chen emerged with a young boy, who was holding his hand, before quickly making his way over.

His appearance caused Lankyros and Kaiser to narrow their eyes. Their gazes became filled with fear while even the path lord of carnal desires’ gaze toward Jian Chen became filled with dread as well.

However, their gazes were focused on the two swords on Jian Chen’s back for the most part.

They were not the only ones who paid attention to Jian Chen’s swords. At that moment, everyone present had shifted their attention away from the ditch to Jian Chen’s swords.

Many of them had not personally witnessed the power of the swords, but they knew that Jian Chen had used just one of them to defeat the two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent with a single attack.

“Big brother, you’re finally here. The baddies from the World of Forsaken Saints are all coming. They have so many Saint Emperors, at least several hundred. What should we do?” Xiao Ling arrived beside Jian Chen as she asked him while clinging to his hand. She was almost in tears.

“What! Several hundred Saint Emperors!?” Xiao Ling’s words erupted in the minds of the Saint Kings like a bolt from the blue. They all paled.

They had thought that only around a dozen or several dozen Saint Emperors were coming. They had never thought that there would be several hundred.

Jian Chen gently rubbed Xiao Ling's head and said, "Don't be scared, Xiao Ling. Aren't I here? I'll accompany you in battle and kill enemies together. All you need to do is use the abilities from your master to attack the enemies as soon as they appear, right?"

Xiao Ling immediately calmed down quite a bit when she heard that Jian Chen would be fighting with her. She firmly nodded.

Chapter 1380: Attack (Three)

“Great-grandson, come here,” an ancient and amicable voice rang out. Changyang Zu Xiao smiled at Jian Chen. His gaze toward him was filled with approval and pride.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun’s gaze toward Jian Chen was filled with mixed emotions. The two of them had never thought that Jian Chen would be able to grow at such a shocking pace, where the Saint Emperors of both the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent treated him with so much fear.

Jian Chen held onto Xiao Jin’s hand as he arrived beside Changyang Zu Xiao. Xiao Ling followed behind him. He bowed as a junior and said, “I greet the great-grandfathers and grandmother.”

Both Changyang Zu Xiao and Changyang Zu Yunxiao were far greater than Jian Chen in terms of seniority. Even with the Changyang ancestor, over a dozen generation had passed since he had founded the Changyang clan. As a result, they were all Jian Chen’s great-grandmothers and grandfathers.

Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun all happily smiled. Even before a battle of life and death, they were still unable to hide the pride they felt inside.

The Saint Kings in the surroundings all became green with envy when they saw Jian Chen bow to the three of them. After all, Jian Chen was a true Saint Emperor in their eyes now. This was an overwhelming matter for Saint Kings to receive a bow from a Saint Emperor.

Many people immediately became riddled with jealousy when they discovered just how much the barrier spirit relied on Jian Chen.

However, they did not know Xiao Jin’s true identity. None of

them were able to see through his strength, or no one would have known how they would end up reacting if they found out that two Origin realm experts relied on Jian Chen so much.

The veiled Heavenly Enchantress looked at Jian Chen from afar from within a group of people. Her enchanting eyes would shift to Xiao Jin from time to time. She secretly clenched her teeth as her gaze toward him became extremely mixed. Even her hand around the Zither of the Demonic Cry tightened slightly.

“Great-grandson, leave the child in the divine hall. There will be extremely many Saint Emperors attacking from the World of Forsaken Saints this time. We won’t be able to look after him once we start fighting.” Changyang Zu Xiao looked at Xiao Jin before pulling out a divine hall in an attempt to protect him.

He guessed that Xiao Jin might have been Jian Chen’s child. He had no idea why Jian Chen would bring his child here, but with Jian Chen’s special status, it would be inconvenient to ask.

Jian Chen had no idea how to react with what Changyang Zu Xiao attempted to do. Just when he wanted to say something, a violent boom suddenly rang out from the ditch, together with a violent spatial stream.

After the spatial stream gushed out, tremendous presences radiated from the ditch. They quickly surged into the sky as a group of Saint Emperors from the World of Forsaken Saints charged into the sky. Their terrifying presences swept through the surroundings, causing space to collapse and the world to spin. Just their presences had forced countless Saint Kings back.

“Activate the formations,” called out the grand elder of Mercenary City. His voice was thunderous as it reverberated ten thousand kilometers away.

Countless formations appeared, not just on the ground but in the air as well. These formations were all the strongest formations cast down by the greatest formation masters on the Tian Yuan

Continent after pouring their hearts out. Within them hid the greatest trapping and killing formations from ancient clans as well.

As soon as the formations appeared, the surroundings became a mix of formations. Layers upon layers of them appeared and flickered with different colors. The pulses of energy easily ripped through space as darkness descended everywhere.

The Saint Emperors from the World of Forsaken Saints who had charged out first were trapped. These formations were all linked together, so their power stacked together. Even though they were cast down by Saint Kings, several linked formations were still enough to trap or even heavily injure a few Saint Emperors.

There were five hundred Saint Emperors in total who had come this time. Several dozen were trapped by the formations while a portion of the others immediately forcefully attacked when they saw that they had become trapped. They attacked the formations from outside to assist the people inside in breaking free.

The other Saint Emperors charged into the surroundings as they engaged in a battle against the four races.

“Use the Emperor Armaments!” A great elder from a protector clan yelled and immediately pooled his power with others to control the Emperor Armament to battle the foreign Saint Emperors.

The other protector clans all controlled their ancestral weapons to attack the opponents after seeing the situation.

They had originally placed their Emperor Armaments there so that the great elder Tian Jian could cast down an absolute killing formation at the entrance to the other world, but after he had left to refine the divine hall of Mercenary City, he had not emerged since. This was why they could only give up on the idea of the killing formation.

The grand elder of Mercenary City sighed. He also lead all the experts of Mercenary City into battle. The foreign world had invaded too quickly. They had not finished their preparations. The great elder was still refining the absolute divine hall while Houston, who had just become a Saint Emperor, was missing as well. The reinforcements from the sea realm had not gathered either. None of the three Saint Emperors of the Sea race were present.

Other than the Changyang clan and Tyrant's Blade School, the protector clans all wielded their Emperor Armaments against the Saint Emperors of the foreign world. As the Emperor Armaments of the two other protector clans had been taken away, the experts from the two clans could only use powerful secret techniques in battle.

A huge shield hung in the sky on the side of the Hundred Races. It was several hundred meters across as it blocked an entire region like a wall. It endured the attacks from over a dozen Saint Emperors.

This was the clan treasure of the dwarves from the ancient times, the Heaven's Guard. It had been created by the strongest dwarven king, who had poured his heart into it, making it extremely tough. Its glory had been exhibited in the war of the ancient times. However, the shield became dented in a short amount of time as it was rained on by the attacks of the foreign Saint Emperors. Cracks slowly spread across it.

The dwarven king who controlled the shield vomited blood from behind. Not only was there blood, there were pieces of organs as well.

The dwarven king was only a Saint King at Great Perfection. The attacks that the Heaven's Guard withstood were just far too violent. Some of the force was redirected onto the dwarven king. Even after being drastically weakened, it still was enough to heavily injure him. He was unable to last much longer.

“It’s a pity that I’m not a Saint Emperor. If I had the strength of a Saint Emperor, I would not be reduced to such a horrible shape from blocking the attacks of over a dozen Saint Emperors,” the dwarven king sorrowfully sighed. He felt despair as he stared at the several hundred Saint Emperors from the foreign world.

A huge tree grew among the Hundred Races. It shone with resplendent green light and was brimming with life. It was the Elven Godtree, also originating from ancient times. It had survived the test of time without falling apart.

The Elven Godtree was several thousand meters tall and, combined with its thick trunk, seemed like a pillar that held up the sky. It shone with endless green light, enveloping the entire battlefield. All injured people would rapidly recover as they bathed in the green light.

The hundreds and thousands of branches from the tree danced as a flurry in the sky. All the branches extended indefinitely, coiling around the nearest Saint Emperor. Countless branches stabbed into the Saint Emperor and endlessly began to drain away the Saint Emperor’s life.

Chapter 1381: A Battle of Two Worlds (One)

The Saint Emperor trapped by the Elven Godtree began a desperate struggle. Terrifying pulses of energy surged out of his body as he attempted to break free from the restrictions of the tree.

However, the Elven Godtree was an ancient existence. Its toughness was incomparable to ordinary tree branches. All its branches coiled around the foreign Saint Emperor, wrapping him up like a cocoon. No matter how much the Saint Emperor struggled, he was unable to break free.

The tremendous life force within him was drained away by the Elven Godtree. His presence rapidly weakened during the process and he struggled less and less. He was weakening.

On the other hand, the Elven Godtree began to shine even brighter with its green light. Its huge expanse of vegetation rapidly consolidated.

From a closer inspection, it was evident that the tree was not tangible but illusionary.

Behind, the lycanthropes entered their battle mode. They became half-human and half-wolf. Their heads remained human while their bodies became wolf-like. They were covered with thick, dense fur and worked together to fend off a Saint Emperor.

Though, they were still not the Saint Emperor's opponent. Soon, the lycanthrope Saint Kings all became heavily injured by the Saint Emperor and were dyed red with blood.

The berserkers, flame daemons, lamias were the same as the lycanthropes. They all attacked a single Saint Emperor with several Saint Kings or even a dozen Saint Kings, but the disparity between the two cultivation levels was extremely vast. They were still not their opponents even with their advantage in numbers.

They all became covered in wounds while the Saint Emperors were barely injured at all.

Toward the very back of the Hundred Races was a group of people completely covered by gray cloaks. There were not many of them, only a few hundred, and not all of them were Saint Kings. There were many Saint Rulers, Heaven Saint Masters, Earth Saint Masters, and even Great Saint Masters among them.

They currently all sat on the ground. They formed an odd formation while their hands were forming seals, and they were also chanting.

They were the shamans of the Hundred Races. They were not powerful, and there were less than a thousand of them in total. They were known for their curses.

“Heavenly Awakening!” Suddenly, all the shamans called out together. Their voices were hoarse, but they were filled with an irresistible charm. Their voices actually drowned out the sounds of battle.

An odd pulse radiated from all the shamans, before fusing together into a single ripple that shot toward a Saint Emperor.

The ripple seemed to be able to pass through space and time, striking the Saint Emperor who was fighting against the berserkers in a single moment.

The Saint Emperor suddenly froze and vomited blood as if he had been heavily injured. His body cracked like a vase and was dyed with blood in the blink of an eye.

At the same time, the ferocious attacks from several berserkers struck the Saint Emperor, causing his body to fall apart and disintegrate on the spot. Only his soul remained, filling him with fear.

However, before his soul could escape, it was cleaved into two by a berserker, killing him off completely.

There were two figures hidden in the empty space among the battlefield of the Hundred Races. They did not give off any presences or any traces of existence, where even Saint Emperors struggled to discover them. Even when space violently shook, it was not enough to force them out. They both wore long, silver robes. They possessed an elegant stature and were able to move about secretively. They could always attack from behind and catch their opponents off-guard, dealing a fatal blow.

They were the shadows of the Hundred Races. They possessed a glorious past in the ancient times, but they had declined now. There were only ten people in total who were apart of their race, and the two present here were the two strongest rulers. They were Saint Kings of the Fifth and Seventh Heavenly Layers.

The ground violently shook as several giant, hundred-meter-tall rockmen fought against the foreign Saint Emperors. Their bodies were extremely tough, but they were still unable to endure the attacks from the Saint Emperors. A large boulder would shatter when they were hit by an attack, or the attack would even pierce them.

The rockmen were extraordinary. They did not possess flesh or blood, and their vitality was just overwhelming. Their bodies rearranged themselves time after time. Even though it seemed like they had been beaten to a horrendous shape, their battle prowess did not decrease at all.

The Sea race was the most miserable. Only a portion of the Sea Goddess Hall had come, and they did not have a Saint Emperor leading them. They had to resist the attacks from the foreign Saint Emperors by themselves, so just after a few short moments, five Saint Kings had fallen. Only two of them managed to flee with their souls.

The three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent fought at the very front. They were extremely powerful and, coupled with their bodies as magical beasts, they were extraordinarily tough.

There was rarely anyone from the World of Forsaken Saint who could take them on in a one-on-one situation.

This did not mean that the Saint Emperors of the foreign world were weak but that the three Saint Emperors had already reached a higher level in cultivation as Saint Emperors. They were already stronger than quite a few of the invaders, which was why they could keep them at bay.

However, Kaiser, Lankyros, and Cangqiong all bathed in blood right now. They were rather injured as they had to stop several Saint Emperors each.

The battle was absolutely devastating. All the ground below had virtually been destroyed, forming countless, bottomless ditches. Gentle waves of heat radiated from below. They were already approaching the mantle of the land.

The entire Tian Yuan Continent violently shook. The ground in the center of the battlefield was close to disappearing completely. The pitch-black cracks in space constantly spanned out and did not close even after a very long time.

The Hundred Races, Sea race, and magical beasts were faced with extremely great pressure. Many of their experts had fallen. Only the humans had it easier.

Jian Chen and Xiao Ling lead the humans into the depths of the enemies. Xiao Jin had been sent to Changyang Zu Xiao and the others' side, by Jian Chen, to ensure their safety.

Xiao Ling's mind was not fully mature, but she struck out extremely decisively and without any hesitation or mercy. She was an Origin realm expert, so the Saint Emperors were no different from ants in her eyes. With a wave of her hand, she shot a wave of white light toward the foreign Saint Emperors. The white light possessed unfathomable power, and as soon as the Saint Emperors came in contact with it, they would vomit blood and become heavily injured. A few weaker people even died after touching it.

At that moment, the concept of ant-like Saint Emperors was truly displayed through the use of Xiao Ling's hands.

Jian Chen fought as hard as he could as well. He charged into the groups of enemies while wielding the Zi Ying Sword, using all the power he had to fight. He used his Chaotic Force to supplement his Way of the Sword, pushing his battle prowess to the limits. In just a short moment, he managed to kill over a dozen Saint Emperors while even more were injured by him.

The Qing Suo Sword did not sit on his back idly either. He controlled it with his soul. He had split his attention, using the Zi Ying Sword to kill his opponents while the Qing Suo Sword swept the skies.

There were many humans behind them who used Saint Tier Battle Skills. They drew in the pressure of the world as several of them would attack a single foreign Saint Emperor together.

The Heavenly Enchantress sat high in the air near the back of the human side. She placed the Zither of the Demonic Cry on her knees as she played it with all her focus. Each note seemed soft, but they were as loud as great big bells. They drowned out all the sounds of fighting, allowing everyone to clearly hear them.

The sound of the zither targeted specific opponents. Whenever the foreign Saint Emperors heard the sound, they would immediately feel their souls quiver. They would alternate between muddle-headedness and drowsiness from time to time. Illusions would would also be conjured before them.

A huge zither seemed to have condensed behind the Heavenly Enchantress. The thirty-six strings were clearly visible, and they were gently trembling. The resonated with the sounds fr the Zither of the Demonic Cry.

Chapter 1382: A Battle of Two Worlds (Two)

Suddenly, surging battle intent flared up in the eyes of several Saint Emperors as they struck their companions beside them in the swiftest fashion possible.

Spurt! Being caught off-guard, their companions became heavily injured from the unexpected attacks and shot backwards while vomiting blood.

Similar scenes happened across the entire battlefield. More than thirty Saint Emperors suddenly turned on their companions with their weapons. None of them had thought that their companions would turn on them, so they all became heavily injured due to being caught off-guard. An unlucky Saint Emperor had even been encircled by several of his companions. Lasting only for a few seconds, his body was obliterated, forcing him to flee with his soul.

However, the bell-like sound of a zither rang out right as the Saint Emperor's soul had made it away from the battlefield. It was thunderous to the soul's ears. The powerful sound wave caused the space there to fluctuate, reducing the Saint Emperors soul to just a few fragments.

The invaders began to panic due to that. In just a short moment, a few Saint Emperors had died to their companion's hands. They had all been attacked by several other people, dying bitterly.

“They’ve been affected by the zither and controlled by it. Find the person playing it and kill them,” a Saint Emperor thunderously cried out from the side of the invaders. His cry was so loud that the surroundings shook.

He was an extremely powerful Saint Emperor, almost having reached the peak of Saint Emperor. His shout immediately caused a few people, who had almost been swept away by the zither sounds, to sober up.

At this moment, a powerful sword Qi flew over from behind him. A terrifying killing intent immediately engulfed him, forcing him to shiver despite being such a powerful Saint Emperor. Without any thoughts, he immediately dodged to one side.

A sword engulfed by a layer of violet light passed through where he was standing before. The glow of the sword came in contact with his clothes and silently reduced them to dust.

A sliver of surprise immediately flashed through Jian Chen's eyes when he saw that the Saint Emperor had actually avoided his attack. However, he did not show any hesitation at all. With a twist of the wrist, the Zi Ying Sword stabbed out as a violet stream of light with a certain white glow. This was the sword Qi Jian Chen could use after comprehending the Way of the Sword.

This sword Qi was a condensation of laws. It had surpassed the boundaries of ordinary sword Qi and had combined with the Azure swords, allowing it to become even more powerful.

The Saint Emperor showed no fear. With a deep grunt, the energy within him surged out like a tsunami, forming a barrier around him. He swung the huge blade in his hand toward Jian Chen.

The blade shot out a gray beam of light. It was filled with a deathly presence, trapping Jian Chen in a cage.

Jian Chen immediately felt that he was being suppressed by a mysterious power as endless amounts of gray light infiltrated his body, rapidly gnawing away at his life force.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed as the Chaotic Force within him surged. He quickly wiped out the deathly presence within him. Ignoring the hazy prison he was in, he stabbed out with the Zi Ying Sword in an unstoppable manner.

Ding! With a metallic clash, the Zi Ying Sword surged out of the gray prison and struck the huge blade of the Saint Emperor. The

blade had been cleaved in half while the remaining part attached to the hilt quivered. It resonated as if it was crying.

The Saint Emperor stared at his broken blade in a daze as shock filled his face. The blade had been with him for several millennia. He had participated in countless battles where the blade had grown with him. Even if he faced against experts at the same level as him, his weapon would not even suffer a scratch. Yet, it was unable to stop Jian Chen's attack, having been cleaved into two like fragile tofu.

"Y-you're an Origin realm expert?!" The Saint Emperor was shocked. Probably only Origin realm experts could do something like this, but he did not sense the pressure of an Origin realm expert from Jian Chen at all.

Jian Chen remained emotionless with cold eyes. After cleaving through the blade, the Zi Ying Sword did not slow down at all, piercing the Saint Emperor's chest in the end. The powerful sword Qi hidden within immediately erupted. Not only did it instantly devastate his organs, a pure strand of sword Qi surged up into his head and wiped out his soul.

An azure sword quickly weaved about near Jian Chen as it attacked several dozen Saint Emperors. It was the Qing Suo Sword controlled by Jian Chen's soul.

The sword was not in Jian Chen's hands, so the power it could display was nowhere near as great as the Zi Ying Sword. However, it was still a sword with a spirit. The sword Qi that erupted from it could not be resisted by anyway, slaying several Saint Emperors in just a short moment and heavily injuring several dozen more. Many Saint Emperors had already begun to work together as they tried to deal with the Qing Suo Sword.

Xiao Jin played a part as well. He also possessed strength of the Origin realm, but he did not commit massacres like Jian Chen and Xiao Ling. He only waved his hand and trapped several Saint

Emperors with a golden barrier before standing there in a daze. He stared at the panicking Saint Emperors in interest. He would often only help out and repel the opponents when Changyang Zu Xiao and the others were in danger.

Xiao Jin rarely delivered attacks, but whenever he did, they would be shocking. He obliterated a Saint Emperor's body and soul with a single punch. The force and power of his punch had alerted all the human Saint Kings around him.

Most of the Saint Emperors from the World of Forsaken Saints were kept busy by Jian Chen and Xiao Ling. Only a small portion of them were able to attack the four races. The number of enemies that had fallen to Jian Chen and Xiao Ling's hands had reached a hundred now, but several hundred people of the four races had died as well. There were countless more who had been heavily injured.

During this time, the Elven Godtree continued to shine bright. The power it had displayed was shocking to the elves themselves. Although its accomplishments in battle were incomparable to Jian Chen or Xiao Ling, it had already killed almost ten foreign Saint Emperors. Without any exceptions, all of them had been wrapped up by the tree's branches before having their life sucked away. All that would be left was a bag of bones.

The tree's green light, which was filled with the presence of life, became even more blinding after absorbing the lives of the Saint Emperors. Its tremendous life force enveloped the entire battlefield and assisted the injured people.

The behavior of the Elven Godtree piqued the interest of the elves very much, despite their good understanding of it. The tree had existed for an extremely long time, having survived through the ages between now and the ancient times without withering at all. It had always remained very healthy. Except the abilities it display now were vastly different from the records contained in the ancient times.

This was because the main trunk of the tree was unable to leave the territory of the elves. They had not brought the main trunk this time, only a branch of the tree.

Chapter 1383: Tie Ta Becomes a Saint Emperor

A divine hall stood like an ice sculpture on the arctic tundra in the north. The divine hall was snow-white throughout and seemed to have fused with the surroundings. It gave off a magnificent sense of prestige.

Protector Shui currently stood at the very top of the divine hall in her silver-white armor without moving at all. Her face was covered by a helmet, only revealing a pair of icy-cold eyes that were currently fixated in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent.

Her gaze seemed to be able to pierce space and observe everything happening in Mercenary City despite the tremendous distance.

“Jian Chen’s already achieved some accomplishments now. I never thought that he would comprehend the Way of the Sword so soon. There’s no Saint Emperor now that is his opponent. Only Origin realm experts can keep him at bay.

“However, that person in the World of Forsaken Saints is even more powerful. He’s comprehended the Way of the Sword as well, and his comprehension is even greater than Jian Chen. Jian Chen may be growing faster than him, but he will soon come to the Tian Yuan Continent. With his strength, which is equivalent to Godhood, Jian Chen will not be his opponent. He will be doomed.

“Her majesty still really cares about her brother, but Jian Chen is the successor of the Sword Sect of Violet Heavens. The two of them will end up on opposing sides sooner or later. I have agreed with Mo Tianyun to not interfere with her majesty and Jian Chen’s matters, but it’s got nothing to do with me if Jian Chen ends up slain by that person from the World of Forsaken Saints...

“However, Jian Chen’s growth is extremely impressive. If he

does not die, he will be able to catch up to him quickly, and with his connection to her majesty, Jian Chen might be of help once we return to the Saints' World..."

Protector Shui mumbled to herself as the light in her eyes flickered uneasily.

Within the artifact space, Tie Ta and Nubis continued to cultivate like before. Jian Chen had basically stored all the heavenly resources he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm in there, so the two of them could utilize them as they wished.

Not only had Nubis ingested a large quantity of divine water of the world to change his constitution, he did not miss any heavenly resource Jian Chen had left in the artifact space. He had consumed a few, allowing his strength to constantly increase. He had even made a kettle of Comprehension Tea using the best spring water available and consumed a fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach, elevating his strength to the Great Perfection of Saint King. He had yet to fully absorb the vast energy in the immortal peach, so he was currently inching toward Saint Emperor.

Tie Ta's strength had undergone a great increase as well. He currently let out a golden light as he sat there like a giant. He channeled the essence of the world, which shone with various colors. The presence he gave off was as great as a mountain, enough to even make Saint Kings feel like they were suffocating.

Tie Ta walked a different path of cultivation that could not be measured using the standards of the Tian Yuan Continent. It was a system of its own, where he would undergo a metamorphosis each time he reached a corresponding realm and receive an inheritance from the world.

Suddenly, a heavy, dull sound rang out from Tie Ta's body. Immediately, an extremely powerful energy erupted, causing the surrounding space to violently tremble and almost collapse. The

hall that Tie Ta had chosen to cultivate in turned to dust from the waves of energy.

The entire space was affected. The world there trembled gently as huge, deep cracks spread out with Tie Ta at the epicenter.

The energy that had erupted from Tie Ta did not disperse and instead spread out as a pulse, causing mountains to collapse, the ground to crack, and space to become unstable wherever it passed by. The energy was just about to reach the two halls where Nubis and the white tiger stayed.

At this moment, the artifact spirit silently appeared. With a wave of his hand, he moved the halls around before immediately channeling the power of the artifact space to stop the expansion of the energy.

In the end, the artifact spirit managed to stop the ripples after a lot of work, preventing them from traveling any further.

However, another heavy, dull sound rang from Tie Ta's body like a drum. With the sound, another storm of great energy exploded out of Tie Ta, quickly spreading out with him as the center.

This time, the artifact spirit was prepared. It immediately used the power of the artifact to stop the ripples in their tracks.

A third and fourth sound rang from Tie Ta's body close after the second. The outcome was exactly the same each time. With every sound, a powerful wave of energy would form.

Tie Ta's strength had arrived at a bottleneck and he was currently making a breakthrough into a higher realm. However, since his cultivation method was extremely extraordinary and originated from the world, the breakthrough caused a very great disturbance that was much different than an ordinary person's breakthrough.

As the powerful energy surged out of Tie Ta in a seemingly unceasing manner, the artifact spirit finally became stern as well.

If this continued, the saint artifact would not be able to withstand it.

This was because Tie Ta's strength had already reached the level of Saint Emperors, which was enough to destroy the space of the artifact.

Without any hesitation, the artifact spirit swung its hands and condensed all the power within the space around Tie Ta. In the end, it formed a huge barrier of energy around him.

This was a barrier completely condensed from Radiant Saint Force. It was extremely powerful, and Tie Ta seemed to have been wrapped up in a huge cocoon from afar.

Bang! Bang!

The barrier cast down by the artifact spirit began to violently tremble as it resisted powerful surge of energy. Thin cracks began to cover the barrier. It then shattered loudly when the ninth sound came from Tie Ta.

Immediately, a terrifyingly powerful presence radiated from Tie Ta, enough to cause the surroundings to tremble from his presence alone. His presence caused the entire artifact space to shake violently while the surrounding space twisted, as if it was about to collapse from the pressure. The entire artifact space faced the danger of shattering.

The artifact spirit panicked. Tie Ta's presence was far more powerful than any regular Saint Emperor. He had only just broken through, but the artifact spirit felt like he was facing a peak Saint Emperor.

Tie Ta had become a Saint Emperor, but his strength after breaking through could not be measured according to the standards of the Tian Yuan Continent. His strength was far greater than a regular Saint Emperor.

The world gave birth to warring gods, who could be traced

throughout history. They were blessed by the world and were known to be the strongest in the world. Every time they broke through, they would undergo a qualitative leap in strength, leaving others in the dust.

“Stop, this space is going to collapse soon!” The artifact spirit called out in a panic. He was clearly flustered right now. Tie Ta was just too powerful. Even without sending out an attack, just his presence alone was enough to destroy the space.

This was because the presence possessed an extremely powerful battle intent, which possessed very destructive properties.

Tie Ta seemed to hear the artifact spirit’s pleading calls and slowly dispersed his presence, allowing the artifact space to gradually calm down.

“Friend, I can already sense the intense battles outside. There are many Saint Emperors. The people of the foreign world should be here. Let me out. I want to fight along Jian Chen’s side,” Tie Ta stood up and spoke to the artifact spirit with his deep, gentle voice. His eyes burned with battle intent.

The artifact spirit was shocked. The artifact space was a closed world that resided in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness, but Tie Ta was still able to sense the battle outside, which was unbelievable.

Chapter 1384: Tie Ta Enters the Battle

Outside, Jian Chen rampaged among the army of Saint Emperors from the foreign world with one of his swords. No one could stop him. Even though there were quite a few peak Saint Emperors, they were unable to last longer than three attacks against Jian Chen.

The Zi Ying Sword was just too powerful. Whether it was the weapons in their hands or the armor on them, they all became as fragile as tofu before the Zi Ying Sword.

Jian Chen and Xiao Ling had already slaughtered to the point where the Saint Emperors shivered inside. The Saint Emperors all viewed them as demons as they fled, so Jian Chen and Xiao Ling had to charge off in certain directions. All the Saint Emperors that the two of them approached would flee in any direction they could out of fear.

The battle was extremely intense, with people passing away at all times. The sky had become filled with bloody rain while the ground beneath had sunken, revealing bottomless chasms that emitted waves of heat from the magma below.

Not only had Mercenary City been completely destroyed, even the area within a hundred thousand kilometers had been ruined. All the mountains and rivers nearby had become history, but the affected area was even vaster. The entire continent shook violently.

The three hall masters of the sea realm finally arrived at the battle with various Saint Kings behind them. The sea realm was stronger than the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent as a whole, and they had basically sent everyone. The Saint Kings from them outnumbered the Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent by two or three. They became engaged in battles against Saint Emperors as soon as they arrived.

The hall masters of the Serpent God Hall and Heaven's Spirit Hall had not made full recoveries, so they dragged their injured bodies into battle.

The presence Yadriam gave off was as vast as the ocean, striking fear in the hearts of a few foreign Saint Emperors. This was because she had reached the peak of Saint Emperor and had arrived at the border of the Origin realm.

Another Saint Emperor had appeared among the experts of the sea realm beside them. She was the strongest hall elder of the sea realm, Atlantis, having successfully become a Saint Emperor with the heavenly resources Jian Chen had left behind.

However, the arrival of the four Saint Emperors was still not enough to change the situation at hand. Other than a few humans protected by Jian Chen, Xiao Ling, and Xiao Jin, the other people were suffering heavy casualties. More than half of the humans had passed away already.

The invaders suffered heavy casualties as well, having lost over two hundred Saint Emperors. Most of them fell to Jian Chen and Xiao Ling's hands.

At this moment, Jian Chen narrowed his eyes. He had received a message from the artifact spirit, and with a thought, the saint artifact shot out from his forehead. As soon as it arrived outside, a storm of powerful energy blew over and barraged the saint artifact.

With a flash of golden light, Tie Ta suddenly appeared, having emerged from the artifact space. The saint artifact did not linger for a moment longer after releasing Tie Ta. It immediately returned to Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

The battle outside was just far too intense. There was a huge group of Saint Emperors, so just the pulses of energy were enough to rip through space and damage the saint artifact.

“Tie Ta, kill to your heart’s content! Drive back the invaders of our home!” Jian Chen coldly shouted to Tie Ta before continuing toward a region dense with Saint Emperors.

Tie Ta nodded firmly. His blood burned with the battles around him, almost causing it to boil.

Blinding golden light exploded from Tie Ta, enveloping him. The golden light illuminated the surroundings, outshining the resplendent green light from the Elven Godtree. He seemed to have become the only existence in the world.

At the same time, supreme battle intent flooded the surroundings. The battle intent was like an attack on the soul. All the people who sensed the battle intent could not help but fear Tie Ta. Their courage to battle plummeted.

“Mysteries of War, Mortality-breaker!” Tie Ta bellowed as his voice surged into the sky and echoed in the surroundings. He raised his high axe high up. It shone with dazzling golden light, fusing with his battle intent. It created a hundred-meter-long projection as it fell ahead.

The space cracked as the axe fell, creating a huge chasm. It loomed over four Saint Emperors with in an unstoppable might.

The projection of the axe smoothly passed through the four Saint Emperors, and the four of them suddenly froze before being cleaved in half. Their souls were unable to escape, dying on the spot as well.

Back in the sea realm, Tie Ta was able to fight with the hall master of the Serpent God Hall without having broken through. Now that he had stepped into a new realm, his strength had drastically increased. Killing Saint Emperors was a piece of cake to him now.

“The war god! It’s the war god! The war god has appeared...”

“Good god! I’ve finally seen the war god...”

“Fantastic, fantastic! The war god of our Hundred Races has returned. Our race will experience glory once more...”

“Oh my god! What did I just see!? The war god has actually slain four Saint Emperors with a single stroke! Am I dreaming...”

“God bless our race! Not only has our war god appeared once more, his strength has grown to such a powerful level! God bless us...”

The Hundred Races fell into a commotion with Tie Ta’s appearance. They all emotionally cried out in joy. Some of the older people had even teared up and became filled with inextricable joy.

Not only was the war god the god that the Hundred Races believed in, but he was also their religion. He was their soul.

Tie Ta slaughtered all the Saint Emperors around him as he made his way toward the Hundred Races. When he had absorbed a droplet of Aergyns’ blood, he had received a fragment of his memories as well. He knew that the Hundred Races were his people since he was the war god. In this current age, the Hundred Races did not possess any astounding experts. They suffered extremely heavy casualties and several of their forbidden artifacts had been shattered as well, including the Heaven’s Guard of the dwarves. The situation was rather pessimistic for them. He wanted to go over and help them, to become their shield and sword to stop the enemy.

At this moment, the clear resonance of a sword rang out from the depths of the tunnel. The sound was not loud, but it was sharp, enough to drown out all the other sounds of the battlefield. Even the Heavenly Enchantress’ music was suppressed.

The Heavenly Enchantress stopped playing as she placed her slender fingers on the strings of the zither. She sternly stared into the depths of the tunnel.

Jian Chen was taken aback as well. He pulled back his sword and hovered in the rippling space as he stared into the depths of the tunnel. He finally became stern as some obvious shock surfaced.

His soul had actually shuddered from the resonance of the sword. At that moment, he understood many things. He learned that an extremely terrifying opponent was about to arrive and also knew that this opponent had comprehended the Way of the Sword. This opponent's progress was even greater than his.

“Minor achievement of Sword Origin, almost major achievement. Master, this person is very powerful. Be careful.” The sword spirits very sternly informed Jian Chen.

Jian Chen shivered inside. He knew that among the five major realms of the sword, each realm was divided into the initial basics, minor achievement, major achievement, and great perfection. He had only attained the initial basics of Sword Origin while his opponent had already reached minor achievement and was about to attain major achievement. He would be an extremely powerful opponent.

Chapter 1385: Battle in the Tunnel

At the same time, Xiao Ling stopped her slaughter and arrived before Jian Chen in a flash. She fearfully stared into the depths of the tunnel as she nervously clung to Jian Chen's arm. She said with fear, "Oh no, big brother, that big baddie is coming over as well." Xiao Ling had faced the Spiritking back when the seal had still been intact. His power had greatly shocked Xiao Ling's tender soul, leaving behind a permanent shadow in her heart. It was something that she could not overcome, and now that she was about to face the owner of the shadow, Xiao Ling experienced indescribably terror.

"Xiao Ling, don't be afraid! I'm here," Jian Chen comforted, but he felt no confidence inside. He had never seen the powerful opponent before, but it caused him to feel a great pressure. Even Jian Chen was not confident he would end up victorious.

Xiao Ling gave out a gentle interjection of agreement and firmly nodded. However, her grasp on Jian Chen's arm tightened. Clearly she was extremely nervous inside.

The Saint Emperors from the foreign world heard the thrum of the sword from the depths of the tunnel as well and immediately became excited. They understood the power of the Spiritking extremely well. He was definitely the most powerful Spiritking their world had ever seen.

The legend regarding the current Spiritking had already spread through the World of Forsaken Saints long ago. He had become a tale in the current world because he was able to slay a mid Reciprocity Spiritking within ten attacks despite having just reached Reciprocity. He had forged his own glorious legend.

After that, the two other former Spiritkings fought with him for four whole hours as mid and late Reciprocity experts. In the end, both of them were slain by the current Spiritking, creating a story

that he was invincible, which then spread throughout the entire world. He had carved his name into history.

Even though the Spiritking had only sent his sword over this time and the Tian Yuan Continent only had two or three Origin realm experts, the foreign Saint Emperors still believed that they were no match for the Spiritking's sword. After all, the Spiritking's sword was dyed with the blood of three Reciprocity experts.

Xiao Jin stared at the depths of the tunnel as well. He pouted as he curiously observed it.

"Xiao Jin, stay behind and protect them. You must keep them safe," Jian Chen said to Xiao Jin through a communication technique. He worried about Changyang Zu Xiao and the others, so he had always left Xiao Jin by their sides. However, he only got Xiao Jin to protect them, along with Hao Wu, the Heavenly Enchantress, a few elders of Mercenary City, and the few experts he was friends with.

Afterward, Jian Chen glanced in Tie Ta's direction before pulling Xiao Ling with him into the tunnel.

Streams of energy shot out from the tunnel beneath the ground from time to time and into the sky. The energy was so powerful that it was enough to kill Saint Kings instantaneously. Even Saint Emperors could end up heavily injured if they were not careful.

Jian Chen and Xiao Ling headed toward the other side of the tunnel. As soon as streams of energy rushed over, they would be stopped by Xiao Ling with a wave of her hand without requiring Jian Chen to do anything at all. The energy streams were lethal to Saint Kings, but they were no threat to Xiao Ling.

The tunnel was very unstable. The space in there kept warping, distorting the surroundings. It seemed like chaos, making it impossible to see the other side.

However, a black metal sword could vaguely be seen slowly floating through the tunnel. The power of the sword was just far too great. Even though its glow was hidden, suppressed in an attempt to appear ordinary, the space would shatter fragment by fragment wherever it passed. The space would be reduced to nothingness, alternating between chaos and darkness.

Jian Chen stood before the tunnel with the Zi Ying Sword. He glared at the barely visible sword in the tunnel before suddenly erupting with sword Qi. The sword Qi was so powerful that it could temporarily suppress the chaotic streams of energy in the tunnel. Afterward, the sword Qi rushed into the air above in a visible form, lingering there like a sword.

Jian Chen seemed to have become a divine sword. He glowed with blinding a white light as endless sword Qi radiated out into the surroundings. He had pushed his comprehension of the way of the sword to the limits.

With a wave of the Zi Ying Sword, he immediately shot a huge, thirty-meter-long sword Qi into the tunnel. It flickered with a violet light, which was both dazzling and resplendent, shooting toward the metal sword in the tunnel.

The tunnel in space violently trembled as soon as the Zi Ying Sword entered it. The already unstable space was about to shatter.

Jian Chen could tell with a single glance that it was very difficult for the space to endure the energy from Saint Emperors. The black sword's might clearly surpassed the limits of the tunnel, so even though it did all it could to suppress its power, it still endured great hardships as it advanced through the tunnel. As soon as the tunnel collapsed, the outcome would be unthinkable. What he needed to do was force the black sword back before it arrived on the Tian Yuan Continent or destroy the tunnel.

The black sword had discovered the danger ahead. With a slight tremor, it produced a deep thrum. The sound struck Jian Chen's

sword Qi as a sound wave. Although it was unable to stop the sword Qi, it was enough to slightly weaken it.

The metal sword then shone with a dim, dark glow before suddenly increasing its speed, shooting forward like a loose arrow.

Boom!

The metal sword continued to keep suppress its presence. It collided with the violet sword Qi, using the toughness of the blade to fend off the sword Qi.

Because the tunnel was very unstable, Jian Chen's sword Qi caused the tunnel to reach the brink of shattering. The black, metal sword was unable to erupt with power since its power would only hasten the collapse.

The terrifying pulses of energy from the collision of the sword and sword Qi caused the tunnel to tremble even more violently. Part of the surroundings had already collapsed, and the tunnel seemed like it was about to fall apart.

The metal sword paused slightly before continuing on. It left the most unstable region before shining with a faint, dark glow. It moved faster and faster as if it wanted to leave the tunnel as soon as possible.

Jian Chen's eyes shone with a resplendent light. He released his grip on the Zi Ying Sword and began to control it with his soul. The Zi Ying Sword immediately shot into the tunnel as a violet stream of light, engaging in a battle with the metal sword.

There was no one directly controlling the metal sword, but it possessed a fragment of the Spiritking's soul. It was able to use all the accumulated experience and battle techniques of the Spiritking while engaging in an intense battle against the Zi Ying Sword within the tunnel. The ringing sounds of collisions constantly rang out as terrifying energy wreaked havoc upon the tunnel. In just a short moment, the walls of the tunnel cracked before partially

collapsing. The damage was even more severe than before.

Chapter 1386: More Origin Realm Experts

The black, metal sword was something extraordinary, equivalent to the Zi Ying Sword. Not only did it avoid falling into a disadvantage against the Zi Ying Sword, but it also fought freely. However, after the tunnel became riddled with server cracks, the metal sword no longer bothered to deal with the Zi Ying Sword. It rapidly approached the exit of the tunnel as it fended off the Zi Ying Sword's attacks.

Jian Chen recalled the Zi Ying Sword after seeing how it was unable to do anything to the black sword. He used a sword technique he had learned from the sword spirits and shot out three powerful sword Qi, condensing a trapping formation to stop the black sword. Afterward, he constantly swung his sword, sending out strands of powerful sword Qi toward the cracked and collapsing tunnel, causing the cracks to widen. He wanted to destroy the tunnel.

At the same time, Xiao Ling struck out as well. She copied Jian Chen and attacked the tunnel with as many powerful attacks as she could. As long as the tunnel was destroyed, they could temporarily stop the invasion of the foreign world.

The tunnel began to collapse on a large scale after enduring the attacks from the two of them. The space in the tunnel distorted as thick cracks constantly appeared. It had become severely shattered.

However, the tunnel was far tougher than Jian Chen had imagined it to be. It had cracked and shattered, yet it remained intact due to a mysterious force. They were unable to completely destroy it.

At the same time, the black, metal sword finally displayed its might. An extremely powerful energy erupted from within the sword, immediately tearing Jian Chen's formation to shreds. It

shot toward the exit of the tunnel in a flash of black light while the space within a dozen meters from it was reduced to darkness. The darkness would linger for quite some time.

The tunnel cracked even more from the extreme power of the black sword. A segment of it had even fallen apart, but an energy continued to hold the two sides together. The black sword understood that the tunnel would not collapse, so it ignored the damage and erupted with its greatest power, charging forward as quickly as it could.

In a single moment, the sword traversed the last portion of its journey and arrived at the entrance. It then stabbed at Jian Chen without slowing down at all.

Jian Chen became stern as he immediately placed the Zi Ying Sword in front of him.

Ding!

The sharp tip of the metal sword clashed with the Zi Ying Sword with an extremely great force, producing an abnormal metallic ring. Powerful pulses of energy erupted from underground, causing magma to be thrown into the air in huge waves.

The tip of the metal sword remained stuck to the Zi Ying Sword. It burst forth with all its might, charging out of the tunnel with Jian Chen. It transformed into a black speck in the blink of an eye and disappeared into the sky.

“Big brother!” Xiao Ling produced a cry of surprise as she tailed them. She disappeared into the sky as well.

The battle beneath continued. Although Jian Chen was now gone, there was Tie Ta, so the Tian Yuan Continent had not weakened at all. However, the rate of casualties among the four races had not decreased. Two-thirds of the Saint Kings had already passed away.

Although Tie Ta had slain many, there was still over a hundred

foreign Saint Emperors. Kaiser, Lankyros, and the path lord of carnal desires had fled the battlefield due to the heavy injuries that they had sustained. Cangqiong was the only remaining Saint Emperor of the magical beasts, dealing with the foreign Saint Emperors by utilizing his ability to move the fastest in the world. However, he dared not to face them openly.

The Sea race had suffered extreme casualties as well. Less than half of the people they had brought were left. The hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall was currently engaged in a battle against several Saint Emperors with a trident. She was covered in blood, both hers and her opponents. She was extremely heavily injured.

Atlantis was no longer present on the battlefield. She had suffered very severe injuries and had almost passed away. She had been saved by Yadriam in a final moment and had been sent into a divine hall that she carried along her side.

At this moment, two streams of light shot through the sky from afar. They entered the battlefield with great force, piercing the heads of two Saint Emperors and wiping out their souls as soon as they arrived.

“It’s our clan’s Emperor Armament. The ancestor, the ancestor is our reinforcement!”

The great elders of the Tyrant’s Blade School and Changyang clan were reinvigorated, because the two streams of light were the Wave-breaking Blade of the Tyrant’s Blade School and the Righteous Yang Sword of the Changyang clan. The two weapons had killed their way into the battlefield and gave off a presence that caused the Saint Emperors to shiver inside.

The two weapons were not as powerful as the Azulet sword or the black, metal sword, but they could easily deal with Saint Emperors. The foreign Saint Emperors were not the weapons’ opponents at all when only one of them was fighting at a time. They would end up slain within ten attacks. Even the combined

attacks of several Saint Emperors were only enough to reach a stalemate against the two weapons.

“God dammit, these are weapons of Origin realm experts. I never thought that there would be more Origin realm experts here...”

“That’s impossible. There is no origin energy here and the energy of the world is so thin. It’s impossible for so many Origin realm experts to appear. Just the existence of one or two of them is a miracle...”

“No, there’s something wrong with the two weapons. They seemed to have been heavily damaged in the past, falling from the grade of saint artifacts...”

The Saint Emperors of the foreign world all cried out, but soon a person discovered the flaws of the weapons and pointed them out.

This was because the World of Forsaken Saints had always been in possession of Origin realm experts, so many Saint Emperors from the foreign world had an extremely deep understanding of that realm of cultivation. The knowledge they possessed was incomparable to the people of the Tian Yuan Continent. After all, the world only had four Origin realm champions in the past. Even a million years ago, records of Origin realm experts were rare existences.

The temperature in outer space was extremely low. So cold, in fact, that even Earth Saint Masters would not be able to survive. A huge, white planet loomed to one side while the vast cosmos dominated the other.

There was no gravity theorem nor any sense of direction. It was impossible to distinguish which way was left, right, up, or down, and the energy of the world was absent as well. Even Saint Emperors would not be able to replenish the Saint Force they consumed in outer space.

Jian Chen currently wielded the Zi Ying Sword as he hovered in a

ball of blinding white light. His presence was as vast as the sea while his battle intent roared within him. He stood there like a drawn sword.

Xiao Ling stood near Jian Chen. She nervously stared at an area right in front of her. Some fear was present on her face, but it was also filled with an awareness and was full of vigilance, as if she was about to face a powerful opponent.

The black, metal sword hovered silently right before them. It churned with light, which pierced into the surrounding space and caused it to warp. A dense, dark light was emitted from the sword, rapidly condensing into a human-sized figure.

The light created a middle-aged man with an ordinary appearance. He stood tall and straight, and the presence he emitted was like a mountain—calm and steady. He stood there with his arms crossed, as if he had fused with the surroundings. He gave off the feeling that the world was beneath him.

Chapter 1387: Battle in Outer Space (One)

The middle-aged man looked at Jian Chen and Xiao Ling. He had appeared with a neutral face and profound eyes, but the moment he saw Jian Chen, a sliver of surprised flashed through the depths of his eyes. He had never thought that there would be another Origin realm expert other than Xiao Ling, let alone imagine that this expert would have entered the Way of the Sword.

Even in the World of Forsaken Saints, there were countless people who used the sword and plenty who had reached the Origin realm, but without any exception, none of them had entered the Way of the Sword.

Not to mention, the person who had comprehended the Way of the Sword originated from a world where there was no origin energy and where there were barely any Origin realm experts.

Afterward, the middle-aged man looked at the huge planet beneath him. He became fixated in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent and immediately frowned. He said with a low voice, "I've underestimated the strength on your side."

"Who are you?" Jian chen growled. He could tell that the person before him had not actually come and was only a projection of his soul and power, but the pressure this person let out was still vast. If he had actually personally come, just how terrifying of an opponent would he be?

"You can refer to me as the Spiritking," the man replied indifferently.

Jian Chen shuddered inside. He said, "Spiritking, you really are the ruler of the foreign world. However, this place does not belong to your world. It's not a place that you should set foot upon."

"I must come here. No one can stop me," the Spiritking replied very leisurely, but he still possessed a determined will.

Jian Chen's eyes grew colder. Even though his opponent's strength was rather frightening, there was no need for him to fear it since he had not come personally. Jian Chen said coldly, "We can only fight it out if that's the case."

Jian Chen tightly grasped the Zi Ying Sword and condensed shocking a sword Qi around him, enveloping himself in a blinding white light. The region of space around him violently shook, while the Zi Ying Sword erupted with a glow it had never shown before. It produced terrifying pulses of energy before seemingly fusing with Jian Chen. Together, they stabbed at the Spiritking in a flash a violet light.

Jian Chen did not hold back. This attack contained all his power. He had pushed his fourth layer Chaotic Force and his comprehension of the Way of the Sword to the limits. The Chaotic Force's power had been amplified several times through the Zi Ying Sword and the sword Qi, causing his attack to surpass the level of Saint Emperors and reach the Origin realm.

The violet light tore through the sky and caused the space around it to shatter, carving out a chasm several hundred meters long and over ten meters wide. Jian Chen's attack was just too powerful. It was powerful enough to carve away a section of the continent if it was used on the Tian Yuan Continent.

The Spiritking remained where he was without moving. He was calm and composed, brimming with confidence. His tall stature seemed extremely large, enough to shoulder an entire world by himself.

He grasped the Cloudstream Sword in his right hand. It flickered with a dark light as an extremely powerful energy remained hidden within. Afterward, he used the most basic attack, a simple thrust, to receive the Zi Ying Sword.

This was the most ordinary attack one could perform with a sword, but it possessed an extraordinary force in the hands of the

Spiritking. The simple thrust seemed to contain an ultimate ability. It was not as simple as it seemed. It contained a world and universe within.

Boom!

The tips of the two swords collided violently and immediately produced a deafening boom. Powerful ripples of energy swept into the surroundings as storms, causing the space to shudder and the stars to darken.

The Zi Ying Sword came to a halt and revealed Jian Chen. He was bathed in the light from the sword, as if he had fused with it.

The two swords did not separate and remained locked in a stalemate in space. Vast energy leaked out from the two swords as they attempted to surpass each other.

With the clashing of energy, the space around them began to collapse. A black hole started to appear where the two tips touched, rapidly expanding in size. The ripples of energy emitted vanished into the hole as well.

Jian Chen and the Spiritking remained locked like this. The Spiritking had reached the Origin realm, but he was not truly present this time. He had only deposited some power within the Cloudstream Sword, so he was unable to unleash all his power.

At this moment, Xiao Ling moved as well. She suppressed her fear and silently arrived behind the Spiritking. She raised her little fist and viciously threw it toward him. As soon as the punch was thrown, the surrounding space collapsed. Her punch was just too powerful, even overshadowing Jian Chen's attack.

The Spiritking did not become flustered at all. Within a moment, a powerful strand of sword Qi condensed in his left hand. It shone with a dazzling white light, which illuminated the surroundings.

This was sword Qi he had condensed using his understanding of the Way of the Sword. It was not just energy, but a condensation of

laws as well. It was even more powerful than Jian Chen's sword Qi.

Without even looking back, the Spiritking swung the sword Qi toward his back, forcing Xiao Ling to pull back her punch and stop the attack.

Bang! The sword Qi vanished with a dull sound. Xiao Ling managed to block the attack, but she was blown several kilometers away.

"So powerful!" Xiao Ling commented. Her eyes were filled with disbelief. She had already reached Returnance and the Spiritking was not personally present, yet just a clone condensed from energy was enough to force her back.

"Break through!" The Spiritking exhaled gently, and with a jolt of his arm, a powerful force immediately erupted from his sword. It broke the balance it had maintained with the Zi Ying Sword and suppressed Jian Chen in a single moment, blowing him far away.

Jian Chen became extremely stern. The power of the Spiritking had greatly exceeded what he had anticipated. He had never thought that a single clone would be so powerful.

Jian Chen regained his footing far away and formed seals with his hands. He quickly formed several complicated seals before crying out, "Sky-severing Strike!" At that moment, the Zi Ying Sword became a hundred meters long. Its violet sword Qi erupted as it cleaved toward the Spiritking.

This was one of the sword techniques Jian Chen had learned from the sword spirits. Although it was a part of the basics in the eyes of the sword spirits, Jian Chen was able to erupt with power he did not possess when he used it. It was akin to Saint Rulers using Saint Tier Battle Skills to heavily injure Saint Kings.

However, the sword technique was far, far more powerful than Saint Tier Battle Skills.

The Spiritking narrowed his eyes. The attack had locked onto his presence, preventing him from dodging. He could only take it on forcefully, but as the Zi Ying Sword approached him, he felt like he was trapped by a mysterious power, as if his body was as heavy as a mountain.

“This is a Sword Domain,” the Spiritking murmured. A gleam of light flashed through his eyes, but he did not show any fear at all. Instead, his battle intent surged and he yelled out, “Break, domain!” The Cloudstream Sword did not erupt with much force. With just a dull flash, it was thrust into space, immediately dispersing the mysterious force around him.

“Break, sword!” The Spiritking called out this time and the Cloudstream Sword charged toward the huge Zi Ying Sword. A wondrous energy circulated within the Cloudstream Sword as it came in contact with the Zi Ying Sword.

Ding! With a crisp sound, the power of Jian Chen’s Sky-severing Strike vanished like a deflating balloon. It rapidly weakened before the Zi Ying Sword returned to its original form and returned to Jian Chen’s hand.

Chapter 1388: Battle in Outer Space (Two)

Jian Chen was shocked inside. The sword technique he had just used originated from the Azulet sword spirits. Even though it was only one of the basics, it still originated from the Immortals' World. The power of the technique was unimaginably great, yet it had fallen apart so easily before the Spiritiking. He found it difficult to believe.

It would have been acceptable if the Spiritiking was actually present and had easily broken through the sword technique then, but all that was present was a strand of soul and some energy the Spiritiking had deposited into his sword.

“The Spiritiking’s comprehension of the Way of the Sword is greater than mine. Can he easily stop my sword techniques with just his advantage in the Way of the Sword?” Jian Chen thought about it quickly, but his hands never stopped. He swung the Zi Ying Sword and used a second sword technique, sending three sword Qi toward the Spiritiking with a flash.

The three sword Qi did not attack the Spiritiking directly. They instead shot into his surroundings and created a formation, trapping him in a triangle. Each strand of sword Qi was two meters long and let out a blinding light. The three strands of sword Qi resonated with one another as they fused their power to seal off the region.

Jian Chen’s presence skyrocketed. He arrived above the Spiritiking in a flash, and at the same time, the Qing Suo Sword arrived beneath the Spiritiking in a flash of azure light through the control of his mind. Afterward, both swords stabbed toward the Spiritiking from above and below.

Two streams of light—one violet and one azure—shot through space with unbelievable speed. If the Spiritiking wasn’t in between them, it seemed like the two swords were about to collide.

“Break, formation!” The Spiritking’s face remained the same as before. He gave a deep grunt before the Cloudstream Sword stabbed into empty space, immediately striking Jian Chen’s formation with a mysterious power. With a boom, the three sword Qi were easily smashed. Afterward, the Spiritking shot up as he moved toward Jian Chen with a terrifying presence.

The Qing Suo Sword erupted with azure light from beneath the Spiritking. It transformed into an azure streak as it shot up, attempting a pincer attack on the Spiritking with the Zi Ying Sword. It vaguely radiated with Supreme Yin Qi while the Zi Ying Sword above vaguely radiated with Supreme Yang Qi as well.

This was the Yin and Yang Qi created from Chaotic Force when the world began. This was the power of the sword spirits. Although the sword spirits sustained great injuries and their Yin Qi and Yang Qi had become extremely weak, they were still able to erupt with unbelievable force if their Supreme Yin and Yang Qi came together.

As soon as the Spiritking came in contact with the Zi Ying Sword, he sensed the sliver of Supreme Yang Qi hidden within. His heart immediately tightened, and without any hesitation, he came to a halt before reappearing a thousand meters away in just a single movement.

As soon as the Spiritking vanished, the resplendent light of the two swords overlapped with one another. However, the two swords remained separate, coming no closer than three inches, while the Supreme Yin and Yang Qi erupted with a destructive ripple of energy.

“Nine Godly Arts, Slayer!” Xiao Ling became stern in the distance. She used the supreme techniques that Mo Tianyun had left behind, the Nine Godly Arts. Her hands turned into claws as terrifying energy condensed around them. She then swept them in front of her.

The region of space around her trembled before collapsing. An extremely powerful Force of Slaughter shot toward the Spiritking as a crescent and caused space to collapse along the way. The killing intent unleashed was enough to annihilate worlds, enough to affect the souls of people. Just the terrifying killing intent from the Force of Slaughter was enough to disperse the souls of weaker people.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed. He had seen countless Saint Tier Battle Skills, but the Nine Godly Arts completely surpassed the realm of a battle skill. He had already determined that the Nine Godly Arts were not weaker than the sword techniques he had learned from the Azulet sword spirits from the might this one attack displayed. It could even be more powerful.

Saint Tier Battle Skills were only suitable for Saint Rulers and Saint Emperors. The effects would not be very evident when used by Saint Emperors, yet the Nine Godly Arts were still able to demonstrate such a great impact when cast by a Returnance expert. This could only be explained by the fact that the Nine Godly Arts were of an extremely high grade.

The Spiritking's indifferent eyes brimmed with interest. He became fixated on the Force of Slaughter that was wreaking havoc. He actually felt like he could not dodge the attack, as if it would catch up to him if he tried to move.

The Spiritking raised his Cloudstream Sword and endless white light condensed from the surrounding space. The sword became a streak of white light before surging out as an afterimage. He struck the Force of Slaughter with the sword.

Boom!

The Force of Slaughter was dispersed by his sword, but the Spiritking was blown far away. His figure had become somewhat blurry.

The Spiritking tossed out his sword as he shot back. The

Cloudstream Sword shot toward Xiao Ling while flickering with a dark light. The sword was like a venomous snake hidden within the darkness of space.

With a thought, Jian Chen controlled his two swords with his soul and directed them toward the Cloudstream Sword. His swords managed to stop it while he used the Illusory Flash to shoot toward the Spiritking. He condensed a sword from sword Qi in his right hand and stabbed it toward the Spiritking.

“Nine Godly Arts, Worldlock!”

Just when the Spiritking wanted to deal with his opponent in a similar fashion, Xiao Ling used the Nine Godly Arts again. She froze the entire region in a single moment, catching the Spiritking off-guard and immobilizing him.

The power of the Nine Godly Arts was incomparable to the basic sword techniques Jian Chen knew. They were even more powerful since they were being used by Xiao Ling, a returnance expert. Unless the Spiritking was personally present, his clone would not be able to break free in a single moment.

Jian Chen’s sword Qi punctured the Spiritking’s body, but no blood appeared. His body became more ethereal since his figure, which was condensed from a strand of soul and some energy, rapidly weakened.

The Spiritking remained composed despite being hit by such a heavy attack. He maintained the same expression as his surroundings became flooded with an endless white light. The light transformed into countless swords that attacked the surroundings, allowing him to break free from Xiao Ling’s technique. He extended his right index finger and shot a sword Qi into Jian Chen’s chest.

Unlike the Spiritking, Jian Chen’s body was composed of flesh. He grunted as he shot back in a flash. The sword Qi from the Spiritking wreaked havoc within him. It was like a snake, turning

both his blood and organs to mush wherever it went.

The sword Qi in Jian Chen was a condensation of laws even more powerful than the sword Qi he could use himself. He dared not to deal with it carelessly. He immediately directed his Chaotic Force to surround the sword Qi before using his comprehension of the Way of the Sword to destroy it.

At the same time, the Spiritking experienced what Jian Chen was going through as well. Jian Chen had also managed to deposit a strand of sword Qi in the Spiritking's clone, but the Spiritking possessed a greater understanding of the Way of the Sword, so he dispersed it very quickly.

"Big brother!" Xiao Ling immediately began to panic when she saw that Jian Chen was injured. Her face was filled with worry. However, she knew how to help Jian Chen. She needed to defeat the Spiritking, so she immediately dismissed her thoughts and formed a seal with her hands. She used the Nine Godly Arts again.

"Nine Godly Arts, Descent of the Divine Beast!"

A huge white tiger condensed behind Xiao Ling. It stood there majestically, almost like a divine god had descended. It produced a roar before leaping forward. It seemed to pass through the fabric of space, ignoring the distance between the two of them and arriving before the Spiritking as if it had teleported. It swung one of its paws at the Spiritking with terrifying force. The attack contained the Force of Slaughter as well. It was filled with killing intent.

The Spiritking became rather stern for the first time. His presence skyrocketed as he recalled the Cloudstream Sword. He pushed his minor achievement understanding of Sword Origin to the maximum as he swung the Cloudstream Sword toward the white tiger with a blinding light.

Chapter 1389: Battle in Outer Space (Three)

The white tiger's figure dulled after enduring the Spiritking's attack, but its claw still passed through the Spiritking's body along with a powerful Force of Slaughter. It caused the Spiritking's body to distort, changing from human form to a cluster of dense and powerful energy.

However, the Spiritking's soul was still present. Under his soul's control, he morphed back into human form in basically a single moment. However, he had become more ethereal. His power had been rapidly consumed by the white tiger's claw.

The white tiger did not disperse. Instead it remained with its same majestic presence. Even though its figure had dulled after taking an attack from the Spiritking, it still radiated with a terrifying presence. Its claw shot toward the Spiritking once again with Force of Slaughter, which obliterated the surrounding space.

The Spiritking was just far too powerful, and he had attained minor achievement in Sword Origin. His strength surpassed others who possessed a similar cultivation level as him, so his clone was no weaker than a Returnance expert. He did not hold back at all in his second clash with the white tiger, pushing his body to the limits.

The white tiger finally dispersed after withstanding two attacks, but the Spiritking was heavily injured as well. His body of energy had become extremely faint, but he still behaved as though he was invincible. His presence had not weakened at all.

The Cloudstream Sword in his hand had dulled as well. Most of the power deposited within the sword had been consumed during the clashes.

It was impossible for the power to be replenished either, as the Spiritking was not actually present.

At this moment, Jian Chen dispersed the sword Qi within him as well. Blood ran down from the corner of his lips and his face was rather pale. He could obviously see the Spiritking's condition as well, so he immediately charged forward again regardless of his wounds. He wanted to waste all the energy of the Spiritking's clone as soon as possible.

Xiao Ling attacked as well, fighting the Spiritking alongside Jian Chen. She used the Nine Godly Arts many times. It would demonstrate wondrous powers each time she used it. There were both offensive and auxiliary abilities, which all possessed Force of Slaughter. Toward the end of her barrage, all the abilities conjured the figure of a white tiger and grew in power.

The battle in outer space was extremely intense. They had fought to the point where the surrounding space shattered and the stars in the distance seemed to darken. The Spiritking's figure became weaker and weaker before entering the Cloudstream Sword all together. He fused with the sword, controlling it in battle.

Jian Chen was extremely heavily injured as well. A few vicious gashes were present on him as well as several holes that went through his body. His clothes were dyed red with blood and every wound he possessed flashed with sword Qi, preventing them from closing up.

Suddenly, a dazzling, blue light shot into outer space with a flash from the planet below. It radiated with an extremely tremendous presence, causing the surrounding space to thicken.

The sea goddess had joined the battle as well. She was surrounded with a dense, water-attributed energy that gave off terrifying pulses of power. Her appearance was obscured.

The sea goddess had immediately entered seclusion for recuperation as soon as her resurrection was complete. She had only recovered her strength now, returning to her peak condition.

The sea goddess hurled a trident at the Cloudstream Sword. It

was covered with a ball of powerful blue flames and a terrifying presence, immediately producing a deafening boom when it collided with the sword. The space around the two weapons collapsed completely.

The trident flew back into the sea goddess' hands after the light it gave off had dulled. Afterward, she charged up with the trident, approaching the Cloudstream Sword with a terrifying presence and engaged in a great battle with it.

At the same time, Jian Chen and Xiao Ling moved as well. Jian Chen's Zi Ying Sword let out a violet, gray, and white light as he swung it at the Cloudstream Sword as hard as he could. With the screech of metal, the dull Cloudstream Sword was knocked several dozen kilometers away.

A powerful Force of Slaughter turned the space there to shards through a supreme killing intent. The Zi Ying Sword struck the Cloudstream Sword, causing the sword to quiver slightly.

The Spiritking's power was mostly consumed, and he would not be able to last much longer. Coupled with the sea goddess, there was one more powerful opponent that he had to face, so he fell into a disadvantage immediately. He was forced to retreat against the three of them.

"Today is the first time I have suffered defeat in a battle against opponents of a similar cultivation level. This is an extremely painful lesson. I will never forget this defeat.

"I never thought your world had more than one Origin realm expert. I have underestimated your strength, thus, leading to the wrong decision and the defeat today. However, you will still not be able to stop our advance. That day will come soon." The Spiritking's lively voice rang from his sword. His sword then shot off as a gray streak of light. He shot toward the Tian Yuan Continent, leaving through the tunnel.

Jian Chen, Xiao Ling, and the sea goddess did not try to stop him.

The Spiritking was just far too powerful. Even though he had only sent a sword and a clone, the three of them still did not possess the power to stop him from leaving.

“Oof, so powerful, that person is so strong. I’ve even used the strongest abilities master has left behind, but they’re still not enough to kill him. He has managed to escape in the end,” Xiao Ling exhaled deeply and patted her own chest. She let out a sigh of relief. Afterward, she arrived by Jian Chen’s side in a flash, and after seeing how bloodied he had become, she immediately began to tear up. She choked back her tears as she said, “Big brother, you’re injured and you’ve bled so much.”

Jian Chen smiled victoriously and rubbed her head. He said, “I’m fine. They’re just some small injuries. They’re nothing to me. They’ll heal very soon.” Jian Chen became coated in a layer of dense and gentle white light as soon as he finished his sentence. His wounds began to close up at a visible rate under the glow of the white light.

Jian Chen was a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. This time, he was using a strand of Radiant Saint Force origin energy without holding back. Coupled with the great recovery rate of his Chaotic Body, he healed unbelievably quickly.

The Spiritking had left, but the battle on the Tian Yuan Continent had not ended yet. He needed to recover as soon as possible so that he could enter the battlefield again and reduce the casualties on his side.

After fully recovering, Jian Chen discovered that the sea goddess had already left outer space. She had gone to take part in the battle below. Only Xiao Ling remained by his side, staring at him with her large eyes.

“Xiao Ling, let’s go,” Jian Chen said before returning to the Tian Yuan Continent with her.

With the interference of three Origin realm experts, the

remaining Saint Emperors from the foreign world were all slain. Even though a few of them decided to flee in a random direction, they still ended up dead after being pursued by an Origin realm expert.

Chapter 1390: Heavy Losses

The battle ended very soon. This unprecedented battle that spanned two worlds did not last for very long, but its effects were without a doubt immense. The battle had shaken the entire world and was destined to go down in history. Even the war between the humans, magical beasts, and Hundred Races had not reached such intensity.

The Tian Yuan Continent was very heavily destroyed as an aftermath of the battle. A bottomless pit spanned several thousand kilometers from Mercenary City, emitting waves of heat in the darkness. The heat caused the temperature in the region to skyrocket.

This was due to the magma below the earth. However, the churning molten rock was not visible since the pit was just too deep.

The ruins of Mercenary City had completely vanished long ago in the battle. Most of the structures of the city had fallen into the depths of the magma.

There was a region of space in the very center of the pit that contained extraordinary energy fluctuations. This was the tunnel leading to the World of Forsaken Saints. It had not been destroyed. The tunnel seemed very fragile, but it was virtually indestructible. Even if a portion of it had cracked and collapsed, it would slowly mend itself.

The people of the four races lingered in the sky after surviving the battle. Many of them were covered in blood, not just from themselves but from their enemies as well. There were a few Saint Kings who had lost limbs and parts of their bodies during the battle, making them a brutal sight. Very few people still maintained a whole body.

“We’re victorious. We’ve slain the several hundred invading

Saint Emperors and successfully protected our world,” a few Saint Kings constantly exclaimed. Their voices were filled with the joy of victory and obvious triumph.

All the people who had survived revealed a smile of victory. They all smiled and felt triumphant from the bottom of their hearts. They only had a few Saint Emperors on their sides with the four races combined, yet they had faced several hundred Saint Emperors. The disparity in strength was just unbelievable.

Under such a situation where the odds were against them, they still managed to achieve victory in the end. This had surprised all of them.

However, their joy vanished slowly when they saw the people scattered throughout the sky. Their feelings grew heavy.

Less than a quarter of all the people from the four races were left at the end of the battle. The others had all fallen, departing from the world forever.

Basically all the people there were Saint Kings, barely any Saint Rulers. Experts of such a level were existences that stood on the apex among all the races. It was rather difficult for them to endure such a huge loss in such a short amount of time.

All four races had suffered heavy casualties from the battle. Other than Yadriam and Cangqiong, all the other Saint Emperors had fled before the battle had ended since they had become too heavily injured.

“We’re victorious this time all because of Jian Chen. Over a hundred of those foreign Saint Emperors died to his hands,” the grand elder of Mercenary City said with a sorrowful voice. Mercenary City had suffered severe losses from the battle. There were only three Saint Kings left; the rest were dead. All of their remains had fallen into the pit and had been dissolved by the magma.

All the people concentrated their attention on Jian Chen. The experts of the Tian Yuan Continent and Beast God Continent all revealed rather mixed in expression. The experts of the two continent possessed an extremely clear understanding of Jian Chen. He was not an old monster who had cultivated for thousands of years. He was a junior who was not even a hundred years old, only having cultivated for a few decades. Yet, it was him who had left them in the dust and reached a whole different level of power, slaying Saint Emperors like ants. Mentally, they were greatly affected by this fact.

“Is Jian Chen really an incarnation of Mo Tianyun?” At this moment, similar thoughts crossed the minds of both the humans and magical beasts.

Afterward, a few people looked away from Jian Chen and then at Xiao Jin, Tie Ta, and the sea goddess. Quite a few people had caught a glimpse of Xiao Jin and Tie Ta’s performance during the battle, shocking most of them. The only person they had not seen was the sea goddess. Although she was shrouded by a screen of dense blue light, obscuring her appearance, the tremendous presence and water-attributed energy she gave off explained everything.

“Yadriam greets your majesty,” Yadriam arrived before the sea goddess and dropped to one knee as she gave a courteous greeting.

“You’re very heavily injured. Go back and heal,” the sea goddess nonchalantly commanded.

“Yes, your majesty,” Yadriam rose up and glanced back at the heavily injured experts of the Sea race. Afterward, she took a group of particularly injured people with her and immediately returned to the sea realm, only leaving a few not-so-wounded people to keep guard.

On the side of the Hundred Races, all the people there had already knelt down, greeting the war god in the most courteous

manner. All of them were extremely excited. Even though they had suffered heavy losses as well, the return of the war god had dulled their sorrows. The war god was their soul. He was their pillar of support and where all their faith lay.

On the side of the magical beasts, the remaining experts all showed very ugly expressions. The return of the war god was bad news for them.

The golden light around Tie Ta slowly dimmed as he began striding away. He walked toward Jian Chen.

Tie Ta's actions attracted everyone's attention. Everyone's eyes became fixated on him. Even ignoring the fact that he was the war god, just the strength he had displayed had made him the center of attention.

Many people held their breaths, most did not know the relationship between Jian Chen and Tie Ta.

“In ancient times, the war god of the Hundred Races, Aergyns, attacked the Tian Yuan Continent and forced them to retreat. In the end, Mo Tianyun suddenly appeared and stopped him, slaying countless experts of the Hundred Races all by himself. If that had not happened, the Tian Yuan Continent probably would have been dominated by a whole different race right now. Now that the war god has reappeared and Jian Chen has vaguely taken up the mantle as the strongest human, are they going to continue the war from ancient times?” Some person thought inside.

Chapter 1391: Tie Ta's Departure

All the people present had already begun wondering whether Jian Chen and Tie Ta were going to end up fighting or not. Tie Ta had already arrived before Jian Chen and the golden axe in his hand slowly vanished. At that moment, he seemed to have turned into an ordinary man from the raging war god state he had been in before. He seemed no different from any person aside from his golden skin.

After breaking through, Tie Ta could erupt with the power to destroy worlds, but he was able to return to how he was before whenever he wanted to.

“Jian Chen, I want to go to the Wasteland Continent of the Hundred Races,” Tie Ta said with his soft but heavy voice. His eyes shone with interest. When he had obtained a portion of Aergyns' memory from the golden drop of blood on Dragon Island, he had been filled with a burning desire to visit the Wasteland Continent one day, because he felt like only that place belonged to him from the bottom of his heart.

Before, he had been too weak. If he had been exposed, the Hundred Races would not have been able to save him even if they mobilized all their forces, because not only would the magical beasts come to kill him, but so would the experts of the Tian Yuan Continent.

The situation now was different. His strength had already reached a level where he could look down on the entire world. No one could defeat him as long as another Origin realm expert did not appear.

“Go. I'll come look for you once I deal with the matters on the Tian Yuan Continent,” Jian Chen replied calmly, but he felt slightly worried inside. He could already tell that a large portion of the magical beasts and the Hundred Races still clung onto their

former enmities. Tie Ta now represented the Hundred Races and the white tiger would end up as the representative of the magical beasts in the future. What he hated to see the most was the white tiger standing up to Tie Ta as an enemy one day.

Tie Ta left after calling all the experts of the Hundred Races with him. He returned to the Wasteland Continent. Although there was less than a third of the people initially present, all the people of the Hundred Races were filled with joy.

The Heaven's Guard that had been passed down from ancient times among the dwarves had shattered. The dwarven experts took the shards back to the continent with them, and the Elven Godtree had vanished as well, having been taken away by the elves.

However, the Elven Godtree did not change much after absorbing the life force of over a dozen foreign Saint Emperors. When the figure of the tree vanished, the branch of the godtree returned to how it had looked before. The life force from the Saint Emperors had completely vanished.

The Wave-breaking Blade and the Righteous Yang Sword shot off into the distance when the battle had ended. Throughout the entire battle, no one saw who was controlling them, but many of them recognized the two extraordinary weapons as the ancestral weapons of the Tyrant's Blade School and the Changyang clan. The power they displayed shocked many of them.

The two weapons had displayed power that completely exceeded anything that had been mentioned in past records. Even during the glorious ancient times, Saint Emperors were unable to display such power when controlling them.

Afterward, the people gathered there all dispersed. Cangqiong returned to the Beast God Continent with the magical beasts as well, leaving none behind. They were all heavily injured and needed to return and heal as soon as possible.

The sea goddess left by herself as well. She departed silently, only

leaving behind around a dozen Saint Kings, who were not so heavily injured, to watch over the tunnel.

In the blink of an eye, only a few dozen humans and a few exhausted Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters were left. They were the people who had managed to survive until the end. They had probably become the only Saint Kings left on the continent, aside from the few people who had remained in seclusion and did not take part in the battle.

Even the Radiant Saint Master Union suffered greatly. Some of the few Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters had died as well, leaving behind only seven people, which included the president and the grand elder.

The Changyang clan still possessed the greatest amount of power among the ten protector clans. Aside from the people from the Qing and Yuan branches who never took part in the battle, Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun were fine. All they suffered were a few insignificant scratches.

If it were not for Xiao Jin's protection, they probably would have died as well.

All the Saint Kings of the Shanxiao sect, the Yangji sect, Yiyuan sect, and Moyuan clan had died while the Emperor Armaments of the four protector clans had fallen into the magma below. The other protector clans had lost over half of their Saint Kings. Only one remained for the Heaven's Incense School. He was barely alive as well.

The ancestral emperor of the Felicity Empire had fallen and, just like the Karl Empire, they were left with a single Saint King. Zaar Veimos of the Zaar Family from the Holy Empire had died in the battle as well, but Saint Kings still remained for the other two clans of the Holy Empire. This would result in a decline for the Zaar family, who originally reigned supreme above the other two

clans.

Mercenary City was left with only three Saint Kings as well, even though they were much more powerful than the protector clans before. Fortunately, very few Saint Rulers had taken part in the battle, so the future of the continent still existed. New Saint Kings would appear again soon.

“Jian Chen, I want to thank you, my friend, for helping us out so many times, or I would have been done for long ago,” the ancestor of the Kara clan thanked Jian Chen gratefully. He would glance at Xiao Jin who stood beside Jian Chen from time to time as an odd light appeared in his eyes.

Jian Chen clasped his hands at him and conversed a little with him. Not only was Kara Lot the great-grandfather of Kara Liwei, the Qinhuang Kingdom was also a subsidiary of his clan. As a result, Jian Chen needed to watch over Kara Lot.

After their conversation, Jian Chen looked at the Heavenly Enchantress. As soon as he attempted to approach her, she left in a blur with a single movement, something he would never have expected.

Jian Chen silently stared at the Heavenly Enchantress' figure and only sighed gently after quite some time. He did not chase after her.

“Sigh. Our Mercenary City was founded in ancient times and has existed for over a million years. It became a symbol of the Tian Yuan Continent long ago. I never thought that it would be destroyed like this, where not even ruins remain,” the grand elder of Mercenary City was filled with sorrow as he stared at the bottomless pit beneath him.

“Although the Mercenary City of the past has been destroyed, that's only its shell. Its soul still lives on. We need to rebuild Mercenary City.”

“Yes. We can rebuild a destroyed city. We can’t forget about the lord barrier spirit, the esteemed great elder, and our heritage of countless years.”

The two other Saint Kings of Mercenary City both agreed. They were brimming with vigor. Mercenary City was destroyed, but the miniature world could still be opened up. The battle had not shaken the organization much at all other than destroying their city and taking the lives of a few of their Saint Kings.

Chapter 1392: The Greatest City in the World (One)

“Elders, I am willing to assist you in rebuilding Mercenary City so that you can recover your peak strength in the shortest amount of time,” Jian Chen expressed his thoughts. He had accumulated a heavy debt with Mercenary City throughout his growth. Mercenary City possessed a special place in his heart as well. Now that the renowned Mercenary City had disappeared from the continent, he felt horrible.

Xiao Ling became very upset beside Jian Chen. She became extremely depressed and unhappy. If they had to nominate someone who was most attached to the city, it would definitely be Xiao Ling. She had grown up in the city and guarded it for countless years. Mercenary City was not as simple as a home to her because it was the marks her master had left behind.

The three Saint Kings of Mercenary City expressed their gratitude toward Jian Chen. They all respected him, the respect given to someone who is strong.

The battle had cemented Jian Chen’s status into place.

“Great-grandfathers, great-grandmother, how are your injuries? I’ll heal you with the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force.” Jian Chen turned his attention to Changyang Zu Xiao, Changyang Zu Yunxiao, and Changyang Zu Yeyun. His eyes were filled with concern. Regardless of how powerful he had become, they were still his seniors after all.

“Hehe, my dear great-grandson, our injuries are nothing. We can recover with just some medicine, so there’s no need for you to do something like that,” Changyang Zu Xiao chuckled aloud as Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun smiled joyously. It was extremely pleasant to their ears when Jian Chen referred to them as great-grandfather or great-grandfather. They felt

extremely prideful.

After all, Jian Chen's status was now extraordinary. In the eyes of many, he was an Origin realm expert. He had even slain peak Saint Emperors just earlier.

"Great-grandson, who would this be?" Changyang Zu Yunxiao asked curiously as he looked at Xiao Jin. He was filled with gratitude toward Xiao Jin, because he knew that if it were not for the boy's assistance several times, he probably would have died in battle already.

Jian Chen told them the truth about Xiao Jin. When they learned that the shocking lightning near the tungsten alloy mine had been caused by him and when they learned about his true identity, the three of them along with the three elders of Mercenary City became absolutely stunned. Disbelief flooded their faces.

Xiao Jin was actually a natural spirit given birth to by the world, and he possessed the power of an Origin realm expert as soon as he came into existence. This had completely overwhelmed their understanding of the world.

After all, there were extremely few Origin realm experts even in ancient times, only totaling to four.

Jian Chen and Changyang Zu Xiao spoke some more. Jian Chen then took Xiao Jin with him back to Flame City. The three of them did not stay for much longer either, returning to the Changyang clan in Lore City soon after Jian Chen had left.

Xiao Ling did not leave with Jian Chen and instead stayed behind, full of sorrow. She stared at the place where Mercenary City used to stand in a daze. Not only did the disappearance of the city mean that she had lost her home, the marks her master had once left behind had vanished as well. This filled her with sorrow and anguish. Even Jian Chen's comforting was not enough to calm her down.

News of the shocking battle that had occurred at Mercenary City spread across the continent like wildfire. The news caused a huge commotion. Not only did it raise a huge commotion on the continent, even the three other races behaved similarly.

Although the four races suffered extremely heavy casualties this time, they were still victorious in the end. They had slain all the invaders, so the invasion did not cause much panic. Some places were even filled with celebrations.

At the same time, Jian Chen, Xiao Ling, Xiao Jin, the sea goddess, and Tie Ta had become known to everyone from their performances in the battle, shocking all four races.

Soon after the battle had ended, the Saint Rulers of the Shenxiao sect, Yangji sect, Yiyuan sect, and Moyuan clan all arrived at the battlefield. They cast secret techniques in search of their Emperor Armaments that had fallen into the magma. Afterward, they managed to retrieve them successfully with the assistance of the three Saint Kings of Mercenary City. They then returned to their clans with them.

The seal over Flame City was released when Jian Chen returned. You Yue, Bi Lian, and the rest ran to Jian Chen's side and flooded him with questions. They were all concerned about what happened at Mercenary City.

Their faces all lit up when they learned that their world managed to fend off the invasion. They could finally relax.

Afterward, Jian Chen decided to complete his unprecedented deed. He took Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, Senior An, and the others, the several dozen elites of the Flame Mercenaries, to the depths of the tungsten alloy mine again. He used the various heavenly resources he had obtained from the Xuanhuang Microcosm to increase their strength.

He understood that he had only fended off the first wave of attacks from the World of Forsaken Saints. The tunnel was still

unstable right now, so only Saint Emperors could pass through. Those beyond Saint Emperor could easily cause the tunnel to collapse. It would not completely destroy the tunnel, but they would be sucked into the endless cosmos by the chaotic space. Even Origin realm experts would not necessarily survive that.

Right now, the tunnel was gradually stabilizing. This was an unstoppable process, where even wreaking havoc upon it would only delay the inevitable. Once the tunnel completely stabilized, the World of Forsaken Saints would definitely send even more Saint Emperors or even Origin realm experts.

As a result, Jian Chen needed to increase the strength they possessed. Not only did it include his personal strength, but that strength also included the overall strength of the Tian Yuan Continent and even the the Sea race, magical beasts, and Hundred Races as well.

Making the Flame Mercenaries powerful was only the first step.

Jian Chen had harvested a total of three fifth grade Violet Cloud Peach trees in total in the Xuanhuang Microcosm. Each tree bore a hundred and eight peaches, so he did not worry about wasting them at all when he increased the strength of the several dozen people before him. He gave them all fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches without a second thought.

Because most of them were Heaven Saint Masters and not a single one of them had stepped into Sainthood, only fifth grade Violet Cloud Peaches would be the best insurance that they would all become Saint Kings. After all, they would end up wasting a lot of the vast energy during the absorption process.

A day later, the first rainbow clouds appeared in the sky. They were not seven-colored but five-colored, a Saint Ruler's break through. Little Fatty was the one who had broken through since he possessed the most talent out of all of them.

Soon after Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, Senior An, and

the group of elites all broke through. At that moment, the sky became filled with rainbow light, which lit up the world. There were nine colors present among all the clouds, reaching over a million kilometers away.

These were not nine-colored clouds, but several layers of rainbow clouds caused by the simultaneous breakthrough of several dozen people. Every single person's rainbow clouds possessed different colors, which was why there were nine colors when the several dozen layers of clouds appeared. The clouds enveloped an area far greater than a single person's breakthrough.

This had caused quite a large disturbance on the continent again. Many Saint Rulers had even thought that a new Saint Emperor had appeared.

The mountain range was currently shrouded by fog while the dense energy of the world drifted in the surroundings, pouring out as dense mist. All of this was due to the energy of the Violet Cloud Peaches leaking out of their bodies.

They had probably absorbed less than half of the true energy within the peach they had consumed.

Several days later, Little Fatty broke through again, stepping into Saint King first. Seven-colored clouds descended in the sky, enveloping an area of a million kilometers. After him, the others broke through one by one as well. In just a short day, they had all reached Saint King.

Several dozen layers of seven-colored clouds flooded the sky. They radiated dazzling lights as nine different colors enveloped the entire continent.

The disturbance this time was even greater than when they had become Saint Rulers. The stacked layer of clouds spread in all directions at an unbelievable rate, enveloping the entire continent very soon and causing a huge commotion.

However, the clouds did not stop there. The rainbow clouds continued to expand into the sea, stopping at the borders of the Sea race, the magical beasts, and the Hundred Races in the end, shocking all the experts of the three races.

“These aren’t nine-colored rainbow clouds, but seven-colored ones caused by people breaking through to Saint King. My god, I can sense over fifty seven-colored rainbow clouds stacked atop one another. There’s actually several dozen Saint Rulers breaking through into Saint Kings together...”

“It’s from the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent. How is this possible? How can there be so many Saint Rulers breaking through together...”

The Saint Kings of all races stared at the sky while dumbfounded. They were extremely shocked. The simultaneous breakthrough of several dozen Saint Rulers had not happened even during the glorious ancient times.

Let alone several dozen, just a dozen Saint Rulers breaking through together had not ever happened in the past.



Chapter 1393: The Greatest City in the World (Two)

This time, Jian Chen caused several dozen people to reach Saint King, leading to just too great of a disturbance. Several dozen seven-colored rainbow clouds layered upon one another, forming something akin to nine-colored rainbow clouds that only appeared when Saint Kings broke through to Saint Emperors, except that was a far more majestic sight.

The nine-colored rainbow clouds of Saint Emperors would only span across the entire continent, while the several dozen layers of clouds right now had actually surpassed the boundaries of the continent in the form of a mixed nine-colored cloud and had reached the edges of the three other races.

At that moment, the entire world was in shock. Whether it was the humans on the Tian Yuan Continent, the Hundred Races, or the magical beasts, all of them felt extremely perturbed. Even the Sea race hidden deep beneath the ocean could sense the clouds, leading a few Saint Kings to emerge from the ocean. They stared into the distance in shock as the ocean churned.

If they had only been Saint Rulers, they would definitely have suspected that the nine-colored clouds came from a Saint King's breakthrough, but the mysteries within the clouds were not enough to fool the Saint Kings. All of them could sense that even though the clouds looked like they had nine colors, they were really several dozen seven-colored rainbow clouds stacked on top of each other.

“What’s happening on the Tian Yuan Continent? Why are there so many 14th Star warriors breaking through to the 15th Star?” Some experts of the Sea race asked out of curiosity.

“The strongest human of the Tian Yuan Continent, Jian Chen, has close ties with our Sea Goddess Hall. This means that the

humans are the good friends of us as well. Let's go to the Tian Yuan Continent and have a look. Let's see what's going on," said a Saint King from the Sea Goddess Hall. The simultaneous breakthrough of several dozen people had piqued their curiosity.

"Alright, let's go," agreed an old man. His face was rather pale, clearly still injured, but his injuries were not enough to stop him from checking things out.

"This bloody sun sure is uncomfortable. It makes me feel like I'm being burnt alive," an extremely burly middle-aged cursed unhappily as he glanced at the sun in the sky.

The Sea race spent most of their time in the sea realm and were used to the underwater environment there. They were not accustomed to the sun even though it could not harm them.

Afterward, the Sea race experts all ripped open Space Gates and made their way to the Tian Yuan Continent.

At the same time, many magical beasts moved out as well. The simultaneous breakthroughs of several Saint Rulers was an occurrence worth investigating. All of them wanted to go to the Tian Yuan Continent to see what was going on. They wanted to find out if a shortcut from Saint Ruler to Saint King existed.

Even the three rulers of the continent who were currently recuperating in the Beast God Hall were alerted. They all hovered outside the divine hall as they stared in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent.

The Wasteland Continent inhabited by the Hundred Races was a desolate, dreary place. Yellow sand and dry earth spanned as far as the eye could see and even the ancient mountains were bare. There was rarely any greenery visible anywhere.

In the center of the continent stood a mountain that reached into the clouds. It was extremely well-known on the continent because all the authority of the Hundred Races was centered around the

mountain.

The mountain was known as War God Mountain. It was a holy place among the Hundred Races because it was where their supreme War God Hall stood.

The golden divine hall glowed with an unprecedented luster right now. It was as dazzling as the sun. It stood there silently like a slumbering primordial beast, radiating with prestige and a certain holiness.

The three-meter-tall Tie Ta sat on the central golden throne that signified the greatest authority inside. His golden skin seemed to fuse with the throne, shining with a faint, golden luster that resonated with the entire hall.

All the experts of the Hundred Races gathered beneath Tie Ta. All of them knelt on the floor emotionally. A few older people had even teared up while their bodies trembled uncontrollably.

Basically all the people present possessed wounds that came from the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints. However, none of them bothered with their injuries. No matter how heavily wounded they were, as long as they could stand and remain conscious, they had all gathered here to welcome their war god.

“Great king of war, you have finally returned. We have waited painfully...”

“Great war god, we’ve finally found you. Our Hundred Races can strive toward glory as long as we are lead by you...”

“Great war god, the entire race shares the same sentiment. We are all willing to abide by your commands. You stand supreme. You are the faith of the Hundred Races, the soul of everyone...”

The experts of the Hundred Races below emotionally cried out. Every single one of their cries was filled with joy. Their sorrow from the deaths of so many experts had already been overshadowed by the return of their war god.

The news of the war god's return spread through the entire continent like wildfire. This threw all the clansmen into utter joy and excitement. On a continent with horrible living conditions, there was cheering wherever people were present. Some people had even begun to decorate their households with lanterns and streamers, filling the land with joy.

At this moment, Tie Ta sensed something. He suddenly looked in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent and sank deep into thought. His strength was extraordinary. Clearly, he had sensed the disturbance that was occurring in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent as well.

However, the War God Hall was situated in the center of the continent. It was extremely distant from the borders, so no one else in the divine hall had sensed the pulse of energy from the Tian Yuan Continent aside from Tie Ta, including Saint Kings at Great Perfection.

Little Fatty and the others continued to break through in the mountain range near Flame City. After becoming Saint Kings, the vast energy from the Violet Cloud Peaches still remained. They all advanced toward the First Heavenly Layer, the Second Heavenly Layer, the Third Heavenly Layer, and so on.

The Comprehension Tea came into effect as their strength increased. It allowed all of them to enter a wondrous mental state, assisting them in the comprehension of the mysteries of the world. With the assistance of the tea, the mysteries of the world were presented before them in the clearest fashion possible.

Many experts gathered in the surroundings of the mountain range. Not only had Saint Rulers come, even quite a few Saint Kings were present.

A dazzling violet light flickered in the sky above the mountain range. The Zi Ying Sword had become thirty meters in length as it hovered there. Jian Chen was sitting on top of it, carefully

observing everything below. He had expanded the senses of his soul to ten thousand kilometers away, watching over the people below him and protecting them as they broke through.

“The several dozen Saint Kings have broken through here. I remember that there was a storm of lightning here recently. Looks like this place really is rather special. Maybe overcoming bottlenecks will become much easier if I cultivate here.”

“The energy of the world here is just far too dense. I’ve cultivated for thousands of years, and I’ve even visited the miniature worlds of the ten protector clans, but they’re all like streams compared to this sea of energy.”

The Saint Kings present all sighed emotionally. They felt like they had arrived in heaven. Not only was the energy of the world extremely dense, but it was also extremely pure as well.

Not only were there humans, members of the Sea race, the Hundred Races and the magical beasts were present as well. Although the Saint Kings in the War God Hall had failed to sense the disturbance, the experts on the edge of the continent could clearly see the rainbow light that came from the clouds.

If it was any other day, the people would definitely have been obstructed by all the experts of the Tian Yuan Continent as soon as they had appeared, but now, they required the reinforcements of the three other races to fend off the threat of the foreign world. This was why many people gave up their xenophobic thoughts and did not step forward to stop the arrival of the foreigners.

“Let’s go in and have a look to see just what the secret is,” a magical beast suggested. He won the support of quite a few people very soon. He immediately set off with over twenty Saint Kings, carefully making his way toward the mountain range.

However, before they had even traveled a thousand meters, an azure sword shot through the air as a flash of azure light. It hung in the air as it obstructed them in the form of a sword several

dozen meters long.

“Isn’t this one of Saint Emperor Jian Chen’s divine swords!?” Someone immediately recognized the Qing Suo Sword and asked aloud.

“Sovereign Jian Chen’s strength has already surpassed Saint Emperor and reached the legendary Origin realm. If you speak sovereign Jian Chen’s name carelessly, you won’t be returning today if you anger him,” a human rebuked quietly. He felt extremely unpleasant. Jian Chen was now the pride and glory of the humans as well as a crucial figure in matching up against the three other races. He obviously needed to be extremely protective over their glorious leader as a human before foreigners.

The foreign expert’s face immediately changed slightly when he heard that. He showed deep fear. He too had taken part in the battle and had personally witnessed Jian Chen killing Saint Emperors like ants.

Chapter 1394: The Greatest City in the World (Three)

The Qing Suo Sword hovered in the air and blocked everyone's path, immediately forcing them all to a stop. They all stood where they were, unwilling to take a step further.

All of them recognized the origins of the sword. Even though they were all Saint Kings, standing at the very top among their own races and clans both in power and status, they all lowered themselves before the Qing Suo Sword and behaved politely.

"Everyone, the people of my Flame Mercenaries are undergoing breakthroughs here. I hope you do not disturb them, in case you affect their cultivation," Jian Chen's voice rang through everyone's head. In order to prevent any disturbances, he had communicated to all the people present through a technique.

"It's the voice of sovereign Jian Chen!" A human expert exclaimed. His voice bore some excitement. Even though Jian Chen was only a junior in all their eyes and his age was nothing to them, in this world, where strength dominated, age was not important. At most, it could be used to measure someone's talent.

"I never thought that the sovereign of the humans would be here. Let's all back off," muttered a foreign expert.

"No wonder there's been such a great disturbance here. We had even thought that there was a shortcut to Saint King hidden here. Looks like it's just the human sovereign using his great abilities and helping his subordinates break through."

"The human sovereign is powerful enough to actually create several dozen Saint Kings. Just how has he achieved this? Can you learn some heaven-defying techniques once you surpass Saint Emperor and reach the legendary Origin realm?"

Many people discussed the information they had just obtained,

but they all kept their voices to a bare minimum. After that, they all slowly backed off, no longer wanting to investigate what was going on inside.

In the end, all the Saint Kings backed off to the outskirts of the mountain range, but none of them left. They all remained there as they quietly stared into the depths. Some people had even found a place to sit down and began to cultivate.

The energy of the world here had reached an unbelievable density. They had never felt a place with such a dense and pure energy. It would be extremely beneficial to them if they cultivated in these conditions. Improving by leaps and bounds would be quite an appropriate description if they cultivated here.

Several days later, Little Fatty and the others all roused from their cultivation. The moment they opened their eyes, their gazes became filled with obvious excitement and joy.

A Saint King was a supreme realm of cultivation, unreachable to many of them. Some of them had even made the wish that they wanted to reach Saint King. After all, reaching that level of cultivation required both talent and time.

Yet now, they had actually all broken through to Saint King in just a few short days even though they had been Heaven Saint Masters before, which was dream-like to them. It did not seem realistic at all.

Yun Zheng, Senior An, and the several dozen elites were especially emotional.

“Everyone gather!” Suddenly, a loud voice rang through the entire mountain ranges. One of the leader of the elite mercenaries, Charles, had given the order, and immediately, the several dozen people, who were scattered around, all hurried over. In less than ten seconds, they had all gathered in an orderly fashion.

They were still unable to control their powers since they had just

broken through. They could not help but let their powers leak out, so a storm of energy immediately formed where they stood. The storm of energy caused the wind and clouds to churn while their surroundings became flooded with a suffocating pressure.

The joy from breaking through had already vanished after they had gathered together. They all suppressed their feelings, recovering their usual cool. They all stood there emotionlessly as their eyes burned brightly. They seemed like trained soldiers.

Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Yun Zheng, and Senior An did not stand with them. They all arrived behind Jian Chen. Similarly, great energy would surge from their bodies from time to time. Although their abrupt increase in strength did not come with any after effects, they clearly still needed some time to become familiar with the powers that they had suddenly obtained.

“Our Flame Mercenaries have gained several dozen Saint Kings now. This is just wonderful,” Bi Lian, You Yue, Ming Dong, and the others all hurried over from the city. They looked at the group of Saint Kings who stood like soldiers and all expressed their inner joy.

The various Saint Kings on the outskirts of the mountain range all saw this clearly as well and gasped. Not only had the Flame Mercenaries gained several dozen Saint Kings in a single stroke, the Saint Kings even behaved like soldiers. This had never happened before, not even in ancient times.

“The Saint Kings actually all belong to the same organization. Flame City is just far too powerful...”

“The Tian Yuan Continent has just survived a calamity. The four races have lost many Saint Kings, and there are not many left now. At such a time, Flame City has suddenly gained several dozen Saint Kings. This-this...”

“The Flame City has truly become the greatest city in the world. The Flame Mercenaries have become the greatest mercenary group

and organization on the Tian Yuan Continent. Not only do they have many Saint Kings; they even have a sovereign...”

Many people emotionally sighed while standing on the outskirts of the mountains. The Flame Mercenaries were once renowned on the continent, but they did not possess much overall power at all. They had extremely few Saint Kings—none in fact. They had been supported by just Jian Chen and the three magical beasts.

But it was all different now. Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, You Yue, and Bi Hai had all become Saint Kings. The Flame Mercenaries had also gained another group of Saint Kings now. Without any exaggeration, the Flame Mercenaries possessed extremely great power overall. They could still stand supreme on the continent without Jian Chen.

Jian Chen walked through the air and arrived before the group of people who had followed him the earliest. His face was filled with pride. When the group of people before him had joined him at the very beginning, they had all been Saint Masters or Great Saint Masters, without a single Earth Saint Master. Yet now, under his lead, they had grown and changed step by step. They had finally attained their current achievements after exhausting a large amount of resources and great heavenly resources. This filled Jian Chen with great pride and satisfaction.

This was because he had personally raised this group of people. He had cultivated them from ordinary mercenaries to supreme experts.



Chapter 1395: Divine Guards of the Flame

“Several decades of life-and-death training, several decades of tough cultivation have allowed you to grow from nameless mercenaries into superpowers that reign supreme across the continent. From today on, you can emerge into the light from your dark corner. From today on, the Tian Yuan Continent will change because of your existence. In the future, you will become the glory of the Flame Mercenaries, the honor of the Flame Mercenaries, and the protectors of the Flame Mercenaries. We will become even more powerful because you are present. As the second captain of the Flame Mercenaries, I shall bestow a new name upon you. You shall be known as the Divine Guards of the Flame!” Jian Chen said emotionally and loudly. His voice rang out like a bell, reverberating across the entire mountain range with supreme authority.

“We thank the captain for the name he has bestowed. We will forget our former name and exist in this world as the Divine Guards of the Flame. We will guard the glory of the Flame Mercenaries whole-heartedly and lay down our lives to protect the name of the Flame Mercenaries. We will never let down the captain,” Mo Tian replied loudly and forcefully. His voice was emotional and his determined eyes had even begun to tear up.

Mo Tian had only been a puny Saint Master back in Wake City of the Blue Wing Kingdom. One of a countless number of mercenaries who had lived at the very bottom of society. He had often fought with brutal magical beasts, coming close to death time and time again just to make some money and live. At that time, his greatest wish was to become an Earth Saint Master while becoming a Heaven Saint Master was his dream.

This was because Heaven Saint Masters were extremely impressive experts in the Blue Wind Kingdom. Once he became a Heaven Saint Master, he would be able to enjoy infinite wealth and

glory.

Not only had he achieved his wish of the past, but he had even become a glorious Saint King. Even with the entire continent in perspective, he was now a great existence. He had never even wished about attaining something like this in the past.

At this moment, he felt overjoyed over the smart decision he had made before. If he had not sworn his life to Jian Chen, it would have been impossible for him to have today's glory.

The Saint Kings who had gathered on the outskirts of the mountain range all sighed in surprise. These several dozen Saint Kings would only take up the position of guards in Flame City. This had completely overturned everything they knew.

Throughout the entire continent, there was no Saint King who was not worshipped like a god. Even in the protector clans, anyone who broke through to Saint King would immediately be promoted to great elder and would possess absolute authority.

Even among the Sea race, which had many more Saint Kings than the Tian Yuan Continent, they would never use Saint Kings as protectors or guards. Even the three great halls needed to provide Saint Kings the premium life.

Flame City had done something no one had ever done before. They were the only ones to use Saint Kings as guards throughout history.

Jian Chen returned to Flame City with the guards. You Yue and everyone else and was welcomed by the most enthusiastic cheers of the entire city. The news of Flame City's sudden increase in Saint Kings swiftly spread across the entire continent. The news even reached the ears of the three other races. It threw them all into a huge commotion. The world was taken by shock. Everyone discussed this matter as they sighed in surprise.

The next day, countless Saint Kings visited Flame City. This

included people from all four races. They had come to congratulate the Flame City on their ascension.

Even the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, Yadriam, personally came.

Jian Chen let Bi Lian and You Yue receive most visitors. He only personally received a few guests he was familiar with, such as Yadriam, Changyang Zu Xiao, and so on.

In short, it was basically impossible for the Saint Kings who did not have any ties with Jian Chen to see him. It was not because of Jian Chen's pride, but there were just far too many people who had come. He did not want to waste his energy on greeting them all.

The four Imperial Protectors of the Qinhuang Kingdom had come as well, but the treatment they received in Flame City was far greater than other Saint Kings. As mere Saint Rulers, they were invited to the back to meet Jian Chen without any obstructions at all.

Kara Liwei visited Flame City with her ancestor, Kara Lot, as well. They were invited to the back as well.

Other than them, Tianmu Ling had also come, meeting Jian Chen while accompanied by Jun Mohao and Wang Yinhong.

"Brother Jian Chen, can I still call you that now?" Tianmu Ling asked carefully as soon as she saw Jian Chen. She acted pitiful and showed some fear on her face.

Jian Chen was extremely happy to see old friends. He chuckled aloud, "Why not? Miss Tianmu Ling has helped me a lot in the past, so how could I forget about you? My status greatly differs from the past, but it cannot change my morals as a person."

Tianmu Ling was unsettled by how she had referred to Jian Chen before. She felt extremely uneasy, afraid of offending Jian Chen, but she finally relaxed after hearing what Jian Chen said. She understood that even though Jian Chen had become an existence

akin to a sovereign, he had not forgotten about his former friendships. This immediately filled her with joy.

Jun Moyan and Wang Yinhong could not help but look at each other and smile knowingly when they saw how Jian Chen treated Tianmu Ling, as they followed behind her.

“Back in the gathering of mercenaries, brother Jian Chen, Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, and I were all Earth Saint Masters. It’s only been a few short decades since then, yet brother Jian Chen has already surpassed Saint Emperor. Even Ming Dong and Dugu Feng have become Saint Kings. Only I have been left behind, the same as before. I haven’t even become a Heaven Saint Master,” Tianmu Ling sighed dejectedly. The gazes she directed at Jian Chen, Ming Dong, and Dugu Feng were filled with obvious admiration.

Jian Chen could not help but think back to when he had taken part in the gathering of mercenaries with Ming Dong, because of what Tianmu Ling had said. His eyes immediately became filled with memories and he said, “Tianmu Ling, you’ve helped me quite a lot in the past. Don’t worry, I’ll help you out after this and let you become a Saint King!”

“Really?” Tianmu Ling’s eyes immediately lit up, and she became extremely excited.

Jun Mohao and Wang Yinhong both became stunned before becoming ravished with joy. Jian Chen’s status was now extraordinary, so they did not doubt his words at all. He had allowed several dozen people to become Saint Kings, so they did not doubt his ability to make an Earth Saint Master become a Saint King in a short amount of time.

“Jian Chen, don’t forget that you made a promise to me as well. Whether I can become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master or not will all depend on you,” Kara Liwei squeezed over and stared at Jian Chen with her beautiful eyes.

After understanding Jian Chen’s temperament, Kara Liwei

became bolder. She did not hold back at all.

Chapter 1396: A Sealed World (One)

Jian Chen had a very good impression of Kara Liwei as well. He treated her as half a friend and chuckled, “Miss Kara Liwei, don’t worry. I will definitely keep my promises. I will never go back on them. Once the seal within the artifact space is released and is filled with the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force, I will definitely give you a few strands so that you can become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master.”

“Then I’ll be waiting at the Kara clan, waiting for sovereign Jian Chen’s good news. I hope I can use this chance to reach Class 7 successfully and complete my greatest dream,” Kara Liwei smiled sweetly. She was extremely happy after Jian Chen reaffirmed his promise.

Jian Chen had gathered a lot of Radiant Saint Force origin energy the last time the seal within the artifact space had been released. He had then given it to the president of the Radiant Saint Master Union. He had specifically told him that Kara Liwei and Quan Youcai had first priority, but Kara Liwei and Quan Youcai had both failed to break through unfortunately. They had lost a great chance at reaching the 7th Class.

Although the only requirement for reaching Class 7 was to fuse a single strand of Radiant Saint Force origin energy into a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master’s soul, to allow the soul to undergo a metamorphosis, this step could not be achieved so easily. Many Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters could not achieve this. Only an extremely limited number of people ever managed to break through.

At this moment, Jian Chen’s face changed. He shot off into the sky like an arrow, arriving at an altitude of several thousand meters in a single moment. He stared into the distance as he hovered there. His eyes seemed to be able to pierce space and see the ends of the earth. He saw a sword fly over from several tens of

thousand kilometers away. It gave off an extremely obscure pulse of energy. The energy pulse was abnormal, where even Saint Emperors would fail to sense it.

The sword turned around several tens of thousand kilometers away before shooting off again. It disappeared in a single moment.

Jian Chen expanded the senses of his soul, which expanded with great speed. It enveloped a radius of over two hundred thousand kilometers, catching up to the sword in the blink of an eye.

“That’s the Emperor Armament of the Changyang clan!” Jian Chen could clearly sense every nook and cranny present on the sword with his soul. He could tell with a single glance that it was the ancestral weapon of the Changyang clan, but the presence it currently gave off was just far, far more powerful than before.

The Righteous Yang Sword seemed to sense Jian Chen’s spying, so it suddenly exploded with speed. It shot off into the distance as a stream of light, immediately vanishing as it pierced through space. It escaped from Jian Chen’s range of senses.

“That’s not an Emperor Armament but a weapon used by Origin realm experts. It’s a saint artifact!” Jian Chen thought inside. He was greatly surprised and immediately leaped onto the Zi Ying Sword in pursuit.

As his understanding of sword-riding deepened, Jian Chen could move at greater and greater speeds. He had surpassed the speed he had displayed in the sea realm before as he shot off after the Righteous Yang Sword.

Although he had lost track of the sword, Jian Chen could still tell which direction the sword had flown in because of the insignificant marks it left behind in the space.

The extreme north was the northern boundary of the Tian Yuan Continent. It was extremely close to the northern sea, and a little beyond the edge of the border, one would no longer be on the Tian

Yuan Continent anymore. It would just be the ocean.

A great mountain stood in the lands close to the northern sea. The mountain was abnormally grand. It was extremely steep, making it almost unscalable. The highest point was over ten thousand meters above the sea realm with its peak poking into the clouds.

Two people stood silently beside one another on the highest point of the mountain. They did not move at all. They stood like statues as they fixedly stared at the depths of the northern sea.

One of them was a middle-aged, burly man around the age of forty. He was bare-chested and only wore a pair of shorts, revealing his powerful bronze muscles.

The other was an old man in his seventies. He had a ruddy appearance and seemed rather sagely. His eyes were extremely deep.

At this moment, a sword flew over from afar, headed toward the old man. It moved extremely quickly.

However, the old man did not react at all, as if he did not sense the arrival of the sword at all. However, when the sword was three hundred meters away from the old man, it drastically slowed down before falling into the old man's hand as a red streak of light and disappearing.

"He's come, much faster than I had expected. Yang Lie, your great-grandson sure is impressive," commented the burly man.

The two of them were the founding ancestors of the Changyang clan and the Tyrant's Blade School, Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao.

A violet streak of light appeared on the horizon as soon as Guihai Yidao finished speaking. The violet streak of light was even faster than the sword that had returned earlier. The light was still on the horizon in one moment, yet it had landed on the mountain with unbelievable speed in the next. It possessed an extremely sharp

sword Qi, turning all the vegetation in a radius of a thousand meters to dust.

The light vanished and revealed Jian Chen. He stood a thousand meters away from Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao as he stared at them. He did not feel calm at all.

This was because the two people were hazy, like mist to the senses of his soul. They did not seem like they existed at all, which shocked him greatly. Only those who had reached the Origin realm could avoid being sensed by his soul. No matter what secret techniques Saint Emperors used, they would not be able to avoid being detected.

Jian Chen felt very shocked. When had two Origin realm experts appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent without explanation? This was because in the history of the continent, there had never been rumors of a fifth Origin realm expert other than the barrier spirit of Mercenary City.

“Great-grandfather!” Jian Chen subconsciously cried out when he saw Yang Lie. He became stunned and disbelief flooded his face.

At that moment, he began to doubt his eyes, as if he had seen the wrong person. One of the two mysterious Origin realm experts was actually his great-grandfather, Changyang Zu Yunkong, someone he was extremely familiar with.

However, the feeling Changyang Zu Yunkong gave off was vastly different from before. He seemed like he was someone else.

Jian Chen subconsciously rubbed his eyes as he examined the people before him carefully. He found this rather difficult to accept. From what he understood, Changyang Zu Yunkong was only a Saint King at most. Even with his great talent, it would not be possible for him to undergo two major breakthroughs in such a short amount of time and reach the Origin realm.

Yang Lie turned his head to Jian Chen and his eyes became filled

with a gentleness. He smiled benevolently, “I never thought that I, Yang Lie, would have such an impressive great-grandson. This has taken me by surprise. Even in the higher world, there are only a few people with talent like you.”

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes when he heard the man mention a higher world. He stared at Yang Lie fixedly and inquired, “Just who are you?”

“I am Yang Lie, as well as Changyang Zu Yunkong. I am your great-grandfather. I founded the protector Changyang clan, except this current life is a reincarnation. I’ve awakened my memories now and returned to who I was before,” Yang Lie explained.

Jian Chen was stunned. He thought over what Yang Lie had just said several times. What he had said was just far too shocking. Even with Jian Chen’s mental fortitude, he was completely dumbfounded.

Chapter 1397: A Sealed World (Two)

Suddenly, a gleam of light flashed through his eyes. He closely observed Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao. Under the senses of his soul, the two of them were hazy like mist, as if they did not exist at all. This was a representation of the Origin realm, but he suddenly discovered that the two of them were not actually of the Origin realm in terms of strength. They were still peak Saint Emperors.

Jian Chen could not help but think of the Emperor Armament of the Changyang clan. He was unable to tell the quality of the weapon due to his limited strength, so he had always believed that the Righteous Yang Sword was just an Emperor Armament nourished by Saint Emperors. Only now did he finally discover that it was nothing like an Emperor Armament. It was the weapon of an Origin realm expert. It had reached the level of saint artifacts, equivalent to immortal artifacts from the Immortals' World.

However, what he found conflicting was that saint artifacts could only originate from Origin realm experts. His great-grandfather had reached the Origin realm in terms of cultivation, but his strength had stagnated at the level of Saint Emperors. He was unable to make his Emperor Armament reach the level of saint artifacts.

Jian Chen suddenly thought of something. He asked, "Great-grandfather, were you at the Origin realm in the past and not a Saint Emperor as the records say? It's just that you don't have enough time right now, which is why you haven't recovered your strength to the Origin realm."

Yang Lie smiled, "I never thought that you'd be spot on. Great-grandson, you're right. I used to be an Origin realm expert. Except I suffered unimaginable injuries and my cultivation level fell, returning to Saint Emperor."

“On the Tian Yuan Continent, there are only records of four Origin realm experts, which are the strongest human, Mo Tianyun, the Winged Tiger God, the war god Aergyns, and the sea goddess. There has never been a rumor of a fifth Origin realm expert. Since you possessed the strength of an Origin realm expert in ancient times and experienced a huge battle, which you became heavily injured in, why are there no records of your legends on the Tian Yuan Continent? Why do people still think you’re just a Saint Emperor after all these years?” Jian Chen asked out of curiosity. He found it all this information extremely confusing.

Yang Lie gently sighed. He stared at the vast sea as a sliver of reminiscence filled his eyes. He only said slowly a while later, “Great-grandson, I did not plan on telling you the reason, but you have the right to know the secret now, so I’ll tell you.”

Jian Chen’s interest was piqued. He gathered all his attention to listen. He had already realized that his great-grandfather was probably hiding a huge secret, something ancient that had been buried by history already.

“My dear great-grandson, I’m not a person from this world. Guihai Yidao and I originated from another world. It was a larger and higher world. All the people who surpass Saint Emperor and reach the Origin realm on the Tian Yuan Continent can proceed to that world. It’s called the Saints’ World,” Yang Lie started to explain.

Jian Chen was shocked. He stared at Yang Lie in disbelief. He had already learned about the Saints’ World from the sword spirits, but he had never thought that the founder of the protector Changyang clan had actually originated from there. This was nothing close to what he had been expecting.

“The universe really is filled with endless mysteries. I never thought that there would be an even greater world beyond this one,” Jian Chen sighed in surprise and acted like he did not know about the existence of the Saints’ World. He then looked at Yang

Lie and asked out of curiosity, “Great-grandfather, since there’s another world out there, why are there only the two of you that have come down? Aren’t there more people?”

Guihai Yidao glanced at Jian Chen as he stood beside Yang Lie and said, “Do you think that people from the Saints’ World can come down as they wish? Powerful people are as common as the clouds in the Saints’ World. Let alone the Origin realm, there are countless people who have reached Godhood, the realm above the Origin realm. Any single one of those existences can easily destroy this world if they come down. It’s extremely difficult for people of the Saints’ World to come down, regardless of strength, including ordinary people. It can even be described as impossible.”

“Guihai Yidao’s right. Once people of lower worlds have enough strength, they can proceed to a higher one, but if people of higher worlds want to come down, it’s extremely difficult. We ended up here purely due to an accident,” revealed Yang Lie. He seemed to be in a slight trance as he thought of the past.

Jian Chen remained silent. He stared at Yang Lie and waited for him to continue.

“Great-grandson, I may have been an Origin realm cultivator in the Saints’ World, but experts of the Origin realm have no status at all in the Saints’ World. It’s not as glorious as it is on the Tian Yuan Continent. If you use the Tian Yuan Continent as a comparison, the Origin realm in the Saints’ World would be equivalent to the level of Saint Masters or Great Saint Masters here, or maybe even less than that.”

Jian Chen already knew the status of Origin realm cultivators in the Saints’ World, so he did not find this news surprising. However, he did not reveal this secret of his, purposefully behaving as if he was in extreme shock.

Yang Lie continued, “I belonged to a small group of adventurers in the Saints’ World. There were not a lot of people in the group,

only around fifty. All of us were at the Origin realm, aside from the captain, who was a Deity. One time, we all entered a newly-opened miniature world in search of treasure, but unfortunately, something important suddenly appeared. It attracted Godhood experts very quickly. As they fought, the place became extremely unstable. Huge cracks in space appeared, almost causing the place to collapse. Many people died from the shockwaves of battle, and my entire group, along with many Origin realm adventurers of other groups, was sucked into the spatial cracks. We fell into the chaotic streams of space-time.

“It was extremely dangerous within the cracks. Even Godkings fell and Infinite Primes had to move carefully. My entire group, along with over a thousand other adventurers, were all sucked away. I personally witnessed many people pass away. Even our Deity captain passed away. The laws of the world within the spatial crack were chaotic and time was an utter mess. Millions of years could pass in a single moment, and then time would rewind by thousands of years in the next. It was utter chaos in there. There were no colors nor any sense of time.

“All I could see were people of our group dying constantly inside the spatial crack. Some people were swept away by chaotic streams of time, either aging, rotting, being reduced to a pile of bones, which then turn to dust in the end, or turning into a newly-born infant in a single moment before vanishing completely,” Yang Lie said with a trembling voice. He was fearful of what he had seen in the cracks of space. Even after countless years, those scenes remained an inerasable shadow in his heart.

“All of us were filled with fear. We all thought that we’d die in the end, but fortunately, a tunnel to another world appeared within the cracks of space. The exit was not far away from us, so we used everything we had to approach the exit while we were still alive. In the end, we left that damned crack in space through there,” Guihai Yidao finished the story for Yang Lie. Joy from

narrowly avoiding death lingered in his eyes.

Chapter 1398: A Sealed World (Three)

Jian Chen felt extremely shocked after the story. He had never thought that the founders of the Changyang clan and Tyrant's Blade School would have such a story to them.

However, what left him speechless was the fact that his great-grandfather and Guihai Yidao had actually come down from the Saints' World after they were sucked into spatial cracks, which were caused by a battle between a few Godkings, and had basically arrived at the Tian Yuan Continent out of pure luck.

If it were not for the tunnel that had appeared at the right moment within the crack, his great-grandfather probably would have died there.

“A total of ten people managed to survive and make it to the Tian Yuan Continent. We managed to escape the crack in space successfully, but we were all heavily injured. Not only were the wounds physical, but they affected our souls as well. Because we were just far too severely injured, coupled with the wounds to our souls caused by laws of the world, our cultivation level fell from the Origin realm to Saint Emperor.

“Not all of the ten people came from my group of adventurers, but we all became best friends. Several decades later, we made a full physical recovery, but the injuries to our souls lingered. Not only was it impossible for us to cultivate any further, but we also had to endure pain from the soul at all times. There was nothing we could do. Fortunately, one of us was a disciple of a large sect. He had been sucked into the disaster when he had left the sect on a journey. He took the risk of being branded as a traitor by his sect and taught us a secret method of reincarnation. Through this technique, the injuries of our souls caused by the laws could slowly be worn away.

“After mastering the secret technique and before entering

reincarnation, we all agreed to create a clan of our own where we would leave the saint artifacts that our bodies had nurtured. We also sealed our memories into the weapons, and to prevent them from being eaten away by time, we purposefully left behind a secret technique that enabled our descendents to nurture the saint artifact with each generation. That was how the saint artifacts could still remain even today after losing their masters.

“We underwent thousands of rebirths over these years, being reborn and having to re-cultivate every life, all the way until this life. Only then were the wounds to our souls completely erased. Our saint artifacts sensed us as soon as we became Saint Kings and rushed over from far away, returning our memories to us and allowing us to return back to who we were.”

Jian Chen could not help but think back to when Guihai Yidao had become a Saint King. Back then, he was on a journey to the sea realm with Huang Luan and just happened to come across someone breaking through to Saint King. Seven-colored rainbow clouds had descended and the person who had broken through just happened to be Guihai Yidao.

As he was undergoing his breakthrough, the Emperor Armament of the Tyrant’s Blade School shot over without anyone’s control but allowed Guihai Yidao to control the weapon as he wished.

At the same time, he thought about how Yang Lie had caused the Emperor Armament of the protector Changyang clan to almost go on a rampage when he had first entered the forbidden grounds of the clan. He had almost caused the miniature world to collapse, and since he almost caused it to collapse, he had committed a heinous crime. Not only was he expelled from the clan, but his talent was also sealed up as well, preventing him from reaching Sainthood for his entire life. By the look of things now, the ancestral weapon of the Changyang clan must have sensed that Changyang Zu Yunkong was the reincarnation of its master and had fully recovered from the wounds his soul had obtained, which

was why it had behaved abnormally then. However, Changyang Zu Yunkong was weak back then, still extremely distant from Saint King, which was why the most crucial step did not happen, where the saint artifact would have taken him as a master again and released his memories.

Jian Chen secretly felt fortunate when he thought about those events. Changyang Zu Yunkong had remained a Heaven Saint Master for a thousand years and had nearly reached the end of his life. He had also suffered from the seal, experiencing torturous pain every moment he was awake. Only the Heavenly Enchantress' zither music could slightly ease his pain. If he had not encountered Jian Chen, Changyang Zu Yunkong probably would have passed away from old age long ago.

Jian Chen's hatred for Changyang Qing Yun deepened when he thought about what had happened. They had almost killed their own ancestor.

"My dear great-grandson. Now that you mention it, my life was saved by you. If I had not met you in the final moments, I probably would have passed away and would not have awakened in this life," Yang Lie smiled at Jian Chen. He felt more and more affection for his great-grandson.

"Yang Lie, I cannot be more envious of you because of your impressive descendent," Guihai Yidao smiled. He meant that statement from the bottom of his heart. At that moment, he yearned for the Tyrant's Blade School to produce a descendent as extraordinary as Jian Chen.

Jian Chen smiled, feeling at ease. "Great-grandfather, can I ask how you plan on punishing Changyang Qing Yun and the others for treating you like that in the past? I didn't find any people from the Qing and Yuan branches in the battle against the World of Forsaken Saints either."

Anger immediately flooded Yang Lie's face when he heard that.

“Don’t mention those unfilial descendents. When I had just recovered my memories and stated my identity, those unfilial people actually tried to lay their hands on me despite being of a lower status. How dare they.”

Guihai Yidao patted Yang Lie’s shoulder and said, “Yang Lie, the brutality of the Saints’ World is far greater than the Tian Yuan Continent. Can’t you look past a few matters given that you’ve experienced the brutality of the Saints’ World? It’s enough. Let’s forget about this unhappy past. Don’t forget the main reason why we’ve called Jian Chen over this time.” Guihai Yidao then turned his eyes to Jian Chen with interest, “Jian Chen, we’ve called you over this time because we have something important to ask you, aside from telling you about us.”

“Please go ahead and ask, senior. I will answer you with everything I know,” Jian Chen clasped his hands at them. However, he felt uneasy inside. Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao came from the Saints’ World. He wondered if they knew about the secrets regarding the Azulet swords.

“Jian Chen, are you a Saint Emperor right now or have you reached the Origin realm?” Guihai Yidao asked. He was stern and even Yang Lie looked at Jian Chen seriously, as if they cared about the answer of the question a lot.

Jian Chen was surprised. He had never thought that Guihai Yidao would ask something like that. After a momentary pause, he said, “I should still be a Saint Emperor, but because of the two weapons I use, the strength I can display is greater than what I personally possess. At the same time, I walk a different path of cultivation compared to the people of the Tian Yuan Continent. I cultivate a power even more powerful than Saint Force, which is why I have the strength of someone from the Origin realm.”

“Really? And I had thought that there was someone who could overcome the limits of the seal and reach the Origin realm. Looks like you haven’t been able to do that either,” Guihai Yidao

mumbled. He became rather depressed.

“Sigh,” Yang Lie exhaled gently. He said, “And I had thought that hope appeared, but it’s just disappointment.”

Jian Chen stared at the two of them in some confusion. He questioned, “Seniors, what are you referring to by ‘this sealed world?’ And what are you hoping for?”

Guihai Yidao stared at the sky. His eyes were deep, but they were also filled with helplessness. He said, “Jian Chen, you may not know this, but this world is actually sealed. An extremely powerful seal exists in outer space, preventing people from reaching the Origin realm. As long as the seal is in place, this world will never be able to give birth to Origin realm experts.”

Chapter 1399: Erased History

“Back when the ten of us came to this world, the seal had already existed for countless years. It’s been so many years since and the seal still remains. It’s stopping all the people of this world from reaching the Origin realm. I wonder who cast it down and what their intentions were. It’s because of this seal that Guihai Yidao and I remain at the peak of Saint Emperor and are unable to reach the Origin realm,” explained Yang Lie helplessly.

Jian Chen became filled with even more doubt. He said, “Since you say that no one can reach the Origin realm in this world, why did the four champions appear in ancient times, and why has an Origin realm expert appeared recently in the tungsten alloy mine near Flame City?”

“There were no Origin realm experts before we had started our reincarnations. We only learned about the four champions from the ancient times after reincarnating. We don’t know the exact details regarding the four of them either. However, we once visited our clans after regaining our memories to search through their archives and to look into everything that happened in ancient times. Other than the war god Aergyns among the four champions, there were no records regarding the Winged Tiger God, Mo Tianyun, or the sea goddess at all. According to the ancient records, Mo Tianyun, the Winged Tiger God, and the sea goddess seemed to have appeared out of nowhere. There were no records of their growth at all. They just appeared with strength at the Origin realm,” Yang Lie said with heavy emotions.

“Maybe the three of them aren’t from this world either and came from a higher world as well?” Jian Chen wondered in surprise. However, he had already confirmed that Mo Tianyun came from another world. He did not know much about the Winged Tiger God from ancient times.

“That’s not very possible,” Guihai Yidao shook his head. After a

moment of silence, he said, “In this sealed world, there are only three ways for an Origin realm expert to appear. The first way would be to be stronger than the person who had initially cast down the seal. Then you would be able to directly ignore its existence. The second way would be to be born as a spirit of the world. These spirits possess the strength of the Origin realm as soon as they are born. Two have already appeared, one from Mercenary City and the other being the golden-clothed boy who follows you around. The third way includes being an existence like the war god of the Hundred Races. The war god is born from the world and is extremely powerful. It is a supreme existence, a being known as the God race in the saints’ world. The seal may be powerful, but it is not enough to restrict it.

“The first possibility can be ignored, and the third possibility is not very likely either because there are just far too few races that are born from the world like the war god. As a result, the second possibility is the most likely one.”

“Why would a person plant a seal to stop people from reaching the Origin realm?” Jian Chen mumbled. He could not understand the reasoning no matter how hard he tried. He already had a vague idea of who the person was. To him, there was no other person powerful enough other than the mysterious protector Shui of the arctic Ice Goddess Hall.

“The real reason why a mysterious expert would have planted the seal would probably have been to stop people from entering the Saints’ World. When we first arrived here, we discovered some traces from an era even more ancient than the one we came from. We are certain that there were a few Origin realm experts in that era, but they all vanished for some reason. When we discovered these traces, we had a person who had come from a big sect use a secret technique to view the origins of the traces. He searched through time and discovered an extremely shocking piece of news in the end. All the Origin realm experts from the even more

ancient era had all died due to some reason, but it was not just them. Many Saint Emperors had died as well. Most of these traces had been secretly erased by someone through a great technique, which is why no news has surfaced,” Guihai Yidao became extremely stern. This piece of news was extremely horrible for them because they did not know whether the disaster from the ancient era would happen in this era as well.

Jian Chen was astounded. The news was just far too shocking. He never would have thought that the world had experienced such a cataclysm before the protector clans existed. It made him shiver inside.

“Could it be done by her?” Jian Chen could not help but think of the protector Shui from the arctic Ice Goddess Hall. Her origins were a mystery and she was at least an Origin realm expert, possibly even more than that. At the same time, no one knew just when the Ice Goddess Hall had appeared on the icy tundra to the north.

“Great-grandfather, senior, do you know about the arctic Ice Goddess Hall?” Jian Chen hesitated before making up his mind to ask his seniors. After all, the two of them knew very much already.

Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao both shifted their gazes to the depths of the north sea.

They were currently at the northern most point of the Tian Yuan Continent. Close ahead was the northern sea, and deep within the sea lay the icy tundra where the Ice Goddess Hall stood.

Yang Lie and Guihai Yidao gazed deeply into the furthest reaches of the sea and remained silent.

Only a long while later did Yang Lie slowly say, “We knew about the existence of the mysteries in the icy tundra back then. The ten of us once tried to explore that place, but we were unable to get very far. The place was terrifyingly cold, where even in our peak condition, we would have still ended up as ice statues from the

cold. As a result, we left the matter be and never set foot there again. However, the icy tundra had already been labeled as a forbidden zone by us. No one knows the secrets inside. Only when we woke up in this life did we learn the secrets. There is actually an extremely mysterious divine hall hidden there.

“And while we were reincarnating, the mysterious expert had moved once more. This time, he had gone even more overboard, actually sealing up the origin energy into the very depths of the universe, causing the origin energy on the Tian Yuan Continent to become thinner and thinner before disappearing all together. He even disrupted the laws of the world, making breakthroughs even more difficult for people. There’s almost no hope of becoming a Saint Emperor either,” Guihai Yidao said unhappily. He felt both fear and hatred for this mysterious expert.

Chapter 1400: Mastermind

Jian Chen secretly snickered inside. He did not know who it was who had cast down the seal preventing Saint Emperors from reaching the Origin realm, but he knew what was sealing the origin energy up in the depths of the universe.

It was definitely not a mysterious expert trying to prevent people from reaching Saint Emperor. This lack of Origin Energy was caused by the Yinyang Saint Rock. The rock had fallen from outer space and onto Dragon Island, where it was discovered by Mo Tianyun, who moved it into outer space using his great abilities. He created a powerful seal around the rock to seal and lock it in place. However, the rock originated from the birth of the universe and was condensed from the Yin and Yang Qi from Chaotic Force. Its power was evident, so even after being sealed by Mo Tianyun, it still managed to disturb the laws of the world and absorb the origin energy present.

Jian Chen guessed that it was because Guihai Yidao and Yang Lie were not powerful enough, or maybe Mo Tianyun's seal was just too powerful, which was why they could not see within the seal and understand the truth. This was why they had connected it with the mysterious expert who had ended the ancient era.

However, they still gained Jian Chen's admiration for being able to reach such a conclusion. At the very least, the two of them could sense the location of where the Yinyang Saint Rock had been sealed within the depths of the cosmos. He was unable to look that far even if he used all his strength.

"Looks like I still lack in a lot of areas when compared to true Origin realm experts even though I have the battle prowess of an expert from the Origin realm," Jian Chen sighed inside. He had gained an even clearer understanding of the differences between him and true Origin realm experts like Guihai Yidao and Yang Lie.

Even though Guihai Yidao and Yang Lie had not recovered their strength, they had already exceeded him by far too much in certain aspects.

Suddenly, Yang Lie arrived before Jian Chen in a single step. He stared at him sternly and asked, "Great-grandson, I heard that you visited the arctic Ice Goddess Hall in the past and saw that girl who was taken there. Is that true?"

"That has indeed happened before. Back then, I visited there with senior Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu," Jian Chen replied with the truth.

"Then tell me everything you know. The arctic Ice Goddess Hall can be described as the most mysterious organization in this world. I suspect that the mysterious expert who sealed up this world is connected to them," said Yang Lie. He was extremely stern.

As a result, Jian Chen told him about everything he knew regarding the Ice Goddess Hall without holding back at all. However, he was not sure how strong protector Shui was. She was definitely an Origin realm expert at the very least.

A gleam of light flashed through Yang Lie's eyes. He said with a heavy voice, "As I had suspected. The mysterious Ice Goddess Hall really does have such an expert."

Guihai Yidao joined in on the conversation, "This world has already been sealed for at least a million years, making it impossible to break through to the Origin realm. Origin realm experts only have a lifespan of a hundred thousand years, so it's impossible for this protector Shui to have broken through in the last hundred thousand years. Even if we go one step back and even if protector Shui comes from the ancient era and is still alive now because she is the same as us, undergoing countless reincarnations, it would be impossible for her to reach the Origin realm in this life."

An idea crossed Jian Chen's head when he thought up to that

point. He mumbled, “If that’s the case, there are only two possibilities regarding protector Shui’s identity. The first would be that she’s similar to Xiao Jin and Xiao Ling, which would make her a natural spirit.”

“The second possibility would be that she is the mysterious expert who sealed up this world as well as the mastermind who erased the past!” Yang Lie finished off Jian Chen’s sentence. His complexion was horrible right now.

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and said, “If it really is the second possibility, isn’t this protector Shui just far too powerful. She’s actually been able to survive since ancient times and even killed off many experts in ancient times. She’s definitely committed endless slaughter, so why hasn’t she suffered the punishment of Celestial Decay?”

“If the second possibility is true, protector Shui’s strength would have already surpassed the Origin realm and reached Godhood. Godhood allows people to break free from the restraints of the world and survive along with the world. It is known as eternal life, so obviously Celestial Decay won’t impact her. And from the power and complexity of the seal that was set down, protector Shui doesn’t just seem to have reached Godhood. She seems to belong to the higher boundaries of that realm of cultivation,” said Guihai Yidao. The gaze he sent toward the depths of the northern sea became laced with fear.

Godhood was a dream-like cultivation realm to them. All the hard work and effort they had put in back in the Saints’ World was all for reaching Godhood, a supreme level of cultivation. This was because the concept of a lifespan still existed within the Origin realm. Even those at reciprocity could not change their final lifespan, but once they broke through to Godhood, they would have eternal life.

However, an extremely large division existed between the two realms of cultivation. The difference was equivalent to mortals and

Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent. Despite it only requiring a single step to overcome, it was just far too difficult to take this step.

“If the seal is not released, we will remain at our current level of cultivation forever, and we will never be able to reach the Origin realm. In ten thousand years, we will pass away. We do have the reincarnation method, but it requires origin energy to cast. Although we’ve stored some origin energy in our saint artifacts, there’s not much left now,” Yang Lie sighed gently. His eyebrows were furrowed with some worry. Regaining their memories only allowed them to regain their former cultivation. They basically knew all the abilities of Origin realm experts, except that their strength would only remain at the peak of Saint Emperor and would not advance any further.

If they had not recovered their memories, they could continue undergoing rebirths, but once they reawakened, the reincarnations would stop as well.

“Great-grandfather, senior, don’t worry. As long as I’m here, this seal will be destroyed sooner or later because I walk a different path of cultivation. The seal can stop everyone in the world but me,” Jian Chen firmly informed them. His voice was filled with confidence.

He was indeed confident, because he cultivated Chaotic Force. He did not require origin energy to increase his strength nor did he require the mysteries of the world for his breakthroughs. As long as there was enough energy present, he could smoothly pass through the first six layers of the Chaotic Body. He was currently at the fourth layer and possessed the power to fight Origin realm experts. If he reached the fifth or sixth layer, just what level of strength would he possess?

Jian Chen still had a large quantity of Immortal Tier heavenly resources and Violet Cloud Peaches in his Space Ring. As long as he had enough time, reaching the fifth and then the sixth layer would

not be a problem. Coupled with his Comprehension Tea, comprehending the Way of the Sword would be a piece of cake for him. He believed that the seal would not be able to stop him if he continued to increase his strength.

“Once I reach the sixth layer of the Chaotic Body and make some breakthroughs on the Way of the Sword, I think I’ll be able to fight Godhood experts. There’s no need to reach Sword Spirit, just the great perfection of Sword Origin will be enough,” Jian Chen thought inside and swelled with confidence. He was tempted to break through and reach the sixth layer sooner.

However, he knew that breaking through was impossible right now. Even with his large quantities of heavenly resources, reaching the fifth and then the sixth layer would require quite a lot of time. He had already consumed a Violet Cloud Peach, so he needed to wait a hundred years before consuming a second one. It was also impossible for him to endlessly consume his heavenly resources. If he ate too many in a short period of time, his body would develop a resistance to their medicinal properties, causing their effects to greatly decrease or become all together useless.

The energy crystals of Class 9 Xuanhuang Beasts did not have any evident effects on him now either. He was better off giving them to the people around him rather than wasting them on himself.

Table of Contents

[Chaotic Sword God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1301: Gathering of the Four Races](#)

[Chapter 1302: Shock](#)

[Chapter 1303: Shocking Lightning \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1304: Shocking Lightning \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1305: Shocking Lightning \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1306: Shocking Lightning \(Four\)](#)

[Chapter 1307: The Gold-clothed Boy](#)

[Chapter 1308: Reverberating Through Flame City](#)

[Chapter 1309: A Desirable Boy](#)

[Chapter 1310: Assassination \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1311: Assassination \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1312: Xiao Jin](#)

[Chapter 1313: Movements of the Tao Family](#)

[Chapter 1314: Hall Master of the Serpent God Hall](#)

[Chapter 1315: Family Conflict \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1316: Family Conflict \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1317: Family Conflict \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1318: Family Conflict \(Four\)](#)

[Chapter 1319: Family Conflict \(Five\)](#)

[Chapter 1320: Yunkong Becomes a Saint King](#)

[Chapter 1321: Yang Lie \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1322: Yang Lie \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1323: Yang Lie \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1324: Returning to the Sea Realm](#)

[Chapter 1325: The Tao Family's Clamor](#)

[Chapter 1326: Return](#)

[Chapter 1327: Setting Foot in the Serpent God Hall](#)

[Chapter 1328: Fighting a Saint Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1329: Little Resistance](#)

[Chapter 1330: Facing Against the Hall Master \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1331: Facing Against the Hall Master \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1332: Facing Against the Hall Master \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1333: The Serpent Ancestor](#)

[Chapter 1334: Yadriam Appears](#)
[Chapter 1335: Emperor of the Turtle Clan](#)
[Chapter 1336: Renowned Throughout the Sea Realm](#)
[Chapter 1337: Treasury of the Tao Family \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1338: Treasury of the Tao Family \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1339: A Damaged Piece of Divine Armor](#)
[Chapter 1340: The Sea of Despair](#)
[Chapter 1341: Vicious Spirits of the Mist \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1342: Vicious Spirits of the Mist \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1343: Weapon of the Sea Goddess](#)
[Chapter 1344: The Anatta Tower](#)
[Chapter 1345: The Anatta Grand Prime](#)
[Chapter 1346: Sword-forging \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1347: Sword-forging \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1348: Sword-forging \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1349: Sword-forging \(Four\)](#)
[Chapter 1350: Sword-forging \(Five\)](#)
[Chapter 1351: Shocking Sword Qi](#)
[Chapter 1352: Fight for Treasure](#)
[Chapter 1353: Birth of the Immortal Swords](#)
[Chapter 1354: Puny Saint Emperors \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1355: Puny Saint Emperors \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1356: Puny Saint Emperors \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1357: Taking the World by Shock](#)
[Chapter 1358: Sword-riding](#)
[Chapter 1359: Tension](#)
[Chapter 1360: Resurrection of the Sea Goddess](#)
[Chapter 1361: Movements of the Two Halls](#)
[Chapter 1362: Battling the Two Hall Masters](#)
[Chapter 1363: Ant-like Emperors \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1364: Ant-like Emperors \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1365: Ant-like Emperors \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1366: The Disaster of the Kalor Tribe](#)
[Chapter 1367: Destruction](#)
[Chapter 1368: Revival of the Sea Goddess \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1369: Revival of the Sea Goddess \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1370: Glory of the Turtle Clan \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1371: Glory of the Turtle Clan \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1372: Departure](#)

[Chapter 1373: Returning to Flame City](#)
[Chapter 1374: Reunion](#)
[Chapter 1375: Everyone Becomes a Saint King \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1376: Everyone Becomes a Saint King \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1377: Breakthroughs Complete](#)
[Chapter 1378: Attack \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1379: Attack \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1380: Attack \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1381: A Battle of Two Worlds \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1382: A Battle of Two Worlds \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1383: Tie Ta Becomes a Saint Emperor](#)
[Chapter 1384: Tie Ta Enters the Battle](#)
[Chapter 1385: Battle in the Tunnel](#)
[Chapter 1386: More Origin Realm Experts](#)
[Chapter 1387: Battle in Outer Space \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1388: Battle in Outer Space \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1389: Battle in Outer Space \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1390: Heavy Losses](#)
[Chapter 1391: Tie Ta's Departure](#)
[Chapter 1392: The Greatest City in the World \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1393: The Greatest City in the World \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1394: The Greatest City in the World \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1395: Divine Guards of the Flame](#)
[Chapter 1396: A Sealed World \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 1397: A Sealed World \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 1398: A Sealed World \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 1399: Erased History](#)
[Chapter 1400: Mastermind](#)